

“NO MAN IS AN IRELAND”¹



“I know histhry isn’t thru, Hinmissy, because it ain’t like what I see ivry day in Halsted Street. If any wan comes along with a histhry iv Greece or Rome that’ll show me th’ people fightin’, gettin’ dhrunk, makin’ love, gettin’ married, owin’ th’ grocery man an’ bein’ without hard coal, I’ll believe they was a Greece or Rome, but not befur.”



— Dunne, Finley Peter,
OBSERVATIONS BY MR. DOOLEY,
New York, 1902

Karl Marx would express, in his *THE CIVIL WAR IN FRANCE, 1848-1850*, the sentiment that “The origin of states gets lost in a myth, in which one may believe, but which one may not discuss.” On the 1st page of Theodore W. Allen’s introduction to his 1st volume,² this independent scholar asks our “indulgence for only one assumption, namely, that while some people may desire to be masters, all persons are born equally unwilling and unsuited to be slaves.” I find that remark remarkable indeed! When in our [Declaration of Independence](#) we said to ourselves “All men are created equal,” we were of course writing as lawyers and in a lawyerly manner.



We were purposing to level others, such as those overweening overbred British aristocrats, down to our own lay level, but meanwhile it was no part of our purpose to level others, such as our wives and slaves, up to our own exalted situation—we were doing this to benefit ourselves at the expense of others, and not doing this for the benefit of others. What we meant back there in Philadelphia several centuries ago, by such a trope as “All men are created equal,” was “We want, 1st, to sound almost as if we were saying that while some people may desire to be masters, all persons are born equally unwilling and unsuited to be slaves, and we want, 2dly, to sound as if we were struggling to express **something** like that without actually declaring **anything** like that—because it is essential that in this new nation of ours (based as it is upon human enslavement) we avoid any such issue. Our equality here is to be founded upon the inequality of others, and this grand-sounding trope ‘All men are created equal’ is being provided so that it can function as our cover story, enabling such viciousness to proceed unhindered.” As [Edmund Burke](#) expressed on February 16, 1788 during the impeachment trial of

1. Mayor Richard J. Daley of Chicago.

2. Allen, Theodore W. *THE INVENTION OF THE WHITE RACE, VOLUME ONE: RACIAL OPPRESSION AND SOCIAL CONTROL*. London: Verso, 1994

Warren Hastings for maladministration of the British rule in [India](#), “There is a sacred veil to be drawn over the beginnings of all government.”



The African Association was founded in England to explore the interior of Africa.

In the usage of the trope “peculiar institution” that is today ordinary or usual, this trope is deployed of course in oblique reference to the unmentionable crime of human chattel bondage. It is nowadays used in implicit criticism of enslavement. Not so originally! In its initial usages, to refer to slavery as “peculiar” was not to attack it but proclaim it to be defensible. “Peculiar,” in this archaic usage, indicated merely that the legitimacy of the system was based not upon any endorsement by a higher or more remote legal authority, but based instead upon the “peculiar conditions and history” of a particular district of the country and a particular society and a particular historically engendered set of customs and procedures and conventions. This trope went hand in hand with the Doctrine of States Rights, and went hand in hand with the persistence of the English common law. What Allen, however, refers to by use of this trope “peculiar institution” is, instead, the invention of the so-called “white race” which has here been used to legitimate our local version of thus unmentionable crime, our local version of a solution to the problem of social control. It is for him this biologicistic cover story, itself, which constitutes the quintessential “Peculiar Institution” we have been forced to construct. “Only by understanding what was peculiar about the Peculiar Institution can one know what is exceptionable about American Exceptionalism” (Volume I, page 1). In this he acknowledges that he is following a seed that had been planted by W.E.B. Du Bois in his BLACK RECONSTRUCTION.

Allen’s 1st volume is made up of an elaborate parallelization of the [Irish](#) and Scottish experience under English colonialism, and the American antebellum experience:



Every aspect of the Ulster Plantation policy aimed at destroying the tribal leadership and dispersing the tribe is matched by typical examples from Anglo-American colonial and United States policy toward the indigenous population, the “American Indians” – a policy we clearly recognize as racial oppression of “the red man.”



I have been looking into an Irish mirror for insights into the nature of racial oppression and its implication for ruling-class social control in the United States.



IRELAND

IRELAND

7,400 BCE

The 1st known settlers came to [Ireland](#), Scandinavians moving across a land bridge that then existed from Scotland.

3,500 BCE

Neolithic man arrived in [Ireland](#): farmers began to dominate and New Grange and passage tombs were being built.

3,250 BCE

Charcoal from the Newgrange and Knowth tombs in [Ireland](#) yield dates ranging from 3,250 to 2,800 BCE.

3,000 BCE

Plant	Name	Place
Garlic	<i>Allium sativum</i>	Western Asia
Rhubarb	<i>Rheum rhaponticum</i>	Asia Minor

OTHERS

At about this point, Megalithic tombs were first being constructed in [Ireland](#). Sorghum was known in sub-Saharan Africa.

PLANTS

At about this point in the growth of the branches of the Indo/European language family, there occurred the Tocharians and the Gutians.

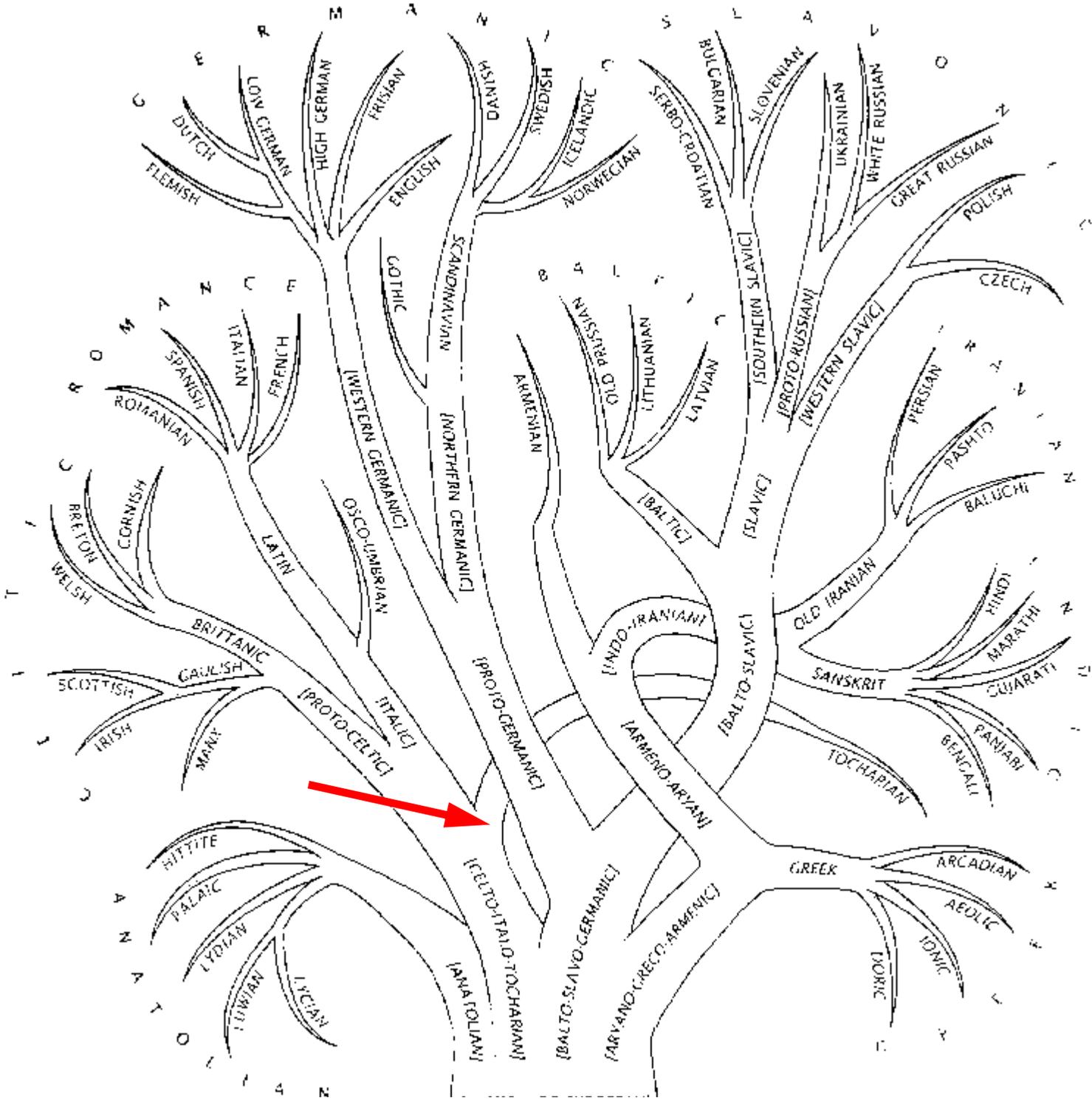
THE INDO/EUROPEAN LANGUAGES

700 BCE

Celts began the invasion of France and Spain. Celts arrived in [Ireland](#) from parts of Gaul and Britain. [Ireland](#) was divided into provinces.

IRELAND

IRELAND





IRELAND

IRELAND

600 BCE

In about this year Massaliot (Marseillais) Greek explorers visited the British Isles, finding the Qreteni (Cruithin or Pretani) to be there the dominant population.

IRELAND

510 BCE

Himilco the Phoenician visited *Sacra* ([Ireland](#)).

500 BCE

In the following two centuries the first “iron age” peoples would be reaching Great Britain.

IRELAND

350 BCE

It was in about this year that [Aristotle](#) wrote of two islands *Ierne* ([Ireland](#)) and *Albion* (Great Britain) which lay beyond the land of the Celts. He recorded that it was said that after people had begun to mock [Thales of Miletos](#) for his poverty, he had on the basis of his knowledge of the heavenly bodies forecasted a large olive crop and had bought up all the available olive presses for the going rate during the preceding winter, then reselling these presses at a considerable markup as this huge crop of olives began to ripen.

100 BCE

Celtic-Germanic Belgae colonized south coast of Albion. At an unknown date, Belgic tribes (*Fir Builg*) settled in modern Ulster and Munster.

IRELAND

ANNO MUNDI, 3873

Chronological observations of America

From the year of the World

to the year of Christ 1673.

Britain unknown to the Romans was first discovered to them by Julius Cæsar, 54 years before the Birth of Christ, who took it to be part of the Continent of France, and got nothing but the sight of that part called afterward England, which is the South of Britain.

BY John Josselyn Gent.

54 BCE

Crassus attacked the Parthians with a [Roman](#) army, but was overthrown and killed at Carrhae in Mesopotamia. His lieutenant Cassius would collect together what remained of the army and prevent the Parthians from conquering Syria.

[Cato the Younger](#) became praetor.

In about this year [Albius Tibullus](#) was born wealthy, perhaps in Pedum near Praeneste, probably as a member of the Roman equestrian order. His lover would be a lad named Marathus.

The south-eastern coast of Albion was brought under the protection of [the Pax Romana](#). The Dumnonii (Veneti or Loegrians) of southwest Albion migrated to Caledonia (Scotland).

IRELAND

27 BCE

[Marcus Terentius Varro](#) died.

The North Iberian Celts surrendered to the [Roman](#) legions.

THE PAX ROMANA

82 CE

Agricola invaded Galloway and Strathclyde; incumbent Damnonian Gamanraid fled to modern Connaught. Agricola considered invasion of "Iverna" (Hibernia). At an unknown date, Loegrians (Lagin) settled in modern Leinster. Ireland was partitioned into four "Parts" — the Parts of the Iverni (or Erainn, a Belgic tribe), the Lagin, Ol Nechnacht (i.e. the Damnonian Gamanraid) and the Uluti (another Belgic tribe).

150 CE

Feni (a Q-Celtic tribe) from N. Iberia under Tuathal Techtmar invaded east coast of Ireland; colony of Midhe was created. Part of the Lagin reduced to vassal state; the island was divided into five "Fifths" (Cúige).

199 CE

Conn of the Hundred Battles, grandson of Techtmar (?), became King of Midhe?

IRELAND

305 CE

For a couple of years the parts of the Roman Empire would be run by Constantinus Chlorus and Galerius.



The empire stabilized as Christianity became the official religion.

At an unknown date, Irish Celts (principally Laigin) colonized Anglesey and Lleyn in modern Wales (they would be driven out). The term "Gael," meaning foreigner, entered common use, describing the Iberian Celts (Eoganachta and Connachta) and their allies. Gaelic language based on Iberian (Q-Celtic) dialects became the lingua franca of Ireland. The High Kingdom was founded at Tara in Midhe.



344 CE

The Picts and [Irish](#) began raiding Britannia — the Irish were christened “Scotti” by the Romans.

350 CE

In some unknown year during the 3d Century CE, Eoganachta (the “tribe of Eogan,” a Q-Celtic tribe) from the northern Iberian peninsula or perhaps southern Gaul under Mug Nuadat (“Eogan”) colonized modern Munster. The Belgic Erainn submitted to Eoganachta rule. Mug Nuadat incited other provinces to rise against the Connachta (“tribe of Conn”). As a result, [Ireland](#) had come to be divided into a Leth Cuinn (Conn’s Half) versus a Leth Moga (Mug’s Half).

It was at this point that Christianity arrived in [Ireland](#). (To paraphrase President Clinton, whether such a statistic is leading, or misleading, of course depends on what “arrived” is understood to mean. –It doesn’t mean, of course, that from that point forward the Ten Commandments were going to hold sway, and it doesn’t mean, of course, that from that point forward the 11th Commandment that we should love our neighbors as ourselves –as enunciated first in [Egyptian](#) philosophy and then by the early Christian community– would hold sway. –It did mean, of course, one hell of a market for carved ornate stone crosses.)

375 CE

Gratian would rule as emperor in Rome from 375 CE to 383 CE, and Valentinian II from 375 CE to 392 CE. At roughly the age of 21, after some four years in the big city of Carthage, [Aurelius Augustinus](#) went back to his home town Tagaste to teach. He would remain, however, only a year.

For the following two decades the Huns would be attacking the Goths, who would implore the protection of the Roman emperor of the East. The Goths would be allowed to pass the Danube and settle in the Roman provinces. A war would soon break out between them and the Romans, and they would destroy the emperor Valens and his legions and ravage the Roman Asia Minor, after which the emperor Theodosius would reduce them to submission (they would retain settlements in Thrace and Asia Minor).



IRELAND

IRELAND

At about this point the city of Tiwanaku appeared on the shores of Lake Titicaca. This city was home to 20-40,000 people and is still famous for its monumental gateways and monoliths. While snuff and maize beer were clearly integral parts of Tiwanaku ritual, there is little to suggest major drug and alcohol dependency problems — the Tiwanaku economy was based on horticulture, herding, and trade rather than war, and the city would endure for centuries. From this point until 600CE, the city of Tiahuanaco would continue to develop until eventually 50,000 people lived there.

At about this point Eochaid Mugmedon became King of Midhe. At an unknown date, Belgic tribes of Munster migrated to south Wales and Cornwall, and the Ogham alphabet was introduced back into [Ireland](#) from colonies.

400 CE

Is this the point at which Niall (of the Nine Hostages), son of Eochaid Mugmedon, became King of Midhe? At some unknown point Connachta invaded part of Ol Nechnacht and destroyed ruling Domnonians, and Cúige Connacht was founded. Midhe carved out Airgiallan vassal states from Cúige Ulaid. Niall's sons, Connall and Eogain, founding states (Tír Connall, Inis Eogain and later Tír Eogain) in Cúige Ulaid, while the incumbent Cruthin and Erainn (Old Scots) were driven east of the Bann. Old Scots colonized Pictish lands around Strathclyde in Caledonia.

[IRELAND](#)

389 CE

In about this year Patrick was born, in Wales in Roman Britain of course. (We may suppose there to be one chance in 365 that he was born on St. Patrick's Day.)

[IRELAND](#)



IRELAND

IRELAND

427 CE

[Augustine](#)'s *SPECULUM*. HE COMPLETED *DE DOCTRINA CHRISTIANA*, WHICH HE HAD WORKED ON IN 396 CE. DURING THIS YEAR AND THE FOLLOWING YEAR, HE WOULD CREATE *CONTRA MAXIMUM ARRIANUM* and *CONLATIO CUM MAXIMINO ARRIANORUM EPISCOPO*.

AT ABOUT THIS POINT Ashi, head of Sura Yeshiva, “Rabbana,” began compilation of the Babylonian Talmud.

The Koguryo kingdom moved its capital to Pyongyang. When not building monuments to itself, the Koguryo state was attacking its neighbors, which would prompt its Korean enemies to unify and organize themselves along Chinese bureaucratic lines (Silla, for instance, would in 517 CE establish an office of war organized along Confucian bureaucratic lines).

When Niall died, probably during a raid on Brittania, his son Loegaire became King of Midhe.

IRELAND

431 CE

Pope Celestine sent Palladius to [Ireland](#) to be its initial Bishop.

Nestorian Christianity was condemned at the 3d ecumenical congress, known as the Council of Ephesus (while Nestorians were describing Christ's divinity and his humanity as separate, the winning faction of the Christian hierarchy were describing them as coequal, and what was at stake was whether the Church should derive its leadership from Alexandria, Constantinople, or Ravenna). [Augustine](#) and [Pelagius](#) were dead and gone, but their dispute had lingered. Pelagianism was, however, being eradicated from at least the eastern half of the Church. Mary was proclaimed as the Mother of God (*Theotokos*).

Letters of Nonnus of Panopolis, and John Cassian.

The Egyptian Christians, lacking military power, were forced from Alexandria into Syria and Iraq, where they would begin translating Greek scriptures into Syriac. Syrian Christianity split into an Eastern group known as “Nestorian” and a Western group known as “Jacobites.”



432 CE

Roman Catholic priests known as *patricus* (“Fathers”) appeared in [Ireland](#). Traditional date for the return of St. Patrick as an adult. When he had reached the age of 16 in Wales, he had been sold into slavery to Ireland, where he had been a shepard for 6 years. While in captivity he had studied, and turned to religion. He had escaped his slavery, and this was his return to Ireland as this time a missionary, determined to convert the island to Christianity. He would use the shamrock to explain the Holy Trinity. The invention of whiskey has been attributed to Saint Patrick, but that isn’t likely because the still would not be devised for another three or four centuries — the 5th-Century *uisge beatha* “blessed water” of the British priests was more likely hard apple cider. The legends in which Patrick drove the snakes out of Ireland probably refer to the fact that local priestesses used snakes as totems.

Pope Sixtus III (to 440 CE).

It was at about this point that Christian art began to depict Christ on the cross, presumably as an outgrowth of a Christian asceticism that had come to valorize suffering and pain. Because 5th-Century CE rebels were usually hung without any clothing, these early crucifixes depicted the figure of Christ on the cross as nude (however, during the 6th Century CE, Christian artists would begin to depict Christ as in a diaper, so that he would not be mistaken for the Scandinavian deity Freyr or the Roman deity Priapus).

444 CE

St. Patrick founded Ard Macha (Armagh) near Emain Macha, capital of Ulster, as the ecclesiastical capital of [Ireland](#).

Letters of Cyril of Alexandria and of Arnobius the Younger.

Taoism was proclaimed the state religion of the short-lived Northern Wei empire — the sole period in which Taoism was ever a sponsored religion in China.

461 CE

Roman Emperor Libius Severus (to 465 CE).

Pope Hilarus (to 468 CE).

St. Patrick is said to have died and been buried in Downpatrick (perhaps instead in 493 CE).



IRELAND

IRELAND

493 CE

Theodoric the Great of the Ostrogoths became the ruler of Italy.

St. Patrick is said to have died in this year (or in 461 CE) and to be buried in Downpatrick.

IRELAND



THE CONFESSIO OF ST. PATRICK:

“A WISE SON MAKES A PROUD FATHER”

I, Patrick, a sinner, a most simple countryman, the least of all the faithful and most contemptible to many, had for father the deacon Calpurnius, son of the late Potitus, a priest, of the settlement [vicus] of Bannavem Taburniae; he had a small villa nearby where I was taken captive. I was at that time about sixteen years of age. I did not, indeed, know the true God; and I was taken into captivity in Ireland with many thousands of people, according to our deserts, for quite drawn away from God, we did not keep his precepts, nor were we obedient to our priests who used to remind us of our salvation. And the Lord brought down on us the fury of his being and scattered us among many nations, even to the ends of the earth, where I, in my smallness, am now to be found among foreigners. And there the Lord opened my mind to an awareness of my unbelief, in order that, even so late, I might remember my transgressions and turn with all my heart to the Lord my God, who had regard for my insignificance and pitied my youth and ignorance. And he watched over me before I knew him, and before I learned sense or even distinguished between good and evil, and he protected me, and consoled me as a father would his son. Therefore, indeed, I cannot keep silent, nor would it be proper, so many favours and graces has the Lord deigned to bestow on me in the land of my captivity. For after chastisement from God, and recognizing him, our way to repay him is to exalt him and confess his wonders before every nation under heaven. For there is no other God, nor ever was before, nor shall be hereafter, but God the Father, unbegotten and without beginning, in whom all things began, whose are all things, as we have been taught; and his son Jesus Christ, who manifestly always existed with the Father, before the beginning of time in the spirit with the Father, indescribably begotten before all things, and all things visible and invisible were made by him. He was made man, conquered death and was received into Heaven, to the Father who gave him all power over every name in Heaven and on Earth and in Hell, so that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord and God, in whom we believe. And we look to his imminent coming again, the judge of the living and the dead, who will render to each according to his deeds. And he poured out his Holy Spirit on us in abundance, the gift and pledge of immortality, which makes the believers and the obedient into sons of God and co-heirs of Christ who is revealed, and we worship one God in the Trinity of holy name. He himself said through the prophet: "Call upon me in the day of trouble; I will deliver you, and you shall glorify me." And again: "It is right to reveal and publish abroad the works of God." I am imperfect in many things, nevertheless I want my brethren and kinsfolk to know my nature so that they may be able to perceive my soul's desire. I am not ignorant of what is said of my Lord in the Psalm: "You destroy those who speak a lie." And again: "A lying mouth deals death to the soul." And likewise the Lord says in the Gospel: "On the day of judgment men shall render account for every idle word they utter." So it is that I should mightily fear, with terror and trembling, this judgment on the day when no one shall be able to steal away or hide, but each and all shall render account for even our smallest sins before the judgment seat of Christ the Lord. And therefore for some time I



IRELAND

IRELAND

have thought of writing, but I have hesitated until now, for truly, I feared to expose myself to the criticism of men, because I have not studied like others, who have assimilated both Law and the Holy Scriptures equally and have never changed their idiom since their infancy, but instead were always learning it increasingly, to perfection, while my idiom and language have been translated into a foreign tongue. So it is easy to prove from a sample of my writing, my ability in rhetoric and the extent of my preparation and knowledge, for as it is said, "wisdom shall be recognized in speech, and in understanding, and in knowledge and in the learning of truth." But why make excuses close to the truth, especially when now I am presuming to try to grasp in my old age what I did not gain in my youth because my sins prevented me from making what I had read my own? But who will believe me, even though I should say it again? A young man, almost a beardless boy, I was taken captive before I knew what I should desire and what I should shun. So, consequently, today I feel ashamed and I am mightily afraid to expose my ignorance, because, [not] eloquent, with a small vocabulary, I am unable to explain as the spirit is eager to do and as the soul and the mind indicate. But had it been given to me as to others, in gratitude I should not have kept silent, and if it should appear that I put myself before others, with my ignorance and my slower speech, in truth, it is written: "The tongue of the stammerers shall speak rapidly and distinctly." How much harder must we try to attain it, we of whom it is said: "You are an epistle of Christ in greeting to the ends of the earth ... written on your hearts, not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God." And again, the Spirit witnessed that the rustic life was created by the Most High. I am, then, first of all, countryfied, an exile, evidently unlearned, one who is not able to see into the future, but I know for certain, that before I was humbled I was like a stone lying in deep mire, and he that is mighty came and in his mercy raised me up and, indeed, lifted me high up and placed me on top of the wall. And from there I ought to shout out in gratitude to the Lord for his great favours in this world and for ever, that the mind of man cannot measure. Therefore be amazed, you great and small who fear God, and you men of God, eloquent speakers, listen and contemplate. Who was it summoned me, a fool, from the midst of those who appear wise and learned in the law and powerful in rhetoric and in all things? Me, truly wretched in this world, he inspired before others that I could be— if I would— such a one who, with fear and reverence, and faithfully, without complaint, would come to the people to whom the love of Christ brought me and gave me in my lifetime, if I should be worthy, to serve them truly and with humility. According, therefore, to the measure of one's faith in the Trinity, one should proceed without holding back from danger to make known the gift of God and everlasting consolation, to spread God's name everywhere with confidence and without fear, in order to leave behind, after my death, foundations for my brethren and sons whom I baptized in the Lord in so many thousands. And I was not worthy, nor was I such that the Lord should grant his humble servant this, that after hardships and such great trials, after captivity, after many years, he should give me so much favour in these people, a thing which in the time of my youth I neither hoped for nor imagined. But after I reached Ireland I used to pasture the flock each day and I used to pray many times a day. More and more did the love of God, and my fear of him and faith increase, and my spirit was moved so that in a day [I said] from one up to a hundred prayers, and in the night a like number; besides I used to stay out in the forests and on the mountain and I would wake up before daylight to pray in the snow, in icy coldness, in rain, and I used to feel neither ill nor any slothfulness, because, as I now see, the



IRELAND

IRELAND

Spirit was burning in me at that time. And it was there of course that one night in my sleep I heard a voice saying to me: "You do well to fast: soon you will depart for your home country." And again, a very short time later, there was a voice prophesying: "Behold, your ship is ready." And it was not close by, but, as it happened, two hundred miles away, where I had never been nor knew any person. And shortly thereafter I turned about and fled from the man with whom I had been for six years, and I came, by the power of God who directed my route to advantage (and I was afraid o nothing), until I reached that ship. And on the same day that I arrived, the ship was setting out from the place, and I said that I had the wherewithal to sail with them; and the steersman was displeased and replied in anger, sharply: "By no means attempt to go with us." Hearing this I left them to go to the hut where I was staying, and on the way I began to pray, and before the prayer was finished I heard one of them shouting loudly after me: "Come quickly because the men are calling you." And immediately I went back to them and they started to say to me: "Come, because we are admitting you out of good faith; make friendship with us in any way you wish." (And so, on that day, I refused to suck the breasts of these men from fear of God, but nevertheless I had hopes that they would come to faith in Jesus Christ, because they were barbarians.) And for this I continued with them, and forthwith we put to sea. And after three days we reached land, and for twenty-eight days journeyed through uninhabited country, and the food ran out and hunger overtook them; and one day the steersman began saying: "Why is it, Christian? You say your God is great and all-powerful; then why can you not pray for us? For we may perish of hunger; it is unlikely indeed that we shall ever see another human being." In fact, I said to them, confidently: "Be converted by faith with all your heart to my Lord God, because nothing is impossible for him, so that today he will send food for you on your road, until you be sated, because everywhere he abounds." And with God's help this came to pass; and behold, a herd of swine appeared on the road before our eyes, and they slew many of them, and remained there for two nights, and the were full of their meat and well restored, for many of them had fainted and would otherwise have been left half dead by the wayside. And after this they gave the utmost thanks to God, and I was esteemed in their eyes, and from that day they had food abundantly. They discovered wild honey, besides, and they offered a share to me, and one of them said: "It is a sacrifice." Thanks be to God, I tasted none of it. The very same night while I was sleeping Satan attacked me violently, as I will remember as long as I shall be in this body; and there fell on top of me as it were, a huge rock, and not one of my members had any force. But from whence did it come to me, ignorant in the spirit, to call upon "Helias"? And meanwhile I saw the sun rising in the sky, and while I was crying out "Helias, Helias" with all my might, lo, the brilliance of that sun fell upon me and immediately shook me free of all the weight; and I believe that I was aided by Christ my Lord, and that his Spirit then was crying out for me, and I hope that it will be so in the day of my affliction, just as it says in the Gospel: "In that hour," the Lord declares, "it is not you who speaks but the Spirit of your Father speaking in you." And a second time, after many years, I was taken captive. On the first night I accordingly remained with my captors, but I heard a divine prophecy, saying to me: "You shall be with them for two months." So it happened. On the sixtieth night the Lord delivered me from their hands. On the journey he provided us with food and fire and dry weather every day, until on the tenth day we came upon people. As I mentioned above, we had journeyed through an unpopulated country for twenty-eight days, and in fact the night that we came upon



IRELAND

IRELAND

people we had no food. And after a few years I was again in Britain with my parents [kinsfolk], and they welcomed me as a son, and asked me, in faith, that after the great tribulations I had endured I should not go anywhere else away from them. And, of course, there, in a vision of the night, I saw a man whose name was Victoricus coming as if from Ireland with innumerable letters, and he gave me one of them, and I read the beginning of the letter: "The Voice of the Irish," and as I was reading the beginning of the letter I seemed at that moment to hear the voice of those who were beside the forest of Foclut which is near the western sea, and they were crying as if with one voice: "We beg you, holy youth, that you shall come and shall walk again among us." And I was stung intensely in my heart so that I could read no more, and thus I awoke. Thanks be to God, because after so many years the Lord bestowed on them according to their cry. And another night— God knows, I do not, whether within me or beside me— ... most words + ... + which I heard and could not understand, except at the end of the speech it was represented thus: "He who gave his life for you, he it is who speaks within you." And thus I awoke, joyful. And on a second occasion I saw Him praying within me, and I was as it were, inside my own body, and I heard Him above me— that is, above my inner self. He was praying powerfully with sighs. And in the course of this I was astonished and wondering, and I pondered who it could be who was praying within me. But at the end of the prayer it was revealed to me that it was the Spirit. And so I awoke and remembered the Apostle's words: "Likewise the Spirit helps us in our weakness; for we know not how to pray as we ought. But the Spirit Himself intercedes for us with sighs too deep for utterance." And again: "The Lord our advocate intercedes for us." And then I was attacked by a goodly number of my elders, who [brought up] my sins against my arduous episcopate. That day in particular I was mightily upset, and might have fallen here and for ever; but the Lord generously spared me, a convert, and an alien, for his name's sake, and he came powerfully to my assistance in that state of being trampled down. I pray God that it shall not be held against them as a sin that I fell truly into disgrace and scandal. They brought up against me after thirty years an occurrence I had confessed before becoming a deacon. On account of the anxiety in my sorrowful mind, I laid before my close friend what I had perpetrated on a day— nay, rather in one hour— in my boyhood because I was not yet proof against sin. God knows— I do not— whether I was fifteen years old at the time, and I did not then believe in the living God, nor had I believed, since my infancy; but I remained in death and unbelief until I was severely rebuked, and in truth I was humbled every day by hunger and nakedness. On the other hand, I did not proceed to Ireland of my own accord until I was almost giving up, but through this I was corrected by the Lord, and he prepared me so that today I should be what was once far from me, in order that I should have the care of— or rather, I should be concerned for— the salvation of others, when at that time, still, I was only concerned for myself. Therefore, on that day when I was rebuked, as I have just mentioned, I saw in a vision of the night a document before my face, without honour, and meanwhile I heard a divine prophecy, saying to me: "We have seen with displeasure the face of the chosen one divested of [his good] name." And he did not say "You have seen with displeasure," but "We have seen with displeasure" (as if He included Himself). He said then: "He who touches you, touches the apple of my eye." For that reason, I give thanks to him who strengthened me in all things, so that I should not be hindered in my setting out and also in my work which I was taught by Christ my Lord; but more, from that state of affairs I felt, within me, no little courage, and vindicated my faith before God and man. Hence, therefore, I say boldly that



IRELAND

IRELAND

my conscience is clear now and hereafter. God is my witness that I have not lied in these words to you. But rather, I am grieved for my very close friend, that because of him we deserved to hear such a prophecy. The one to whom I entrusted my soul! And I found out from a goodly number of brethren, before the case was made in my defence (in which I did not take part, nor was I in Britain, nor was it pleaded by me), that in my absence he would fight in my behalf. Besides, he told me himself: "See, the rank of bishop goes to you"— of which I was not worthy. But how did it come to him, shortly afterwards, to disgrace me publicly, in the presence of all, good and bad, because previously, gladly and of his own free will, he pardoned me, as did the Lord, who is greater than all? I have said enough. But all the same, I ought not to conceal God's gift which he lavished on us in the land of my captivity, for then I sought him resolutely, and I found him there, and he preserved me from all evils (as I believe) through the in-dwelling of his Spirit, which works in me to this day. Again, boldly, but God knows, if this had been made known to me by man, I might, perhaps, have kept silent for the love of Christ. Thus I give untiring thanks to God who kept me faithful in the day of my temptation, so that today I may confidently over my soul as a living sacrifice for Christ my Lord; who am I, Lord? or, rather, what is my calling? that you appeared to me in so great a divine quality, so that today among the barbarians I might constantly exalt and magnify your name in whatever place I should be, and not only in good fortune, but even in affliction? So that whatever befalls me, be it good or bad, I should accept it equally, and give thanks always to God who revealed to me that I might trust in him, implicitly and forever, and who will encourage me so that, ignorant, and in the last days, I may dare to undertake so devout and so wonderful a work; so that I might imitate one of those whom, once, long ago, the Lord already pre-ordained to be heralds of his Gospel to witness to all peoples to the ends of the earth. So are we seeing, and so it is fulfilled; behold, we are witnesses because the Gospel has been preached as far as the places beyond which no man lives. But it is tedious to describe in detail all my labours one by one. I will tell briefly how most holy God frequently delivered me, from slavery, and from the twelve trials with which my soul was threatened, from man traps as well, and from things I am not able to put into words. I would not cause offence to readers, but I have God as witness who knew all things even before they happened, that, though I was a poor ignorant waif, still he gave me abundant warnings through divine prophecy. Whence came to me this wisdom which was not my own, I who neither knew the number of days nor had knowledge of God? Whence came the so great and so healthful gift of knowing or rather loving God, though I should lose homeland and family. And many gifts were offered to me with weeping and tears, and I offended them [the donors], and also went against the wishes of a good number of my elders; but guided by God, I neither agreed with them nor deferred to them, not by my own grace but by God who is victorious in me and withstands them all, so that I might come to the Irish people to preach the Gospel and endure insults from unbelievers; that I might hear scandal of my travels, and endure man persecutions to the extent of prison; and so that I might give up my free birthright for the advantage of others, and if I should be worthy, I am ready [to give] even m life without. hesitation; and most willingly for His name. And I choose to devote it to him even unto death, if God grant it to me. I am greatly God's debtor, because he granted me so much grace, that through me many people would be reborn in God, and soon a after confirmed, and that clergy would be ordained everywhere for them, the masses lately come to belief, whom the Lord drew from the ends of the earth,



IRELAND

IRELAND

just as he once promised through his prophets: "To you shall the nations come from the ends of the earth, and shall say, Our fathers have inherited naught hut lies, worthless things in which there is no profit." And again: "I have set you to be a light for the Gentiles that you may bring salvation to the uttermost ends of the earth." And I wish to wait then for his promise which is never unfulfilled, just as it is promised in the Gospel: "Many shall come from east and west and shall sit at table with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob." Just as we believe that believers will come from all the world. So for that reason one should, in fact, fish well and diligently, just as the Lord foretells and teaches, saying, "Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men," and again through the prophets: "Behold, I am sending forth many fishers and hunters, says the Lord," et cetera. So it behoved us to spread our nets, that a vast multitude and throng might be caught for God, and so there might be clergy everywhere who baptized and exhorted a needy and desirous people. Just as the Lord says in the Gospel, admonishing and instructing: "Go therefore and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always to the end of time." And again he says: "Go forth into the world and preach the Gospel to all creation. He who believes and is baptized shall be saved; but he who does not believe shall be condemned." And again: "This Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached throughout the whole world as a witness to all nations; and then the end of the world shall come." And likewise the Lord foretells through the prophet: "And it shall come to pass in the last days (sayeth the Lord) that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions and your old men shall dream dreams; yea, and on my menservants and my maidservants in those days I will pour out my Spirit and they shall prophesy." And in Hosea he says: "Those who are not my people I will call my people, and those not beloved I will call my beloved, and in the very place where it was said to them, You are not my people, they will be called 'Sons of the living God'." So, how is it that in Ireland, where they never had any knowledge of God but, always, until now, cherished idols and unclean things, they are lately become a people of the Lord, and are called children of God; the sons of. the Irish [Scotti] and the daughters of the chieftains are to be seen as monks and virgins of Christ. And there was, besides, a most beautiful, blessed, native-born noble Irish [Scotta] woman of adult age whom I baptized; and a few days later she had reason to come to us to intimate that she had received a prophecy from a divine messenger [who] advised her that she should become a virgin of Christ and she would draw nearer to God. Thanks be to God, six days from then, opportunely and most eagerly, she took the course that all virgins of God take, not with their fathers' consent but enduring the persecutions and deceitful hindrances of their parents. Notwithstanding that, their number increases, (we do not know the number of them that are so reborn) besides the widows, and those who practise self-denial. Those who are kept in slavery suffer the most. They endure terrors and constant threats, but the Lord has given grace to many of his handmaidens, for even though they are forbidden to do so, still they resolutely follow his example. So it is that even if I should wish to separate from them in order to go to Britain, and most willingly was I prepared to go to my homeland and kinsfolk— and not only there, but as far as Gaul to visit the brethren there, so that I might see the faces of the holy ones of my Lord, God knows how strongly I desired this— I am bound by the Spirit, who witnessed to me that if I did so he would mark me out as guilty, and I fear to waste the labour that I began, and not I, but Christ



IRELAND

IRELAND

the Lord, who commanded me to come to be with them for the rest of my life, if the Lord shall will it and shield me from every evil, so that I may not sin before him. So I hope that I did as I ought, but I do not trust myself as long as I am in this mortal body, for he is strong who strives daily to turn me away from the faith and true holiness to which I aspire until the end of my life for Christ my Lord, but the hostile flesh is always dragging one down to death, that is, to unlawful attractions. And I know in part why I did not lead a perfect life like other believers, but I confess to my Lord and do not blush in his sight, because I am not lying; from the time when I came to know him in my youth, the love of God and fear of him increased in me, and right up until now, by God's favour, I have kept the faith. What is more, let anyone laugh and taunt if he so wishes. I am not keeping silent, nor am I hiding the signs and wonders that were shown to me by the Lord many years before they happened, [he] who knew everything, even before the beginning of time. Thus, I should give thanks unceasingly to God, who frequently forgave my folly and my negligence, in more than one instance so as not to be violently angry with me, who am placed as his helper, and I did not easily assent to what had been revealed to me, as the Spirit was urging; and the Lord took pity on me thousands upon thousands of times, because he saw within me that I was prepared, but that I was ignorant of what to do in view of my situation; because many were trying to prevent this mission. They were talking among themselves behind my back, and saying: "Why is this fellow throwing himself into danger among enemies who know not God?" Not from malice, but having no liking for it; likewise, as I myself can testify, they perceived my rusticity. And I was not quick to recognize the grace that was then in me; I now know that I should have done so earlier. Now I have put it frankly to my brethren and co-workers, who have believed me because of what I have foretold and still foretell to strengthen and reinforce your faith. I wish only that you, too, would make greater and better efforts. This will be my pride, for "a wise son makes a proud father." You know, as God does, how I went about among you from my youth in the faith of truth and in sincerity of heart. As well as to the heathen among whom I live, I have shown them trust and always show them trust. God knows I did not cheat any one of them, nor consider it, for the sake of God and his Church, lest I arouse them and [bring about] persecution for them and for all of us, and lest the Lord's name be blasphemed because of me, for it is written: "Woe to the men through whom the name of the Lord is blasphemed." For even though I am ignorant in all things, nevertheless I attempted to safeguard some and myself also. And I gave back again to my Christian brethren and the virgins of Christ and the holy women the small unasked for gifts that they used to give me or some of their ornaments which they used to throw on the altar. And they would be offended with me because I did this. But in the hope of eternity, I safeguarded myself carefully in all things, so that they might not cheat me of my office of service on any pretext of dishonesty, and so that I should not in the smallest way provide any occasion for defamation or disparagement on the part of unbelievers. What is more, when I baptized so many thousands of people, did I hope for even half a jot from any of them? [If so] Tell me, and I will give it back to you. And when the Lord ordained clergy everywhere by my humble means, and I freely conferred office on them, if I asked any of them anywhere even for the price of one shoe, say so to my face and I will give it back. More, I spent for you so that they would receive me. And I went about among you, and everywhere for your sake, in danger, and as far as the outermost regions beyond which no one lived, and where no one had ever penetrated before, to baptize or to ordain clergy or to confirm people. Conscientiously and gladly



IRELAND

IRELAND

I did all this work by God's gift for your salvation. From time to time I gave rewards to the kings, as well as making payments to their sons who travel with me; notwithstanding which, they seized me with my companions, and that day most avidly desired to kill me. But my time had not yet come. They plundered everything they found on us anyway, and fettered me in irons; and on the fourteenth day the Lord freed me from their power, and whatever they had of ours was given back to us for the sake of God on account of the indispensable friends whom we had made before. Also you know from experience how much I was paying to those who were administering justice in all the regions, which I visited often. I estimate truly that I distributed to them not less than the price of fifteen men, in order that you should enjoy my company and I enjoy yours, always, in God. I do not regret this nor do I regard it as enough. I am paying out still and I shall pay out more. The Lord has the power to grant me that I may soon spend my own self, for your souls. Behold, I call on God as my witness upon my soul that I am not lying; nor would I write to you for it to be an occasion for flattery or selfishness, nor hoping for honour from any one of you. Sufficient is the honour which is not yet seen, but in which the heart has confidence. He who made the promise is faithful; he never lies. But I see that even here and now, I have been exalted beyond measure by the Lord, and I was not worthy that he should grant me this, while I know most certainly that poverty and failure suit me better than wealth and delight (but Christ the Lord was poor for our sakes; I certainly am wretched and unfortunate; even if I wanted wealth I have no resources, nor is it my own estimation of myself, for daily I expect to be murdered or betrayed or reduced to slavery if the occasion arises. But I fear nothing, because of the promises of Heaven; for I have cast myself into the hands of Almighty God, who reigns everywhere. As the prophet says: "Cast your burden on the Lord and he will sustain you." Behold now I commend my soul to God who is most faithful and for whom I perform my mission in obscurity, but he is no respecter of persons and he chose me for this service that I might be one of the least of his ministers. For which reason I should make return for all that he returns me. But what should I say, or what should I promise to my Lord, for I, alone, can do nothing unless he himself vouchsafe it to me. But let him search my heart and [my] nature, for I crave enough for it, even too much, and I am ready for him to grant me that I drink of his chalice, as he has granted to others who love him. Therefore may it never befall me to be separated by my God from his people whom he has won in this most remote land. I pray God that he gives me perseverance, and that he will deign that I should be a faithful witness for his sake right up to the time of my passing. And if at any time I managed anything of good for the sake of my God whom I love, I beg of him that he grant it to me to shed my blood for his name with proselytes and captives, even should I be left unburied, or even were my wretched body to be torn limb from limb by dogs or savage beasts, or were it to be devoured by the birds of the air, I think, most surely, were this to have happened to me, I had saved both my soul and my body. For beyond any doubt on that day we shall rise again in the brightness of the sun, that is, in the glory of Christ Jesus our Redeemer, as children of the living God and co-heirs of Christ, made in his image; for we shall reign through him and for him and in him. For the sun we see rises each day for us at [his] command, but it will never reign, neither will its splendour last, but all who worship it will come wretchedly to punishment. We, on the other hand, shall not die, who believe in and worship the true sun, Christ, who will never die, no more shall he die who has done Christ's will, but will abide for ever just as Christ abides for ever, who reigns with God the Father Almighty and



IRELAND

IRELAND

with the Holy Spirit before the beginning of time and now and for ever and ever. Amen. Behold over and over again I would briefly set out the words of my confession. I testify in truthfulness and gladness of heart before God and his holy angels that I never had any reason, except the Gospel and his promises, ever to have returned to that nation from which I had previously escaped with difficulty. But I entreat those who believe in and fear God, whoever deigns to examine or receive this document composed by the obviously unlearned sinner Patrick in Ireland, that nobody shall ever ascribe to my ignorance any trivial thing that I achieved or may have expounded that was pleasing to God, but accept and truly believe that it would have been the gift of God. And this is my confession before I die.

500 CE

The Ghanaian empire was becoming the most important power in West Africa.

Fergus Mac Erc, King of Dalriada, relocated his capital from Dunseverick to Caledonia.

IRELAND

The Thule people were moving into Alaska.

Polynesians, originally from Southeast Asia, were settling in the Hawaiian Islands and on Easter Island.

The people of the Hopewell culture in northern America were building elaborate burial mounds, making pottery, and using iron weapons.

Incense was being introduced into Christian church service and the initial plans were being drawn up for a Vatican headquarters of the Holy Catholic and Universal Church.

The [Codex Sangallensis](#), the earliest extant Latin Vulgate, with Gospels. [Codex Argenteus](#), the earliest nearly complete Gothic (German) Bible, with Gospels. [Codex Cottonianus](#): Greek Genesis.

546 CE

St. Columba (Columcille) founded Derry.

IRELAND



IRELAND

IRELAND

555 CE

Christianity's 5th ecumenical conference, the 2d Council of Constantinople, was called by Justinian.

Until 568 CE, Byzantium would be supreme over the entirety of [Italy](#).

St. Comgall founded the monastery of Bangor.

IRELAND

563 CE

There was a big rockfall next to the Rhone River where it entered the east end of Lake Geneva and the river's delta mud suddenly slumped toward the bottom center of the lake (this had already happened four times since the formation of the lake at the end of the previous ice age). A tsunami traveled from west to east along the lake and about 70 minutes later a wall of water some 26 feet high struck [Geneva](#), which was then mostly a smallish walled community atop a hill, When this occurs a 6th time Geneva is going to be a terrific place ("Run uphill, Mom!") because nowadays it's more low-lying and considerably more populous.

St. Columba left [Ireland](#) for Iona after being censured by the Irish Synod. At the Battle of Moin-daire-Lothair, a Cruithnic army was defeated by a force led by Clan Connall and Clan Owen. Irish missionaries would be introducing Roman Catholicism into the highlands of Scotland (until 597 CE).

574 CE

On Iona, St. Columba crowned Aedan as King of Dalriada.

IRELAND



IRELAND

IRELAND

590 CE

Pope Gregory I, the Great (until 604 CE).

In Rome, the plague.

At about this point Arab warriors began to ride their horses into battle (previously they had been dismounting and dueling with swords before crowds of scantily-clad female admirers).

The Christian Synod of Druim Ceat ordered British women to cease their practice of going into battle alongside their men (this ban seems not to have been especially effective, since a daughter of Alfred the Great is remembered as the conqueror of Wales, and it would be females who would teach sword dancing to the Ulster hero C° Chulainn).

St. Columbanus sailed from Bangor to begin a mission in France.

IRELAND

597 CE

On Iona, St. Columba died.

IRELAND

603 CE

St. Comgall died in Bangor.

IRELAND

608 CE

At about this point Aedan, King of Dalriada, died.

IRELAND



IRELAND

IRELAND

627 CE

Battle of Brae Slieve; Cruithnic dynasty of Coleraine overthrown. Congal Clane (One-Eye) became King of the Old Scots.

IRELAND

In about this year the T'ang Dynasty T'ai Tsung emperor was establishing a [Chinese](#) military training standard that required crossbowmen to hit a man-size target two times out of four at a range of 300 yards.

628 CE

When Congal Clane killed the High King, Suibne Menn, of the Clan Owen, Domnall, son of Hugh, became High King.

IRELAND

629 CE

Between this year and 645 CE Hsüan-tsang, a Chinese scholar, took 600 *Yogacara* “Unifying Practice” texts from North India to China by way of Katmandu. The doctrine offered in these texts was that we perceive the world to be as we believe it to be rather than as it really is. Logic is without significance, sin and goodness without significance, and both faith and works without significance — whatever significance anything originated in one’s own heart and nature. This attitude would provide the basis for the Ch’an (Zen) Buddhism of [China](#), [Korea](#), and [Japan](#).

Heraclius recovered Jerusalem from the Persians.

Pope Honorius I sided with Emperor Heraclius and the Monothelites who had been condemned in 622 CE.

Congal Clane killed the King of Dalriada.

At the battle of Dun Ceithirnn, O’Neill under Domnall defeated Congal and Congal fled to Scotland.

IRELAND



IRELAND

IRELAND

636 CE

The southern portion of the Irish Church submitted to Roman [Catholicism](#).

IRELAND

At about this point the 81st chapter of a Sui Dynasty history called the Sui Shu mentioned the Eastern Barbarians, meaning [Koreans](#), Japanese, and either the Taiwanese or the Okinawans. Regarding the Taiwanese or Okinawans, the chroniclers wrote, “There are villages here and there, each with a headman called wu-liao. Invariably a good fighter becomes the wu-liao and controls the village... There are knives, pikes, bows and arrows, and things like swords. There is little iron there, and their blades are all thin and small. Bone and horn are generally used, to make up [for the lack of iron]. For armor they use plaited hemp or the thin skins of bears or leopards... The people of this country like to attack one another. They are strong and robust, and they run well. They do not die easily and bear their wounds well. The various districts live unto themselves and do not succor one another. When two bands of fighters face each other, three to five brave men come forward and leap and dance about, yelling and hurling insults at each other. Then they fight, shooting arrows at each other. If neither side can vanquish the other, they all run away.” During the late 19th Century, European scholars would theorize that this passage had referred to Taiwan and after the [Japanese](#) occupied that island in 1895, this attitude would become the prevalent one in Japan (20th-Century [Chinese](#) scholars, on the other hand, would determine that this had been a reference to Okinawa, and most US scholars now accept the Chinese interpretation).



637 CE

Congal Clane returned with large army, led by Domnall Brecc, grandson of Aedan. Battle of Moira; Congal killed; Domnall Brecc lost title to his Irish territories.

At a siege of Jerusalem the Saracens under Omar defeated the Byzantines, again disrupting [the Pax Romana](#).

- 446 The Britons, now left to themselves, are greatly harassed by the Scots and Picts, upon which they once more make their complaint to the Romans, but receive no assistance from that quarter.
- 447 Attila (surnamed the Scourge of God) with his Huns, ravages the Roman empire.
- 449 Vortigern, king of the Britons, invites the Saxons into Britain against the Scots and Picts.
- 455 The Saxons having repulsed the Scots and Picts, invite over more of their countrymen, and begin to establish themselves in Kent, under Hengist.
- 476 The western empire is finished, 523 years after the battle of Pharsalia; upon the ruins of which several new states arise in Italy and other parts, consisting of Goths, Vandals, Huns, and other Barbarians, under whom literature is extinguished, and the works of the learned are destroyed.
- 496 Clovis, king of France, baptized, and Christianity begins in that kingdom.
- 508 Prince Arthur begins his reign over the Britons.
- 516 The computing of time by the Christian æra is introduced by Dionysius the monk.
- 529 The code of Justinian, the eastern emperor, is published.
- 581 Latin ceased to be spoken about this time in Italy.
- 596 Augustine the monk comes into England with forty monks.
- 606 Here begins the power of the popes, by the concessions of Phocas, emperor of the east.
- 622 Mahomet, the false prophet, flies from Mecca to Medina, in Arabia, in the 44th year of his age, and 10th of his ministry, when he laid the foundation of the Saracen empire; and from whom the Mahometan princes to this day claim their descent. His followers compute their time from this æra, which in Arabic is called Hegira, i. e. the Flight.
- 637 Jerusalem is taken by the Saracens, or followers of Mahomet.

697 CE

Roman [Catholic](#) priests prohibited Irish women and children from appearing on contested battlefields. This instituted a considerable cultural change for, in pre-Christian times, Irish women and children had often accompanied their men into battle.

On the [Italian](#) peninsula, the Adriatic city-state of Venice declared independence from both Byzantium and [Rome](#).

In this year and the following one, Saracens destroyed the Byzantine city of Carthage in North Africa, disrupting [the Pax Romana](#) (the new city of Tunis would begin nearby).





IRELAND

IRELAND

700 CE

In China, Hung Pei-sze described an esoteric Buddhist movement arts using the phrase *ch'uan fa* (this term, which now means “boxing,” probably at the time referred to the teachings of the Buddha and his followers and described Buddhist gesture dancing, since *ch'uan* means “hand” while *fa* means “method” or “law”).

In Korea, Buddhist monks living near Kyongju produced a woodblock print of the *Dharani Sutra* (this was a century and a half before the publication of the Diamond Sutra, “the world’s 1st book,” in northwestern China in 868 CE).

The 1st Polynesians arrived in the Cook Islands.

Easter Islanders began to build stone platforms as part of ceremonial enclosures.

The rise of a culture in the Mississippi river basin involving flat-topped mounds, used as temple bases.

Brehon Laws — rights and status of all defined based on tribal hierarchy.

IRELAND

During the following century Irish monasticism would reach its zenith.

Plant	Name	Place
Tomato	<i>Lycopersicum esculentum</i>	South Central America

OTHERS

774 CE

Between this year and 806 CE in the [Japanese](#) islands, a Yamato army under the command of Tamuramaro Sakanoue would be conquering the aboriginal Ainu of Honshu. The military reforms required for this Japanese victory included replacing conscript levies with full-time armies maintained by regional lords (the process would contribute to the rise of classic feudalism in Japan).

To this year dates the final use of the term “Cruthin” in *Cúige Ulaid*.

IRELAND



IRELAND

IRELAND

795 CE

Viking invasions begin — mostly coastal towns.

IRELAND

At about this point, as the Muslims spread [Chinese](#) techniques of papermaking, and the [hemp](#) it required, throughout the Middle East, Islamic law begins to be promulgated by writing as a supplement to memory. The four orthodox schools of Islamic jurisprudence, all created during the 8th and 9th Centuries of the Common Era, would discourage sectarianism by encouraging legal rather than military solutions to problems, and as such would be one of the more important creations of early Islam.

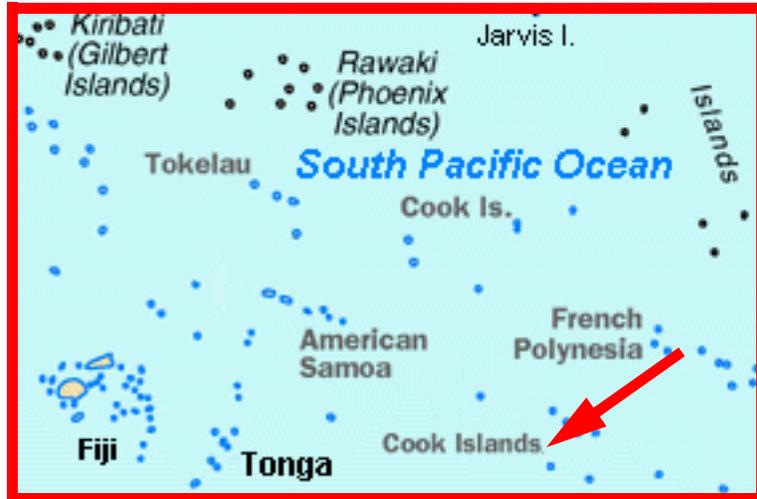
800 CE

In [Ireland](#), the Book of Kells was being illuminated. The first castles were being erected in western Europe. Arabs and Persians were exploring the East African coast and setting up trading stations at Malindi, Mombasa, Kilwa, and Mogadishu. By this point the astrolabe was highly developed in the Islamic world. The device would not be introduced from Andalusia (Islamic Spain) into Europe, however, until the early 12th Century.

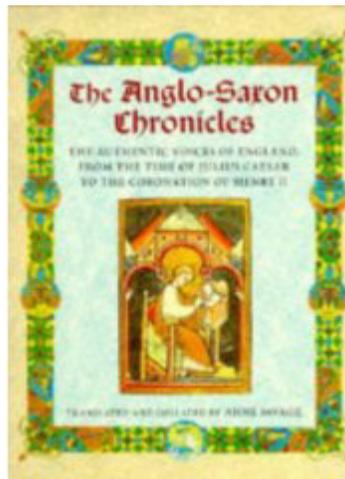


(The instrument pictured above would be crafted in Europe in 1532.)

In the Pacific, the tradition is that Ru, who sailed from Tupua'i in French Polynesia, landed in about this timeframe on Aitutaki and Tangiia and perhaps Rarotonga in the [Cook Islands](#). The master mariner Ru had not, of course, ever seen, or, it seems, did he have any need of, such an astrolabe.



ANGLO-SAXON CHRONICLES



841 CE

Viking longphort established at Dublin.

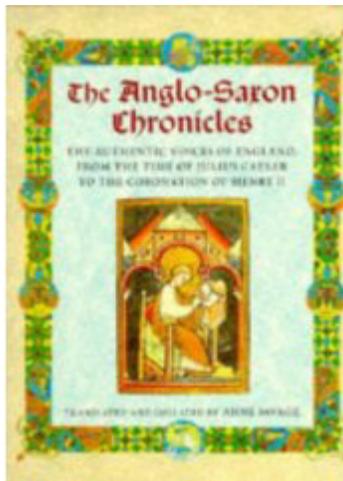
IRELAND

900 CE

Cork, Limerick, and Waterford were being founded, by Vikings.

IRELAND

ANGLO-SAXON CHRONICLES



902 CE

The 1st preserved account of the Leonid meteor shower, observed by Chinese astronomers. There would be numerous accounts in the succeeding centuries, amounting in general to remarks such as “Stars fell like rain.”³

The Vikings abandoned the longphort they had established at Dublin.

IRELAND

3. The Leonids occurred in mid-October during the 10th century, late October during the 16th century, and mid-November during the 20th century.

917 CE

For lack of anything better to do, some people were offing one another not only at Anchialos near Mesembria, in Bulgaria on the shore of the Black Sea, but also at Catasyrtae south of there, in Thrace:



A walled city was being founded at what is now Dublin, by Vikings.

IRELAND

964 CE

Dal Cais under Mahon (Mathgamain) seized the throne of Cashel.

IRELAND

976 CE

Brian Boru became King of Dal Cais.

IRELAND

The beginning of the reign of Basil II as Byzantine emperor (he would defeat the Bulgarians in 1014 CE and rule until 1025 CE).



IRELAND

IRELAND

984 CE

Brian Boru gained control of all of Southern [Ireland](#).

997 CE

Brian Boru and High King Malachy divided [Ireland](#) between them.

1002 CE

A Norwegian named Leif Eiriksson established the initial European settlement in North America. Basque whalers would soon follow in his wake, and establish secret fisheries off the estuary of the Saint Lawrence River.

Malachy ceded High Kingship to Brian Boru.

[IRELAND](#)

1014 CE

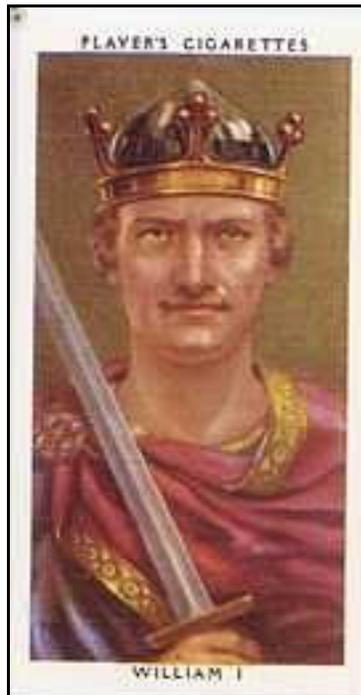
Brian Boru, High King of all [Ireland](#), defeated the Vikings at the battle of Clontarf but was then murdered.

At Kleidion the Byzantines under Basil II defeated the Bulgars under Samuel, restoring [the Pax Romana](#).⁴

4. You will note that in these records of battles leaving fields littered with corpses, the terms “creating the Pax Romana” and “disrupting the Pax Romana” are terms of art — and are employed arbitrarily. Please don’t try to figure out why sometimes the term “creating” is selected, and sometimes the word “disrupting,” as this won’t get you anywhere at all.

1066 CE

A comet appeared over France and England during the invasion by William the Bastard, Duke of Normandy and his glorious defeats of King Harold of England at Stamford Bridge on September 24th-25th and at Hastings on October 14th, and was duly depicted in the Bayeux Tapestry. It was P/Halley, though nobody knew.



William, at this point re-creating himself as The Conqueror, granted Jersey to some of the Norman knights who had helped him achieve the English crown. Here is a depiction from that isle in the English Channel:⁵



This phenomenal object had been being observed in our heavens since 1404 BCE, though nobody knew.

5. Stamp Series: The Appearance of Halley's Comet; Issued March 4, 1986; Design: Jennifer Toombs; Printed in lithography by Cartor; Perforations 13½x13 - Stamp size 42mm x 28mm



IRELAND

IRELAND

(Everybody was entirely preoccupied.)

HALLEY'S COMET
ASTRONOMY

- 1000 Paper made of cotton rags was in use ; that of linen rags in 1170 ; the manufactory introduced into England at Dartford, 1588.
- 1005 All the old churches are rebuilt about this time in a new manner of architecture.
- 1015 Children forbidden by law to be sold by their parents in England.
- 1017 Canute, king of Denmark, gets possession of England.
- 1040 The Danes, after several engagements with various success, are about this time driven out of Scotland, and never again return in a hostile manner.
- 1041 The Saxon line restored under Edward the Confessor.
- 1043 The Turks (a nation of adventurers from Tartary, serving hitherto in the armies of contending princes) become formidable, and take possession of Persia.
- 1054 Leo IX. the first pope that kept up an army.
- 1057 Malcolm III. king of Scotland, kills the tyrant Macbeth at Dunsinane ; and marries the princess Margaret, sister to Edgar Atheling.
- 1065 The Turks take Jerusalem from the Saracens.
- 1066 The battle of Hastings fought between Harold and William (surnamed the bastard) duke of Normandy, in which Harold is conquered and slain ; after which William becomes king of England.
- 1070 William introduces the feudal law.
Musical notes invented.
- 1075 Henry IV. emperor of Germany, and the pope, quarrel about the nomination

This is what Halley's Comet looked like, the last time it passed us. We have records of the appearances of this comet on each and every one of its past 30 orbits, which is to say, we have spotty records of observations before that, in 1,404 BCE, 1,057 BCE, 466 BCE, 391 BCE, and 315 BCE, but then on the 240 BCE return the sightings record begins to be complete. The Babylonians recorded seeing it in 164 BCE and again in 87 BCE, and then it was recorded as being seen in 12 BCE, 66 CE, 141 CE, 218 CE, 295 CE, 374 CE, 451 CE, 530 CE, 607 CE, 684 CE, 760 CE (only by Chinese), 837 CE, 912 CE, 989 CE, 1066, 1145, 1222, 1301, 1378, 1456, 1531, 1607, 1682, 1758, 1835, 1910, and 1986 - and we are confidently awaiting sightings in 2061 and 2134 even though due to a close conjunction with the earth we are presently unable to calculate what orbit it will have by the date of that approach. Each time P/Halley orbits in out of the Kuiper belt beyond the planets Neptune and Pluto and whips around the sun, it has been throwing off about one 10,000ths of its mass into a streaming tail, which means that this comet which we know to have been visiting us for at the very least the past 3,000 years or so is only going to be visiting us for perhaps another half a million years or so!



HALLEY'S COMET



EDMOND HALLEY

At about this point Ernegis and Radulfus (Ralph) de Burun arrived in England, possibly in the company of Duke William the Bastard of Normandy.⁶ William would reign until his death in 1087 CE as The Conqueror. There would be frequent risings of the English against him, which, knowing how power is gained and lost, he would quell with remarkable and merciless rigour.

At this point Cahokia, just to the east of what has in our own timeframe become the city of St. Louis, at a population of about 30,000 souls, was as large as or larger than London or Paris, or any other city in Europe.

The Conquest of 1066 involved replacement of the Church establishment by French-speaking Normans who had a tradition of apple growing and cider making. They would introduce many apple types to Britain, the first recorded of which were the Pearmain and the Costard. The Pearmain was particularly valued for cider making. The Pearmain (Old English Pearmain) was first recorded in 1204. The manor of Runham in Norfolk had to pay to the Exchequer each year 200 Pearmains and 4 hogsheads of cider made from Pearmains. The Costard was first recorded in 1296 when 100 fruits were sold for 1 shilling. From the year 1325 there is a record that 29 Costard apple trees were sold for 3 shillings. The apple name is preserved in our word costermonger (originally a seller of Costard apples).

1111 CE

At the Synod of Rathbresail, [Ireland](#) came to be divided into 24 Dioceses and 2 Archbishoprics.

The Iranian theologian al-Ghazali died at Tus, in the Safavid state of Khurasan. Al-Ghazali believed that the ultimate source of knowledge was divine revelation, rather than human reason as the Greeks had offered. That being the case, change was inherently error, for it would involve moving away from the word of God as revealed to Muhammad during what Westerners refer to as “the 7th Century.”

6. It is uncertain how Ralph and Ernegis were related, but they were most likely brothers. Tradition states that they arrived in England with William of Normandy and were given extensive lands as a reward for following him. [George Gordon, Lord Byron](#) would write of these early ancestors of his in “On Leaving Newstead Abbey” and again in DON JUAN, Canto X, verse 36:

“I can’t complain, whose ancestors are there,
Erneis, Radulphus -eight and forty manors
(If that my memory doth not greatly err)
Were their reward for following Billy’s banners;
And though I can’t help thinking ’t was scarce fair
To strip the Saxons of their hydes, like tanners;
Yet as they founded churches with their produce,
You’ll deem, no doubt, they put it to good use.”





IRELAND

IRELAND

1132 CE

 St. Malachy became Archbishop of Armagh.

IRELAND

1152 CE

The beginning of the reign of the Emperor Frederick I, called *Barbarossa* “Red Beard” (his kingdom would be considered to constitute the “Holy Roman Empire”).

At the Synod of Kells, 36 dioceses and 4 archbishoprics were created.

IRELAND

1155 CE

A Papal Bull by Adrian IV authorized Norman King Henry II of England to subdue [Ireland](#).

READ THE FULL TEXT

1162 CE

Murtough MacLochlainn became High King.

IRELAND

In this year Thomas à Becket was made Archbishop of Canterbury, as the first instance of any man of the Saxon race being raised to high office in Church or State since the Norman Conquest.



1164 CE

The Great Church *Teampul Mor* was erected at Derry.

IRELAND

At a village near Salisbury in South England, Clarendon, King Henry II held a council that produced a code of laws defining relations between church and state.

READ THE FULL TEXT

This would be known as the Constitutions of Clarendon.

SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE

of the German bishops. Henry in penance walks barefooted to the pope, towards the end of January.

1076 Justices of Peace first appointed in England.

1080 Doomsday book began to be compiled by order of William, from a survey of all the estates in England, and finished in 1086.

The Tower of London built by William, to curb his English subjects, numbers of whom fly to Scotland, where they introduce the Saxon or English language; are protected by Malcolm, and have lands given them.

1091 The Saracens in Spain, being hard pressed by the Spaniards, call to their assistance Joseph, king of Morocco; by which the Moors get possession of all the Saracen dominions in Spain.

1096 The first crusade to the Holy Land is begun under several Christian princes, to drive the infidels from Jerusalem.

1110 Edgar Atheling, the last of the Saxon princes, dies in England, where he had been permitted to reside as a subject.

1118 The order of the Knights Templars instituted, to defend the Sepulchre at Jerusalem, and protect Christian strangers.

1151 The canon law collected by Gratian, a monk of Bologna.

1163 London bridge, consisting of nineteen small arches, first built of stone.

1164 The Teutonic order of religious knights begins in Germany.

1172 Henry II. king of England (and first of the Plantagenets) takes possession of Ireland; which, from that period, has been governed by an English vice-roy, or lord-lieutenant.

1176 England is divided by Henry into six circuits, and justice is dispensed by itinerant judges.

1180 Glass windows began to be used in private houses in England.

1181 The laws of England are digested about this time by Glanville.

1182 Pope Alexander III. compelled the kings of England and France to hold the stirrups of his saddle when he mounted his horse.

1192 The battle of Ascalon, in Judea, in which Richard, king of England, defeats Saladin's army, consisting of 300,000 combatants.

1194 *Dieu et mon droit* first used as a motto by Richard, on a victory over the French.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1166 CE

Murtough MacLochlainn blinded captive King Eochaid of Dal Fiatach but was then himself killed in a subsequent rebellion. Rory O'Connor became High King. Tiernan O'Rourke invaded Leinster to settle score with King Dermot MacMurrough, and MacMurrough fled to England where he pledged allegiance to King Henry II. Richard FitzGilbert de Clare, Earl of Pembroke, known as Strongbow, struck a deal with MacMurrough.

IRELAND



IRELAND

IRELAND

1167 CE

The Lombard League was founded.

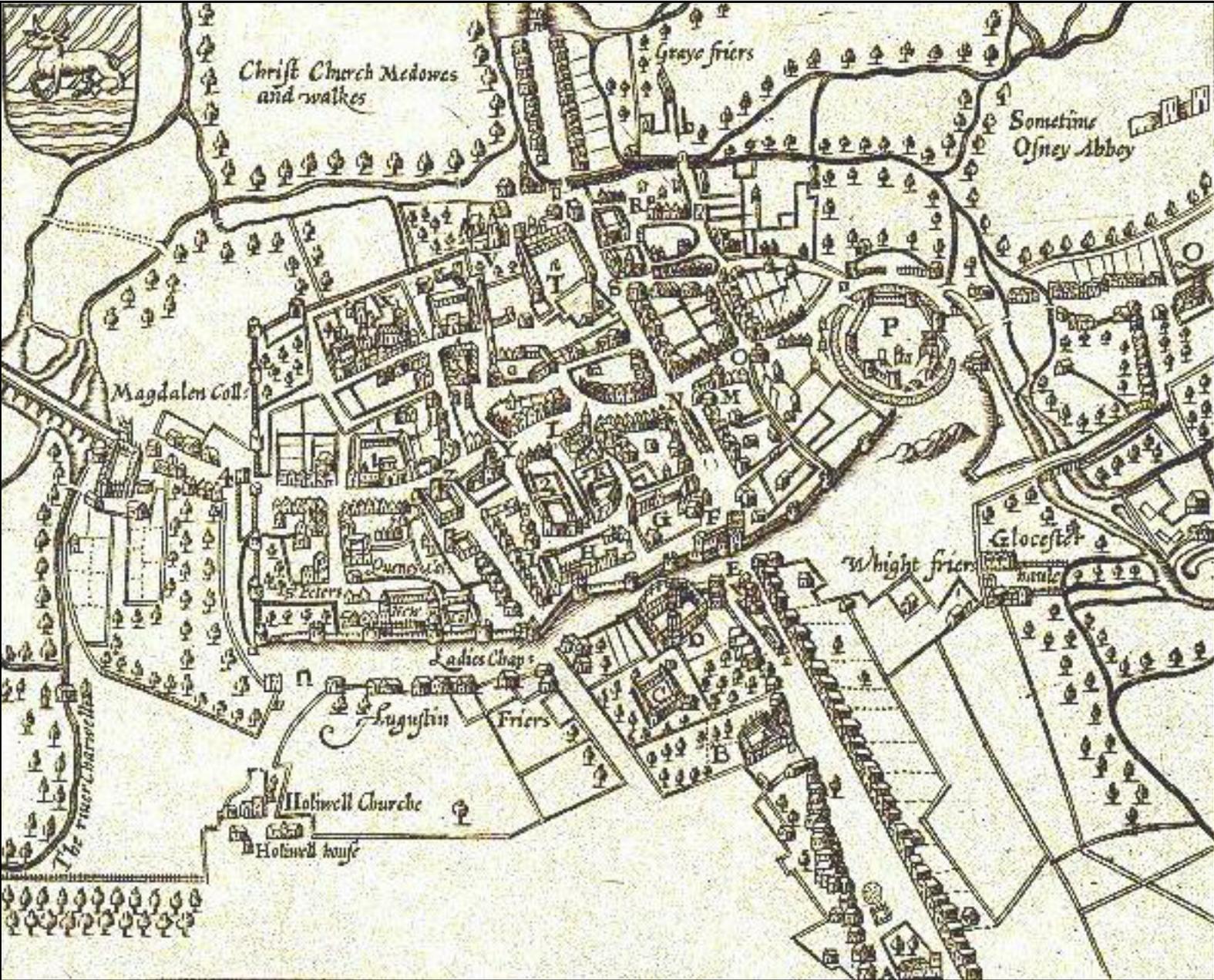
King Dermot MacMurrough returned to Leinster with a small force.

IRELAND

King Henry II ordered all English students on the Continent to return to England. Many of these students decided to settle in Oxford in an attempt to create the kind of university they had seen in Europe. Disputes between the students and residents led to riots. Some of these students fled to Cambridge where they established a new university. The loss of Oxford's students hurt the local economy and in 1214 traders and merchants invited them back again.

IRELAND

IRELAND





IRELAND

IRELAND

1169

When a Norman force landed at Bannow Bay, when a Norse (Viking) settlement at Wexford was defeated, when Dermot MacMurrough, exiled king of Leinster, invited help from “Strongbow,” the Earl of Pembroke, there began the period of English “overlordship” in [Ireland](#) as sponsored by the Pope, which would endure until about the year 1216.⁷

1170 CE

Strongbow (the Earl of Pembroke) invaded [Ireland](#). This was the beginning of the Norman/English attempts at conquest. Raymond le Gros landed at Baginbun. Strongbow captured Waterford from Norsemen. Strongbow married Aoife MacMurrough, daughter of Dermot.

1171

Saladin, a Muslim warrior and commander in the Egyptian army, overthrew the Fatimid dynasty.

Dermot MacMurrough died; Strongbow became King of Leinster. Rory O’Connor besieged Dublin; was defeated by Normans. Henry II arrived to keep Strongbow in check; Strongbow submitted and was granted Kingdom of Leinster. Dermot McCarthy, King of Desmond, submitted to Henry; southern kings and bishops followed suit.

[IRELAND](#)

7. If the English had stayed home, or if the Irish had invaded England, we would by now of course have attained world peace. :-)

1172

Hugh de Lacy was appointed Viceroy and was granted the Kingdom of Meath. Norman expansion began. The Pope decreed that King Henry II of England was the feudal lord of [Ireland](#). Around Dublin, “The Pale” was created — no-one born Irish would be allowed to remain inside this fence after dark. Such persons were to remain “beyond the Pale.”

of the German bishops. Henry in penance walks barefooted to the pope, towards the end of January.

1076 Justices of Peace first appointed in England.

1080 Doomsday book began to be compiled by order of William, from a survey of all the estates in England, and finished in 1086.

The Tower of London built by William, to curb his English subjects, numbers of whom fly to Scotland, where they introduce the Saxon or English language; are protected by Malcolm, and have lands given them.

1091 The Saracens in Spain, being hard pressed by the Spaniards, call to their assistance Joseph, king of Morocco; by which the Moors get possession of all the Saracen dominions in Spain.

1096 The first crusade to the Holy Land is begun under several Christian princes, to drive the infidels from Jerusalem.

1110 Edgar Atheling, the last of the Saxon princes, dies in England, where he had been permitted to reside as a subject.

1118 The order of the Knights Templars instituted, to defend the Sepulchre at Jerusalem, and protect Christian strangers.

1151 The canon law collected by Gratian, a monk of Bologna.

1163 London bridge, consisting of nineteen small arches, first built of stone.

1164 The Teutonic order of religious knights begins in Germany.

1172 Henry II. king of England (and first of the Plantagenets) takes possession of Ireland; which, from that period, has been governed by an English viceroy, or lord-lieutenant.

1176 England is divided by Henry into six circuits, and justice is dispensed by itinerant judges.

1180 Glass windows began to be used in private houses in England.

1181 The laws of England are digested about this time by Glanville.

1182 Pope Alexander III. compelled the kings of England and France to hold the stirrups of his saddle when he mounted his horse.

1192 The battle of Ascalon, in Judea, in which Richard, king of England, defeats Saladin's army, consisting of 300,000 combatants.

1194 *Dieu et mon droit* first used as a motto by Richard, on a victory over the French.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1175

In [Japan](#), Shinran introduced the *Jodo* (Pure Land) school of Buddhism.

In the Treaty of Windsor, after payment of tribute, Rory O'Connor of [Ireland](#) was recognized as King of Connacht.

At about this point western European crusaders began to stage chivalric tournaments east of the Rhine River, where German nobles generally fought as individuals rather than as team-members (French, Flemish, and English chevaliers, because usually they were fighting for financial gain rather than for their own amusement, almost always had fought in two to four-man teams known as "lances").

1177

John de Courcy set out from Dublin to conquer Ulster.

IRELAND

1217

From this year into 1229, the 5th Crusade.

From about this point into the year 1315 would constitute the period of [Irish](#) history during which English overlords would be opting for ethnic repression of the Irish native population.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1245

In this year or the following one in Paris, [Albertus Magnus](#) took the degree of master in sacred theology. For the next 30 years he would lead a very active life as teacher and administrator, including periods as provincial of his order in Germany and as bishop of Ratisbon. His printed works, mostly composed in this period, comprise 38 quarto volumes and cover every field of learning. At Cologne and Paris he would have as one of his pupils Thomas Aquinas, and one of his last missions would be to defend some of this former pupil's writings against attacks at Paris for heresy.

The Carpini sent embassies to the Khan. Dominicus of Aragon journeyed to Armenia. Ascelin of St. Quentin and Simon of St. Quentin journeyed to Georgia and the court of the Mongolian leader Baiju, and Andreas of Longjumeau journeyed to Tabriz. Carpini encountered Italian traders from Constantinople in Kiev. At the court of Guyug Khan he was aided by a Russian goldsmith.⁸

Boniface of Savoy became Archbishop of Canterbury.

The Teutonic Order was authorized to wage a permanent crusade in Prussia.

The Council of Lyons deposed Frederick II.

Sligo castle was built for Maurice FitzGerald.

IRELAND

1270

When Aedh O'Connor, King of Connacht, defeated the Normans at Athankip, the Norman expansion into [Ireland](#) ground to a halt.

8. Refer to J.R.S. Phillips's THE MEDIEVAL EXPANSION OF EUROPE (Oxford/NY: Oxford UP, 1988).



IRELAND

IRELAND

1278

Political turmoil again halted the construction of the bell tower for the cathedral of Pisa, after a total of 7 levels. (With the tower having begun even during construction to lean decidedly toward the south, the height of the north and south sides of the 5th level had been adjusted to cope with this inclination in such a manner that the tower was beginning to be bent more or less like a banana.)

LEANING TOWER OF PISA

Holy Roman Emperor Rudolf I of the Habsburg dynasty began acquiring Austrian lands.

GERMANY

According to the Anglo-Norman law of England, rape was not actionable if the victim could be made out to be Irish:

If from the beginning of the 18th Century in Anglo-America the term "negro" meant slave, except when explicitly modified by the word "free," so under English law the term "hibernicus," Latin for "Irishman," was the legal term for "unfree." If African-Americans were obliged to guard closely any document they might have attesting their freedom, so in Ireland, at the beginning of the 14th Century, letters patent, attesting to a person's Englishness, were cherished by those who might fall under suspicion of trying to "pass." If under Anglo-American slavery "the rape of a female slave was not a crime, but a mere trespass on the master's property," so in 1278 two Anglo-Normans brought into court and charged with raping Margaret O'Rorke were found not guilty because "the said Margaret is an Irishwoman." If a law enacted in Virginia in 1723 provided that "manslaughter of a slave is not punishable," so under Anglo-Norman law it sufficed for acquittal to show that the victim in a killing was Irish. Anglo-Norman priests granted absolution on the grounds that it was "no more sin to kill an Irishman than a dog or any other brute." If the Georgia Supreme Court ruled in 1851 that "the killing of a negro" was not a felony, but upheld an award of damages to the owner of an African-American bond-laborer murdered by another "white" man, so an English court freed Robert Walsh, an Anglo-Norman charged with killing John Mac Gilmore, because the victim was "a mere Irishman and not of free blood," it being stipulated that "when the master of the said John shall ask damages for the slaying, he [Walsh] will be ready to answer him as the law may require." If in 1884 the United States Supreme Court, citing much precedent authority, including the Dred Scott decision, declared that Indians were legally like immigrants, and therefore not citizens except by process of individual naturalization, so for more than four centuries, until 1613, the Irish were regarded by English law as foreigners in their own land. If the testimony of even free African-Americans was inadmissible, so in Anglo-Norman Ireland native Irish of the free classes were deprived of legal defense against English abuse because they were not "admitted to English law," and hence had no rights that an Englishman was bound to respect."





During this period serfdom and villeinage, which had been formal legal situations of bondage, were being restructured into the sort of renegotiable contracts that could change hands in a money economy. Here, from the abbey of Peterborough,⁹ is a document of [manumission](#) dating to this year:

To all the faithful of Christ to whom the present writing shall come, Richard by the divine permission abbot of Peterborough and the Convent of the same place, eternal greeting in the Lord. Let all know that we have [manumitted](#) and liberated from all yoke of servitude William, the son of Richard of Wythington whom previously we have held as our born bondman, with his whole progeny and all his chattels, so that neither we nor our successors shall be able to require or exact any right or claim in the said William, his progeny, or his chattel. But the same William with his whole progeny and all his chattels will remain free and quit and without disturbance, exaction, or any claim on the part of us or our successors by reason of any servitude, forever. We will moreover and concede that he and his heirs shall hold the messuages, land, rents, and meadows in Wythington which his ancestors held from us and our predecessors, by giving and performing the fine which is called merchet for giving his daughter in marriage, and tallage from year to year according to our will, – that he shall have and hold these for the future from us and our successors freely, quietly, peacefully, and hereditarily, by paying thence to us and our successors yearly 40s. sterling, at the four terms of the year, namely; at St. John the Baptist's day, 10s., at Michaelmas, 10s., at [Christmas](#), 10s., and at Easter, 10s., for all service, exaction, custom, and secular demand; saving to its nevertheless attendance at our court of Castre every three weeks, wardship and relief, and outside service of our lord the king, when they shall happen. And if it shall happen that the said William or his heirs shall die at any time without an heir, the said messuage, land, rents, and meadows with their appurtenances shall return fully and completely to us and our successors. Nor will it be allowed to the said William or his heirs the said messuages, land, rents, meadows, or any part of them to give, sell, alienate, mortgage, or in any way encumber by which the said messuage, land, rents, and meadows should not return to us and our successors in the form declared above. But if this should occur later their deed shall be declared null and what is thus alienated shall come to us and our successors. In testimony of which duplicate seals are appended to this writing, formed as a chirograph, for the sake of greater security. These being witnesses, etc. Given at Borough for the love of lord Robert of good memory, once abbot, our predecessor and maternal uncle of the said William, and at the instance of the good man brother Hugh of Mutton, relative of the said abbot Robert; A.D. 1278, on the eve of Pentecost.

9. J.H. Robinson, trans. TRANSLATIONS AND REPRINTS FROM THE ORIGINAL SOURCES OF EUROPEAN HISTORY, PUBLISHED FOR THE DEPARTMENT OF HISTORY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF PENNSYLVANIA. Philadelphia PA: U of Pennsylvania P [1897]. Volume III: 5, pages 31-32



1297

The Parliament at Dublin passed legislation intended to prevent Norman lords from going native.

14TH CENTURY

1315

In Scotland, the Act of Succession. Princess Marjorie got married. Edward Bruce, brother of [Robert the Bruce](#), landed at Larne in an invasion of Ireland intended to eclipse the English colonial power there and set the Irish native population free of racial oppression. The Scots would be attempting to dominate [Ireland](#) until 1534.

From this year, in which less than half the normal crop was harvested, through the year 1317, large parts of western Europe would experience what has been to date its worst [famine](#). Farm families were consuming their seed supply before the next spring. Wheat prices were soaring. With more than 50% of the livestock dead, the poor were starving. By 1318 bodies would be being disinterred, in Ireland, for food.

1316

[Robert the Bruce](#) declared himself to be the High King of [Ireland](#).

1317

[Robert the Bruce](#) arrived in [Ireland](#) with army, highly motivated to do good and to do well.



1318

The English Town of Berwick-upon-Tweed was taken by the Scots.

Murtough O'Brien defeated Richard de Clare at Dysert O'Dea in [Ireland](#); Normans lost control of Thomond in [Ireland](#). John de Bermingham defeated Edward Bruce at Faughart in [Ireland](#) and Bruce was slain.

Succession to the Scottish throne settled on Marjorie's son, Robert Stewart.

1361

[Jean Froissart](#) became a court poet for Philippa of Hainault, queen consort of King Edward III of England. He would also make himself something of a courtly historian.

As a way to depict how far something would move in a given length of time given uniform acceleration, Nicole Oresme devised the first line graph (his visualization would be revolutionary, as this would enable European merchants to get a mental grip on inconstant relationships).

King Edward III appointed Lionel of Clarence as King's Lieutenant (*Justiciar*).

IRELAND

1366

Simon Langham became Archbishop of Canterbury.

Holding a Parliament at Kilkenny, in an attempt to ensure English dominance Lionel imposed draconian statutes. King Edward III would mandate that:

- No [Irish](#) tenant may graze his cattle upon the lands of the crown.
- Any intermarriage of English with [Irish](#) constitutes Treason.
- Toleration of the Brehon Laws constitutes High Treason.

1394

King Richard II sent an army to [Ireland](#).



IRELAND

IRELAND

1399

King Richard II of England sent another army to [Ireland](#). “Let me hold your jacket while you go kill somebody.” Hey, a little of that goes a long way.

15TH CENTURY

1477

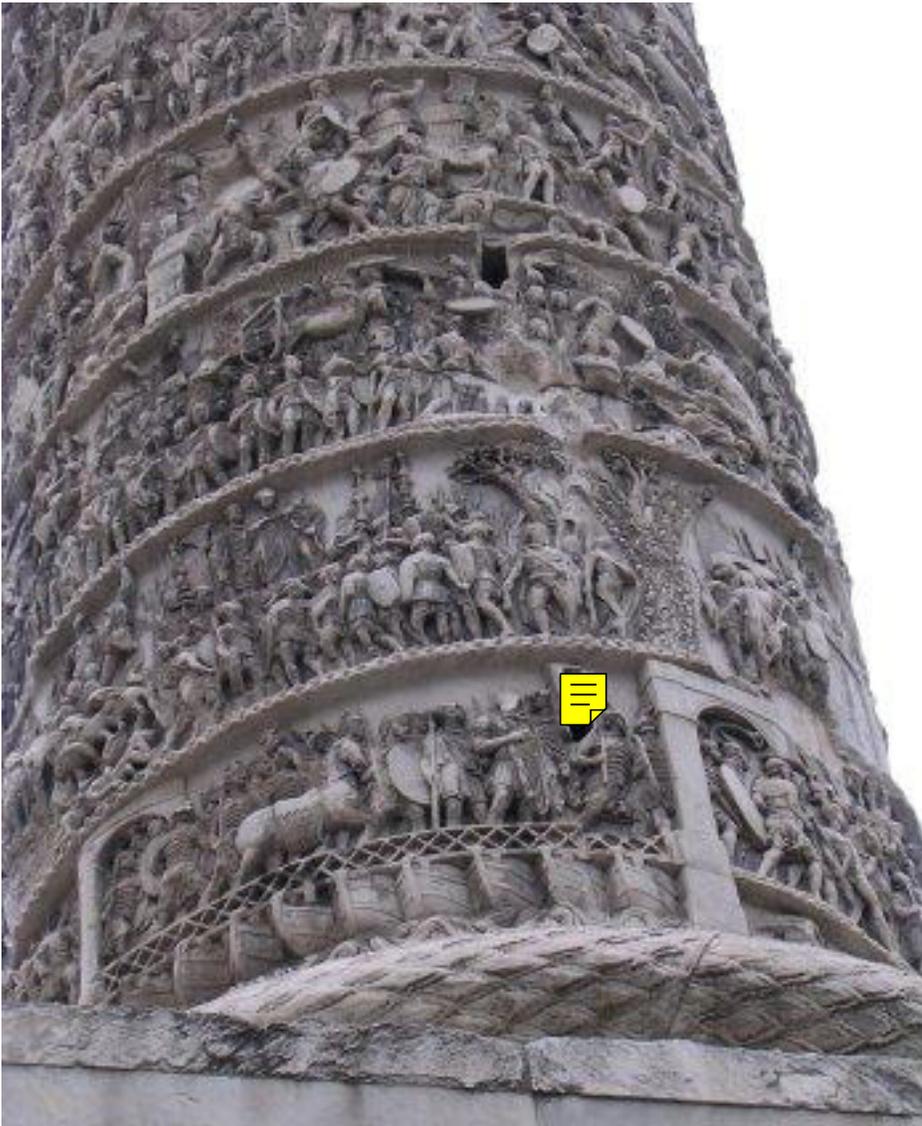
Garret More Fitzgerald became Eighth Earl of Kildare and was elected Viceroy (Justiciar). When King Edward IV sent Lord Grey to replace him, Lord Grey was ungraciously turned around and hustled to England.

IRELAND

1487

In Dublin, the pretender Lambert Simmel (who was impersonating Edward, the nephew of Edward IV, the only plausible royal alternative to Henry, who was confined in the Tower of London) was crowned as Edward VI. Then in the Battle of Stoke Field at Stoke-on-Trent, the final engagement of the Wars of the Ross, Henry VII defeated the Yorkist army of this pretender.

What goes around keeps coming around and around and around...



IRELAND



1494

Henry VII sent Sir Edward Poynings to regain control of [Ireland](#). Poynings held Parliament at Drogheda; accused Garret More of treason. The “Poynings’ Law” arrangement began, according to which the Irish Parliament might only convene with the consent of England, and all its enactments would of necessity be subject to advance approval by England.

The government of Scotland introduces taxes on a triple-distilled single malt beverage called “[whiskey](#),” a Gaelic word meaning “the water of life.” Yet, even without taxes, distilled spirits were expensive. Therefore they were drunk mostly at weddings, funerals, and similar family or clan occasions. During these gatherings, clansmen competed in rough games such as archery, single-stick, sword-and-buckler fencing, and wrestling. At night, they did sword dances and told stories in rhyme. Military training consisted of a combination of rehearsing moves with sword and buckler, poaching deer, and stealing cattle.

A new university, King’s College, was founded at Aberdeen, Scotland, to join St Andrews (founded 1411) and Glasgow (founded 1451). It was not until this year that any Scottish writer applied the name “Scots” to his own tongue, as distinct from referring to it as “Inglis.” The language would continue to be called Scots or Inglis interchangeably.

At St Andrews, [Gawin Douglas](#) graduated from St Salvator’s College and thereafter we suppose would continue his education at Paris.

LIFE OF GAWIN DOUGLAS

1495

Garret More was arrested and taken to the Tower of London (he would be able to win reinstatement as viceroy under King Henry VII).

IRELAND

16TH CENTURY

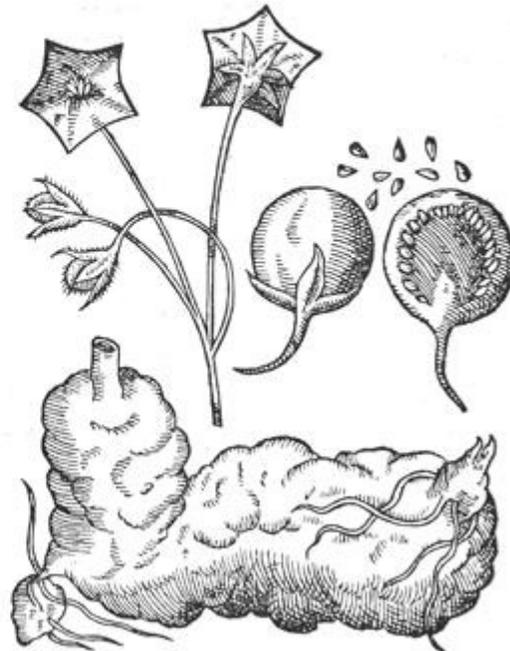
1513

Garret More died; Garret Oge Fitzgerald, son of Garret More, became viceroy.

IRELAND

1531

In the mountains of Perú, Francisco Pizarro “discovered” the Incas cultivating many varieties of an edible tuber, *Solanum tuberosum* (genus *Solanum* of the family *Solanaceae*, the 48-chromosome, tetraploid “[potato](#)”). He sought the permission of the King of Spain to bring back home some of these dormant tubers. This was a poor harvest year for Europe, threatening [famine](#). The monarch would approve.





IRELAND

IRELAND

1534

When Garret Oge was summoned to London leaving behind his son “Silken” Thomas, Lord Offaly, as Deputy, and the son “Silken” Thomas was then reliably misinformed that Garret Oge has been beheaded, and consequently was driven into rebellion, there began the period in [Ireland](#), lasting until 1603, during which the power of the tribal overlords was being broken, and during which the English overlords were settling upon a policy involving an oppression of a religio-racial character. The Fitzgeralds of Kildare rebelled against [King Henry VIII](#). The insurrection of Lord Offaly would persist until its collapse in 1540. This general insurrectionary period would persist into the year 1603.

From the year of the World

Chronological observations of America

California questioned, whether Island or Continent, first discovered by the *Spainard*.

Nova Francia lying between the 40 and 50 degree of the *Arctic-poles Altitude* discovered by *Jaques Cartier* in his first voyage, the first Colony planted in *Canada*.

BY John Josselyn Gent.

to the year of Christ 1673.

CALIFORNIA





1535

Sir William Skeffington captured Silken Thomas's stronghold at Maynooth and forced his surrender.

IRELAND

1536

Union of England and Wales.

George Browne, appointed Archbishop of Dublin, was given the task of reforming the [Irish](#) Church.

Pedro de Mendóza founded Buenos Aires and sent an expedition to find a route to Peru.

As soon as the Spaniards completed their conquest of Peru, they began to rely on its [potatoes](#) as cheap food for their sailors. The earliest English publication describing potatoes, however, would be Gerard's 1597 *HERBALL*. By 1700 these starchy tubers would be important in Germany, and by 1800, in Russia.

PLANTS

1537

In London, Silken Thomas and his five uncles were executed and [King Henry VIII](#) of England was declared by the Irish Parliament to also be the King of [Ireland](#). The real estate of the island was declared to be ultimately the property of the Crown, to be re-granted with the King's permission.

The English reorganize the Guild of Saint George, a company of archers employed in the defense of the City of London, into "the Fraternity or Guild of Artillery of Longbows, Crossbows, and Handguns." The Artillery Company's training grounds would be at Bishopsgate until 1642, and at City Road after that. Their royal patent ordered them to shoot "at all manner of marks and butts and at the art of popinjay, and at all other game or games, as at fowl or fowls ... in all other places whatsoever within the realm of England."

1541

The leadership of the Reverend [John Calvin](#) in [Geneva, Switzerland](#) began at this point and would continue until 1564.

In [Germany](#), Herr Professor [Martin Luther](#) wrote the hymn “Lord Keep us Steadfast in Thy Word.” His health was particularly bad, as an ulcer on his leg had reopened and he was suffering from throat and ear infections, as well as experiencing continuing problems with kidneystones, arthritis, heart difficulties — and of course digestive disorders. The Professor’s writing was on occasion becoming even pushily vulgar.

[Conrad Gesner](#) took the degree of doctor of medicine at [Basel](#). Dr. Conradus Gesnerus would establish a medical practice in [Zürich](#), meanwhile lecturing in physics at the Carolinum (precursor of the University of Zürich). This year saw the publication of his *ENCHIRIDION HISTORIAE PLANTARUM*. In the prefix to his *LIBELLUS DE LACTE ET OPERIBUS LACTARIIS*, Gesner described for the benefit of a friend, J. Vogel of Glarus, the wonders to be found among the mountains, below the snow line. The author declared an intention to climb at least one mountain per summer, not only to collect botanical specimens but also for bodily exercise.

[King Henry VIII](#) had himself declared, by the English barons living on their estates in Ireland, as the King of Ireland rather than merely their feudal lord. Anointing himself as the head of the Church of [Ireland](#), in this year he would demand that the Irish renounce their [Catholicism](#).



Let’s do it my way.

1556

 In Ireland, the Offaly and Leix plantation was formed (this would be renamed King’s and Queen’s Counties); the settlers of this district came from England or from within the Pale.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1558

 The English policy known as “Plantation” began in [Ireland](#). A system of counties was adopted.

1559

 In [Ireland](#), Conn O’Neill, First Earl of Tyrone, died; Shane O’Neill succeeded him. Hugh O’Neill, nephew of Shane, was taken to England by the Lord Deputy, Sir Henry Sidney.

1560

Treaty of Berwick between Elizabeth I and Scottish reformers; Treaty of Edinburgh among England, France, and Scotland. Elizabeth was restoring Protestantism. The Irish Parliament acknowledged Elizabeth as the head of the Irish Church, imposed the BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER, and made Church attendance compulsory.

IRELAND



1562

The O'Neills and O'Donnells rebelled against Queen Elizabeth.

IRELAND

1565

John Hawkins introduced [tobacco](#) seeds into England from Florida, but smoking would not spread until dashing Sir Walter Raleigh, who was at this point only eleven years of age, would help it become fashionable in the court in the mid-1570s.

Chronological observations of America

Tobacco first brought into *England* by Sir *John Hawkins*, but it was first brought into use by Sir *Walter Rawleigh* many years after.

BY John Josselyn Gent.

From the year of the World

to the year of Christ 1673.

(Although there have been popular reports that John Hawkins may have introduced [potatoes](#) into [Ireland](#) in this year, we don't have an actual confirmation of potatoes in Ireland prior to the year 1586.)

PLANTS

When a member of the Scott clan of Buccleuch executed four members of the Eliot or Elliot clan for reiving (cattle rustling), a family feud was sparked between the Elliots and the Scotts. Three hundred Elliots would ride to avenge their kinsmen and both sides would sustain heavy losses before the Scotts would seek and receive terms of settlement from the Elliots.

Manila galleons, from New Spain, began their voyages of commerce to the Philippines. Upon returning they passed along the coastline to Acapulco.



Shane O'Neill's rising.

IRELAND

While bowmakers did routinely stamp bows at their centers to help archers line up their shots, the bows could be used with either end up. At about this point the Flemands began to put handle bindings on longbows, thus indicating a top and a bottom.

During 13 days of musketry competition at the annual Prague Festival, commoners win all the major prizes despite the fact that one of the competitors was the Austrian Archduke, Ferdinand. Fear of the Ottomans had trumped the social graces: the moving targets included "Turkish" horsemen, and the pop-up targets included human silhouettes called "Turks." Contemporary English archers also enjoyed this "shooting at the Turk."

At San Augustine, Florida, Spanish Catholics built the first permanent European settlement on the North American continent. Fortification of the settlement was designed to protect it from assault by a French Huguenot army, rather than from local native American tribalists.

1567

Death of Shane O'Neill; Hugh O'Neill returned.

IRELAND



1569

During the academic year 1569/1570 [Giles Fletcher \(the Elder\)](#) was awarded the B.A. Bachelor of Arts degree at King's College of Cambridge University. He would achieve the M.A. Master of Arts degree in 1573 and the LL.D. Doctor of Divinity degree in 1581.

[John Heywood](#)'s "Play called the foure PP; a newe and a very mery interlude of a palmer, a pardoner, a potycary, a pedler" was printed by J. Allde.

Catholic rebellion in northern England. Sir Peter Carew laid claim to Fitzgerald and Butler estates in Desmond. James Maurice Fitzgerald led unsuccessful rebellion; escaped to Continent.

IRELAND

-
- 1563 Knives first made in England.
1569 Royal Exchange first built.
1572 The great massacre of Protestants at Paris.
1579 The Dutch shake off the Spanish yoke, and the republic of Holland begins.
English East India company incorporated; established 1600.
—— Turkey company incorporated.
1580 Sir Francis Drake returns from his voyage round the world, being the first English circumnavigator.
Parochial register first appointed in England.
1582 Pope Gregory introduces the New Style in Italy; the 5th of October being counted 15.
1583 Tobacco first brought from Virginia into England.
1587 Mary queen of Scots is beheaded by order of Elizabeth, after 18 years' imprisonment.
1588 The Spanish armada destroyed by Drake, and other English admirals.
Henry IV. passes the edict of Nantes, tolerating the protestants.
1589 Coaches first introduced into England; hackney act 1693; increased to 1000, in 1770.
1590 Band of pensioners instituted in England.
1591 Trinity college, Dublin, founded.
1597 Watches first brought into England from Germany.
1602 Decimal arithmetic invented at Bruges.
1603 Queen Elizabeth (the last of the Tudors) dies, and nominates James VI. of Scotland (and first of the Stuarts) as her successor; which unites both kingdoms under the name of Great Britain.
1605 The gunpowder plot discovered at Westminster; being a project of the Roman catholics to blow up the king and both houses of parliament.
1606 Oaths of allegiance first administered in England.
1608 Galileo, of Florence, first discovers the satellites about the planet Saturn, by the telescope then just invented in Holland.
1610 Henry IV. is murdered at Paris by Ravallac, a priest.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1570

Small Ulster plantations.

IRELAND

1577

 Raphael Holinshed's CHRONICLES OF ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, AND IRELAND:

THE SCARLET LETTER: So the mother and little Pearl were admitted into the hall of entrance. With many variations, suggested by the nature of his building materials, diversity of climate, and a different mode of social life, Governor Bellingham had planned his new habitation after the residences of gentlemen of fair estate in his native land. Here, then, was a wide and reasonably lofty hall, extending through the whole depth of the house, and forming a medium of general communication, more or less directly, with all the other apartments. At one extremity, this spacious room was lighted by the windows of the two towers, which formed a small recess on either side of the portal. At the other end, though partly muffled by a curtain, it was more powerfully illuminated by one of those embowed hall windows which we read of in old books, and which was provided with a deep and cushion seat. Here, on the cushion, lay a folio tome, probably of the Chronicles of England, or other such substantial literature; even as, in our own days, we scatter gilded volumes on the centre table, to be turned over by the casual guest. The furniture of the hall consisted of some ponderous chairs, the backs of which were elaborately carved with wreaths of oaken flowers; and likewise a table in the same taste, the whole being of the Elizabethan age, or perhaps earlier, and heirlooms, transferred hither from the Governor's paternal home. On the table -in token that the sentiment of old English hospitality had not been left behind- stood a large pewter tankard, at the bottom of which, had Hester or Pearl peeped into it, they might have seen the frothy remnant of a recent draught of ale.

**1579**

Fitzgerald returned with force from [Italy](#) and Spain; waged unsuccessful war in support of Catholicism. Land forfeited to Crown for plantation.

IRELAND

- 1563 Knives first made in England.
1569 Royal Exchange first built.
1572 The great massacre of Protestants at Paris.
1579 The Dutch shake off the Spanish yoke, and the republic of Holland begins.
English East India company incorporated; established 1600.
——— Turkey company incorporated.
1580 Sir Francis Drake returns from his voyage round the world, being the first English circumnavigator.
Parochial register first appointed in England.
1582 Pope Gregory introduces the New Style in Italy; the 5th of October being counted 15.
1583 Tobacco first brought from Virginia into England.
1587 Mary queen of Scots is beheaded by order of Elizabeth, after 18 years' imprisonment.
1588 The Spanish armada destroyed by Drake, and other English admirals.
Henry IV. passes the edict of Nantes, tolerating the protestants.
1589 Coaches first introduced into England; hackney act 1693; increased to 1000, in 1770.
1590 Band of pensioners instituted in England.
1591 Trinity college, Dublin, founded.
1597 Watches first brought into England from Germany.
1602 Decimal arithmetic invented at Bruges.
1603 Queen Elizabeth (the last of the Tudors) dies, and nominates James VI. of Scotland (and first of the Stuarts) as her successor; which unites both kingdoms under the name of Great Britain.
1605 The gunpowder plot discovered at Westminster; being a project of the Roman catholics to blow up the king and both houses of parliament.
1606 Oaths of allegiance first administered in England.
1608 Galileo, of Florence, first discovers the satellites about the planet Saturn, by the telescope then just invented in Holland.
1610 Henry IV. is murdered at Paris by Ravailiac, a priest.

1580

At about this point [John Perrot](#) was born in Waterford, [Ireland](#). It appears likely (due to an entry in the Inner Temple Register “John Perot, of Haryve, Co. Pembroke, 3rd son of John Perot, Knight”) that the infant was an illegitimate son of Sibyl Jones by [Captain Sir Knight John Perrot](#) (*circa* 1527-1592), who himself had been an illegitimate son of [King Henry VIII](#). This illegitimate son of an illegitimate son of royalty would marry twice, perhaps with a Prunella and then with an Elizabeth, achieving two sons with the 1st partner and then two daughters with the 2d:

Elder son Richard Perrot (born *circa* 1620, married 1st with Elizabeth Thompson, married 2d with Sarah Dale, died November 11, 1686); younger son Robert Parrot.

Elder daughter Thankful Parrot; younger daughter Blessing Parrot.

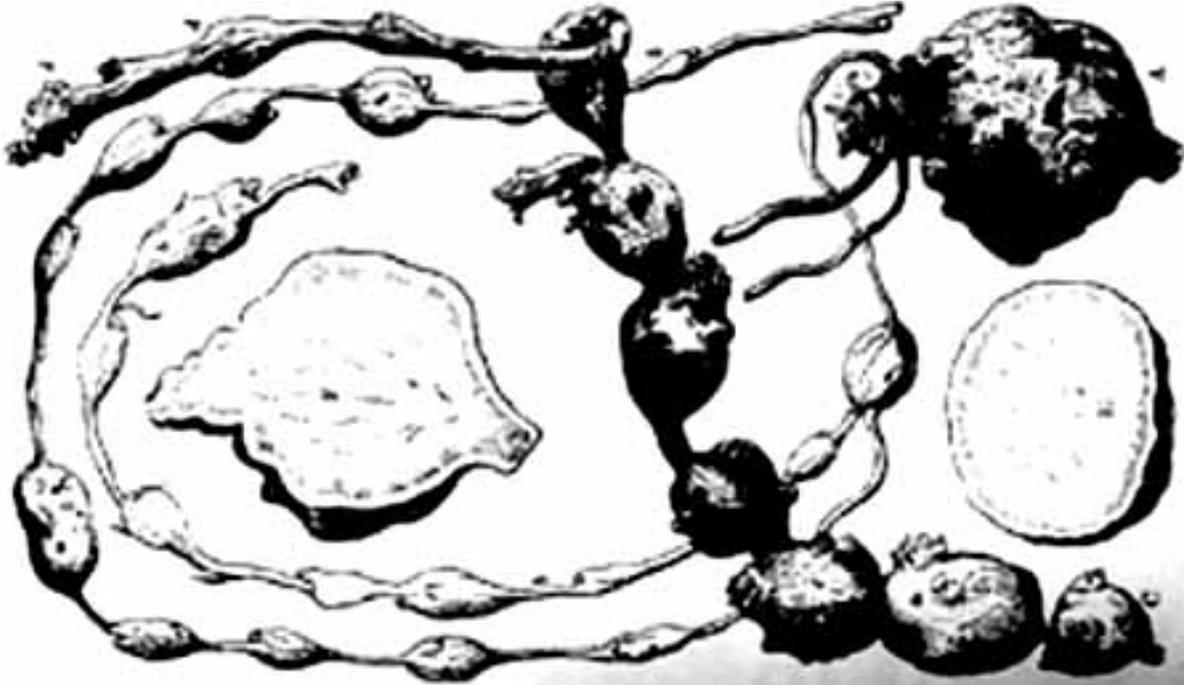
There are reports that Sir Walter Raleigh was having [potatoes](#) planted on his estates in western [Ireland](#). (But by this point these edible tubers from the New World had already become a kitchen staple in Seville, Spain, and we don't have an actual confirmation of potatoes in Ireland prior to the year 1586.)



IRELAND

IRELAND

The colonists of Sir Walter's settlement on Roanoke Island off the coast of what has become North Carolina, not to be outdone, sent samples of the American [ground-nut](#) to Queen Elizabeth I.



(Did the English queen try to eat them? –Thoreau would consider them to taste better boiled than baked.)

1585

Hugh O'Neill was made Earl of Tyrone.

IRELAND

1586

This was in general a poor harvest year in Europe. [Potatoes](#) may or may not have been introduced to [Ireland](#) at an earlier point in time, but we know for a fact that they were present as of this year.



1588

July 19: After being dispersed by a storm, the Spanish Armada of 132 vessels and 3,165 guns¹⁰ reassembled and entered the English Channel, where it was defeated by the English fleet under Lord Howard of Effingham, Sir Francis Drake, and Sir John Hawkins:

“In that memorable year, when the dark cloud gathered round our coasts, when Europe stood by in fearful suspense to behold what should be the result of that great cast in the game of human politics, what the craft of Rome, the power of Philip, the genius of Farnese, could achieve against the island-queen, with her Drakes and Cecils, –in that agony of the Protestant faith and English name.” – Hallam, CONST. HIST., Volume I, page 220.

Chronological observations of America

From the year of the World

to the year of Christ 1673.

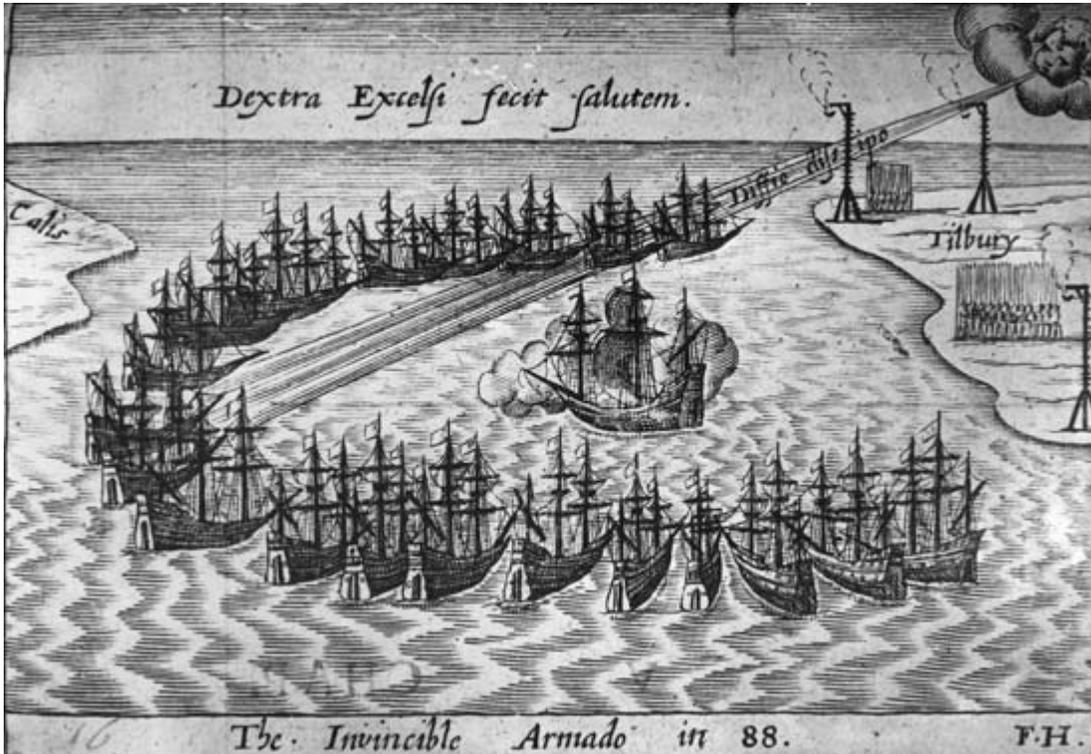
The *Spanish Armado* defeated, consisting of 130 ships, wherein were 19290 Souldiers 2080 chained Rowers 2630 great Ordinance, Commanded by *Perezius Guzman Duke of Median Sedonia*, and under him *Johannes Martinus Recaldus* a great Seaman; The Fleet coming in like a half moon, the horns of the front extending one from the other about 7 miles asunder, it was preparing 15 years, and was blackt to make it seem the more terrible.

BY *John Josselyn Gent.*

10. (It was evidently not enough to be Armada-ed to the teeth. :-)

[Alexander Hume](#)'s poem in heroic couplets on the destruction of the Spanish Armada, dedicated by the author to Lady Culross, "The Triumph of the Lord after the Manner of Men: alluding to the Defait of the Spanish Navie, 1588" (this can be found in Sibbald's CHRONICLE OF SCOTTISH POETRY, VOLUME III and would in 1832 be reprinted for the Bannatyne Club).

SCOTTISH POETRY III



As an experienced mariner, [Henry Hudson](#) would have probably served aboard an English ship in this battle (unless he was occupied elsewhere).



Some accounts have it that [potatoes](#) were washing up on the shores of western [Ireland](#) after the sinking of these ships of the Spanish Armada — for sure, beginning in this year, they would be being introduced into the Lowlands of Europe by the French herbalist Carolus Clusius, as he had just received two tubers from the Andes Mountains of South America. However, we know that some potatoes had already been present in Ireland, two years prior to the sailing of this Armada.



IRELAND

IRELAND



"Brilliant generalship in itself is a frightening thing – the very idea that the thought processes of a single brain of a Hannibal or a Scipio can play themselves out in the destruction of thousands of young men in an afternoon."



– Victor Davis Hanson, *CARNAGE AND CULTURE: LANDMARK BATTLES IN THE RISE OF WESTERN POWER* (NY: Doubleday, 2001)



On the afternoon of the 19th of July, AD. 1588, a group of English captains was collected at the Bowling Green on the Hoe at Plymouth, whose equals have never before or since been brought together, that favorite mustering place of the heroes British navy. There was Sir Francis Drake, the first English circumnavigator of the globe, the terror of every Spanish coast in the old world and the new; there was Sir John Hawkins, the rough veteran of many a daring voyage on the African and American seas, and of many a desperate battle; there was Sir Martin Frobisher, one of the earliest explorers of the arctic seas in search of that North-West Passage which is still the darling object of England's boldest mariners. There was the high-admiral of England, Lord Howard of Effingham, prodigal of all things in his country's cause, and who had recently had the noble daring to refuse to dismantle part of the fleet, though the queen had sent him orders to do so, in consequence of an exaggerated report that the enemy had been driven back and shattered by a storm. Lord Howard (whom contemporary writers describe as being of a wise and noble courage, skillful in sea matters, wary and provident, and of great esteem among the sailors) resolved to risk his sovereign's anger, and to keep the ships afloat at his own charge, rather than that England should run the peril of losing their protection.

Another of our Elizabethan sea-kings, Sir Walter Raleigh, was at that time commissioned to raise and equip the land-forces of Cornwall; but, as he was also commander of Plymouth, we may well believe that he must have availed himself of the opportunity of consulting with the lord-admiral and other high officers, which was offered by the English fleet putting into that port; and we may look on Raleigh as one of the group that was assembled at the Bowling Green on the Hoe. Many other brave men and skillful mariners, besides the chiefs whose names have been mentioned, were there, enjoying, with true sailor-like merriment, their temporary relaxation from duty. In the harbor lay the English fleet with which they had just returned from a cruise to Corunna in search of information respecting the real condition and movements of the hostile Armada. Lord Howard had ascertained that our enemies, though tempest-tost, were still formidably strong; and fearing that part of their fleet might make for England in his absence, he had hurried back to the Devonshire coast. He resumed his station at Plymouth, and waited there for certain tidings of the Spaniard's approach,

A match at bowls was being played, in which Drake and other high officers of the fleet were engaged, when a small armed vessel was seen running before the wind into Plymouth harbor, with all sails set. Her commander landed in haste, and eagerly sought the place where the English lord-admiral and his captains were standing. His name was Fleming; he was the master of a Scotch privateer; and he told the English officers that he had that morning seen the Spanish Armada off the Cornish coast. At this exciting information the captains began to hurry down to the water, and there was a shouting for the ships' boats; but Drake coolly checked his comrades, and insisted that the match should



be played out.

He said that there was plenty of time both to win the game and beat the Spaniards. The best and bravest, match that ever was scored was resumed accordingly. Drake and his friends aimed their last bowls with the same steady calculating coolness with which they were about to point their guns. The winning cast was made; and then they went on board, and prepared for action, with their hearts as light and their nerves as firm as they had been on the Hoe Bowling Green.

Meanwhile the messengers and signals had been dispatched fast and far through England, to warn each town and village that the enemy had come at last. In every sea-port there was instant making ready by land and by sea; in every shire and every city there was instant mustering of horse and man. In Macaulay's Ballad on the Spanish Armada, the transmission of the tidings of the Armada's approach, and the arming of the English nation, are magnificently described. The progress of the fire-signals is depicted in lines which are worthy of comparison with the renowned passage in the Agamemnon, which describes the transmission of the beacon-light announcing the fall of Troy, from Mount Ida to Argos.

But England's best defense then, as ever, was her fleet; and after warping laboriously out of Plymouth harbor against the wind, the lord-admiral stood westward under easy sail, keeping an anxious look-out for the Armada, the approach of which was soon announced by Cornish fisher-boats, and signals front the Cornish cliffs.

The England of our own days is so strong, and the Spain of our own days is so feeble, that it is not possible, without some reflection and care, to comprehend the full extent of the peril which England then ran from the power and the ambition of Spain, or to appreciate the importance of that crisis in the history of the world. We had then no Indian or Colonial Empire, save the feeble germs of our North American settlements, which Raleigh and Gilbert had recently planted. Scotland was a separate kingdom; and Ireland was then even a greater source of weakness, and a worse nest of rebellion than she has been in after times. Queen Elizabeth had found at her accession an encumbered revenue, a divided people, and an unsuccessful foreign war, in which the last remnant of our possessions in France had been lost, she had also a formidable pretender to her crown. whose interests were favored by all the Roman Catholic powers and even some of her subjects were warped by religious bigotry to deny her title, and to look on her as an heretical usurper. It is true that during the years of her reign which had passed away before the attempted invasion of 1588, she had revived the commercial prosperity, the national spirit, and the national loyalty of England. But her resources, to cope with the colossal power of Philip II., still seemed most scanty; and she had not a single foreign ally, except the Dutch, who were themselves struggling hard, and, as it seemed, hopelessly, to maintain their revolt against Spain.

On the other hand Philip II. was absolute master of an empire so superior to the other states of the world in extent, in resources, and especially in military and naval forces, as to



make the project of enlarging that empire into a universal monarchy seem a perfectly feasible scheme; and Philip had both the ambition to form that project, and the resolution to devote all his energies, and all his means, to its realization. Since the downfall of the Roman empire no such preponderating power had existed in the world. During the mediaeval centuries the chief European kingdoms were slowly molding themselves out of the feudal chaos. And, though their wars with each other were numerous and desperate, and several of their respective kings figured for a time as mighty conquerors, none of them in those times acquired the consistency and perfect organization which are requisite for a long-sustained career of aggrandizement. After the consolidation of the great kingdoms, they for some time kept each other in mutual check. During the first half of the sixteenth century, the balancing system was successfully practiced by European statesmen. But when Philip II. reigned, France had become so miserably weak through her civil wars, that he had nothing to dread from the rival state, which had so long curbed his father the Emperor Charles V. In Germany, Italy, and Poland, he had either zealous friends and dependents, or weak and divided enemies. Against the Turks he had gained great and glorious successes; and he might look round the continent of Europe without discerning a single antagonist of whom he could stand in awe. Spain, when he acceded to the throne, was at the zenith of her power. The hardihood and spirit which the Arragonese, the Castilians, and the other nations of the peninsula had acquired during centuries of free institutions and successful war against the moors, had not yet become obliterated. Charles V. had, indeed, destroyed the liberties of Spain; but that had been done too recently for its full evil to be felt in Philip's time. A people cannot be debased in a single generation; and the Spaniards under Charles V. and Philip II. proved the truth of the remark, that no nation is ever so formidable to its neighbors for a time, as is a nation, which, after being trained up in self-government, passes suddenly under a despotic ruler. The energy of democratic institutions survives for a few generations, and to it are superadded the decision and certainty, which are the attributes of government, when all its powers are directed by a single mind. It is true that this preter-natural vigor is short-lived: national corruption and debasement gradually follow the loss of the national liberties; but there is an interval before their workings are felt, and in that interval the most ambitious schemes of foreign conquest are often successfully undertaken.

Philip had also the advantage of finding himself at the head of a large standing army in a perfect state of discipline and equipment, in an age when, except some few insignificant corps, standing armies were unknown in Christendom. The renown of the Spanish troops was justly high, and the infantry in particular was considered the best in the world. His fleet, also, was far more numerous, and better appointed, than that of any other European power; and both his soldiers and his sailors had the confidence in themselves and their commanders, which a long career of successful warfare alone can create.

Besides the Spanish crown, Philip succeeded to the kingdom of



Naples and Sicily, the duchy of Milan, Franche-Comte, and the Netherlands. In Africa he possessed Tunis, Oran, the Cape Verd, and the Canary Islands; and in Asia, the Philippine and Sunda Islands, and a part of the Moluccas. Beyond the Atlantic he was lord of the most splendid portions of the New world which "Columbus found for Castile and Leon." The empires of Peru and Mexico, New Spain, and Chili, with their abundant mines of the precious metals, Hispaniola and Cuba, and many other of the American Islands, were provinces of the sovereign of Spain.

Philip had, indeed, experienced the mortification of seeing the inhabitants of the Netherlands revolt against his authority, nor could he succeed in bringing back beneath the Spanish scepter all the possessions which his father had bequeathed to him. But he had reconquered a large number of the towns and districts that originally took up arms against him. Belgium was brought more thoroughly into implicit obedience to Spain than she had been before her insurrection, and it was only Holland and the six other Northern States that still held out against his arms. The contest had also formed a compact and veteran army on Philip's side, which, under his great general, the Prince of Parma, had been trained to act together under all difficulties and all vicissitudes of warfare; and on whose steadiness and loyalty perfect reliance might be placed throughout any enterprise, however difficult and tedious. Alexander Farnese, Prince of Parma, captain-general of the Spanish armies, and governor of the Spanish possessions in the Netherlands, was beyond all comparison the greatest military genius of his age. He was also highly distinguished for political wisdom and sagacity, and for his great administrative talents.

He was idolized by his troops, whose affections he knew how to win without relaxing their discipline or diminishing his own authority. Pre-eminently cool and circumspect in his plans, but swift and energetic when the moment arrived for striking a decisive blow, neglecting no risk that caution could provide against, conciliating even the populations of the districts which he attacked, by his scrupulous good faith, his moderation, and his address, Farnese was one of the most formidable generals that ever could be placed at the head of an army designed not only to win battles, but to effect conquests. Happy it, is for England and the world that this island was saved from becoming an arena for the exhibition of his powers.

Whatever diminution the Spanish empire might have sustained in the Netherlands, seemed to be more than compensated by the acquisition of Portugal, which Philip had completely conquered in 1580. Not only that ancient kingdom itself, but all the fruits of the maritime enterprises of the Portuguese had fallen into Philip's hands. All the Portuguese colonies in America, Africa, and the East Indies, acknowledged the sovereignty of the King of Spain; who thus not only united the whole Iberian peninsula under his single scepter, but had acquired a transmarine empire, little inferior in wealth and extent to that which he had inherited at his accession. The splendid victory which his fleet, in conjunction with the Papal and Venetian galleys, had gained at Lepanto over the Turks, had deservedly exalted the fame of the Spanish marine throughout Christendom; and when



Philip had reigned thirty-five years, the vigor of his empire seemed unbroken, and the glory of the Spanish arms had increased, and was increasing throughout the world.

One nation only had been his active, his persevering, and his successful foe. England had encouraged his revolted subjects in Flanders against him, and given them the aid in men and money, without which they must soon have been humbled in the dust. English ships had plundered his colonies; had defied his supremacy in the New World, as well as the Old; they had inflicted ignominious defeats on his squadrons; they had captured his cities, and burned his arsenals on the very coasts of Spain. The English had made Philip himself the object of personal insult. He was held up to ridicule in their stage plays and masks, and these scoffs at the man had (as is not unusual in such cases) excited the anger of the absolute king, even more vehemently than the injuries inflicted on his power. Personal as well as political revenge urged him to attack England. Were she once subdued, the Dutch must submit; France could not cope with him, the empire would not oppose him; and universal dominion seemed sure to be the result of the conquest of that malignant island.

There was yet another and a stronger feeling which armed King Philip against England. He was one of the sincerest and sternest bigots of his age. He looked on himself, and was looked on by others, as the appointed champion to extirpate heresy and re-establish the Papal power throughout Europe. A powerful reaction against Protestantism had taken place since the commencement of the second half of the sixteenth century, and Philip believed that he was destined to complete it. The Reform doctrines had been thoroughly rooted out from Italy and Spain. Belgium, which had previously been half Protestant, had been reconquered both in allegiance and creed by Philip, and had become one of the most Catholic countries in the world. Half Germany had been won back to the old faith. In Savoy, in Switzerland, and many other countries, the progress of the counter-Reformation had been rapid and decisive. The Catholic league seemed victorious in France. The Papal Court itself had shaken off the supineness of recent centuries; and, at the head of the Jesuits and the other new ecclesiastical orders, was displaying a vigor and a boldness worthy of the days of Hildebrand or Innocent III.

Throughout continental Europe, the Protestants, discomfited and dismayed, looked to England as their protector and refuge. England was the acknowledged central point of Protestant power and policy; and to conquer England was to stab Protestantism to the very heart. Sixtus V., the then reigning pope, earnestly exhorted Philip to this enterprise. And when the tidings reached Italy and Spain that the Protestant Queen of England had put to death her Catholic prisoner, Mary Queen of Scots, the fury of the Vatican and Escorial knew no bounds.

The Prince of Parma, who was appointed military chief of the expedition, collected on the coasts of Flanders a veteran force that was to play a principal part in the conquest of England. Besides the troops who were in his garrisons, or under his colors, five thousand infantry were sent to him from northern and central Italy, four thousand from the kingdom of Naples, six



thousand from Castile, three thousand from Arragon, three thousand from Austria and Germany, together with four squadrons of heavy-armed horse; besides which he received forces from the Tranche-Comte and the Walloon country. By his command, the forest of Waes was felled for the purpose of building flat-bottomed boats, which, floating down the rivers and canals to Meinport and Dunkerque, were to carry this large army of chosen troops to the mouth of the Thames, under the escort of the great Spanish fleet. Gun-carriages, fascines, machines used in sieges, together with every material requisite for building bridges, forming camps, and raising fortresses, were to be placed on board the flotillas of the Prince of Parma, who followed up the conquest of the Netherlands, whilst he was making preparations for the invasion of this island. Favored by the dissension's between the insurgents of the United Provinces and Leicester, the Prince of Parma had recovered Deventer, as well as a fort before Zutphen, which the English commanders, Sir William Stanley, the friend of Babington, and Sir Poland York, had surrendered to him, when with their troops, they passed over to the service of Philip II, after the death of Mary Stuart, and he had also made himself master of the Sluys. His intention was to leave to the Count de Mansfeldt sufficient forces to follow up the war with the Dutch, which had now become a secondary object, whilst he himself went at the head of fifty thousand men of the Armada and the flotilla, to accomplish the principal enterprise—that enterprise, which, in the highest degree, affected the interests of the pontifical authority. In a bull, intended to be kept secret until the day of landing, Sixtus V., renewing the anathema fulminated against Elizabeth by Pius V. and Gregory XIII, affected to depose her from our throne. Elizabeth was denounced as a murderous heretic whose destruction was an instant duty. A formal treaty was concluded (in June, 1587), by which the pope bound himself to contribute a million of scudi to the expenses of the war; the money to be paid as soon as the king had actual possession of an English port. Philip, on his part, strained the resources of his vast empire to the utmost. The French Catholic chiefs eagerly cooperated with him. In the sea-ports of the Mediterranean, and along almost the whole coast from Gibraltar to Jutland, the preparations for the great armament were urged forward with all the earnestness of religious zeal, as well as of angry ambition.—“Thus,” says the German historian of the Popes, “thus did the united powers of Italy and Spain, from which such mighty influences had gone forth over the whole world, now rouse themselves for an attack upon England! The king had already compiled, from the archives of Simancas, a statement of the claims which he had to the throne of that country on the extinction of the Stuart line; the most brilliant prospects, especially that of an universal dominion of the seas, were associated in his mind with this enterprise. Everything seemed to conspire to such end; the predominance of Catholicism in Germany, the renewed attack upon the Huguenots in France, the attempt upon Geneva, and the enterprise against England. At the same moment a thoroughly Catholic prince, Sigismund III, ascended the throne of Poland, with the prospect also of future



succession to the throne of Sweden. But whenever any principle or power, be it what it may, aims at unlimited supremacy in Europe some vigorous resistance to it, having its origin in the deepest springs of human nature, invariably arises. Philip II had had to encounter newly-awakened powers, braced by the vigor of youth, and elevated by a sense of their future destiny. The intrepid corsairs, who had rendered every sea insecure, now clustered round the coasts of their native island. The Protestants in a body,—even the Puritans, although they had been subjected to as severe oppressions as the Catholics, rallied round their queen, who now gave admirable proof of her masculine courage, and her princely talent of winning the affections, and leading the minds, and preserving the allegiance of men.” Ranke should have added that the English Catholics at this crisis proved themselves as loyal to their queen, and true to their country, as were the most vehement anti-Catholic zealots in the island. Some few traitors there were; but, as a body, the Englishmen who held the ancient faith, stood the trial of their patriotism nobly. The lord-admiral himself was a Catholic, and (to adopt the words of Hallam) “then it was that the Catholics in every county repaired to the standard of the lord-lieutenant, imploring that they might not be suspected of bartering the national independence for their religion itself.” The Spaniard found no partisans in the country which he assailed, nor did England, self-wounded,

“Lie at the proud foot of her enemy.”

For some time the destination of the enormous armament of Philip was not publicly announced. Only Philip himself, the Pope Sixtus, the Duke of Guise, and Philip’s favorite minister, Mendoza, at first knew its real object. Rumors were sedulously spread that it was designed to proceed to the Indies to realize vast projects of distant conquest. Sometimes hints were dropped by Philip’s ambassadors in foreign courts, that his master had resolved on a decisive effort to crush his rebels in the Low Countries. But Elizabeth and her statesmen could not view the gathering of such a storm without feeling the probability of its bursting on their own shores. As early as the spring of 1587, Elizabeth sent Sir Francis Drake to cruise off the Tagus. Drake sailed into the Bay of Cadiz and the Lisbon Roads, and burnt much shipping and military stores, causing thereby an important delay in the progress of the Spanish preparations. Drake called this “Singeing the King of Spain’s beard.” Elizabeth also increased her succors of troops to the Netherlanders, to prevent the Prince of Parma from overwhelming them, and from thence being at full leisure to employ his army against her dominions. Each party at this time thought it politic to try to amuse its adversary by pretending to treat for peace, and negotiations were opened at Ostend in the beginning of 1588, which were prolonged during the first six months of that year. Nothing real was effected, and probably nothing real had been intended to be effected by them. But, in the meantime, each party had been engaged in important communications with the chief powers in France, in which Elizabeth seemed at first to have secured a



great advantage, but in which Philip ultimately prevailed. "Henry III. of France was alarmed at the negotiations that were going on at Ostend; and he especially dreaded any accommodation between Spain and England, in consequence of which Philip II. might be enabled to subdue the United Provinces, and make himself master of France. In order, therefore, to dissuade Elizabeth from any arrangement, he offered to support her, in case she were attacked by the Spaniards, with twice the number of troops, which he was bound by the treaty of 1514 to send to her assistance. He, had a long conference with her ambassador, Stafford, upon this subject, and told him that the Pope and the Catholic king had entered into a league against the queen, his mistress, and had invited himself and the Venetians to join them, but they had refused to do so. 'If the Queen of England,' he added, 'concludes a peace with the Catholic king, that peace will not last three months, because the Catholic king will aid the League with all his forces to overthrow her, and you may imagine what fate is reserved for your mistress after that.' On the other hand, in order most effectually to frustrate this negotiation, he proposed to Philip II. to form a still closer union between the two crowns of France and Spain: and, at the same time, he secretly dispatched a confidential envoy to Constantinople, to warn the Sultan, that if he did not again declare war against the Catholic King, that monarch, who already possessed the Netherlands, Portugal, Spain, the Indies, and nearly all Italy, would soon make himself master of England, and would then turn the forces of all Europe against the Turks."

But Philip had an ally in France, who was far more powerful than the French king. This was the Duke of Guise, the chief of the League, and the idol of the fanatic partisans of the Romish faith. Philip prevailed on Guise openly to take up arms against Henry III. (who was reviled by the Leaguers as a traitor to the true Church, and a secret friend to the Huguenots); and thus prevent the French king from interfering in favor of Queen Elizabeth. "With this object, the commander, Juan Iniguez Moreo, was dispatched by him in the early part of April to the Duke of Guise at Soissons. He met with complete success. He offered the Duke of Guise, as soon as he took the field against Henry III., three hundred thousand crowns, six thousand infantry, and twelve hundred pikemen, on behalf of the king his master, who would, in addition, withdraw his ambassador from the court of France, and accredit an envoy to the Catholic party. A treaty was concluded on these conditions, and the Duke of Guise entered Paris, where he was expected by the Leaguers, and whence he expelled Henry III. on the 12th of May, by the insurrection of the barricades. A fortnight after this insurrection, which reduced Henry III. to impotence, and, to use the language of the Prince of Parma, did not even 'permit him to assist the Queen of England with his tears, as he needed them all to weep over his own misfortunes,' the Spanish fleet left the Tagus and sailed towards the British isles."

Meanwhile in England, from the sovereign on the throne to the peasant in the cottage, all hearts and hands made ready to meet the imminent deadly peril. Circular letters from the queen were sent round to the lord-lieutenants of the several counties



requiring them "to call together the best sort of gentlemen under their lieutenancy, and to declare unto them these great preparations and arrogant threatenings, now burst forth in action upon the seas, wherein every man's particular state, in the highest degree, could be touched in respect of country, liberty, wives, children, lands, lives, and (which was specially to be regarded) the profession of the: true and sincere religion of Christ: and to lay before them the infinite and unspeakable miseries that would fall out upon any such change, which miseries were evidently seen by the fruits of that hard and cruel government holden in countries not far distant. We do look," said the queen, "that the most part of them should have, upon this instant extraordinary occasion, a larger proportion of furniture, both for horsemen and footmen, but especially horsemen, than hath been certified; thereby to be in their best strength against any attempt, or to be employed about our own person, or otherwise. Hereunto as we doubt not but by your good endeavors they will be the rather conformable, so also we assure ourselves, that Almighty God will so bless these their loyal hearts borne towards us, their loving sovereign, and their natural country, that all the attempts of any enemy whatsoever shall be made void and frustrate, to their confusion, your comfort, and to God's high glory."

Letters of a similar kind were also sent by the council to each of the nobility, and to the great cities. The primate called on the clergy for their contributions; and by every class of the community the appeal was responded to with liberal zeal, that offered more even than the queen required. The boasting threats of the Spaniards had roused the spirit of the nation; and the whole people "were thoroughly irritated to stir up their whole forces for their defense against such prognosticated conquests; so that, in a very short time, all the whole realm, and every corner, were furnished with armed men, on horseback and on foot; and these continually trained, exercised, and put into bands, in warlike manner, as in no age ever was before in this realm. There was no sparing of money to provide horse, armor, weapons, powder, and all necessaries; no, nor want of provision of pioneers, carriages, and victuals, in every county of the realm, without exception, to attend upon the armies. And to this general furniture every man voluntarily offered, very many their services personally without wages, others money for armor and weapons, and to wage soldiers: a matter strange, and never the like heard of in this realm or elsewhere. And this general reason moved all men to large contributions, that when a conquest was to be withstood wherein all should be lost, it was no time to spare a portion."

Our lion-hearted queen showed herself worthy of such a people. A camp was formed at Tilbury; and there Elizabeth rode through the ranks, encouraging her captains and her soldiers by her presence and her words. One of the speeches which she addressed to them during this crisis has been preserved; and, though often quoted, it must not be omitted here.

"My loving people," she said, "we have been persuaded by some that are careful of our safety, to take heed how we commit ourselves to armed multitudes for fear of treachery: but I



assure you I do not desire to live to distrust my faithful and loving people. Let tyrants fear! I have always so behaved myself, that, under God, I have placed my chiefest strength and safe-guard in the loyal hearts and good will of my subjects; and, therefore, I am come amongst you, as you see, at this time, not for my recreation or disport, but being resolved, in the midst and heat of the battle, to live or die amongst you all, to lay down for my God, for my kingdom, and for my people, my honor and my blood, even in the dust. I know I have the body but of a weak and feeble woman, but I have the heart and stomach of a king, and of a King of England too; and think it foul scorn that Parma, or Spain, or any prince of Europe, should dare to invade the borders of my realm; to which, rather than any dishonor shall glow by me, I myself will take up arms, I myself will be your general, judge, and rewarder of every one of your virtues in the field. I know already for your forwardness you have deserved rewards and crowns; and we do assure you, on the word of a prince, they shall be duly paid you. In the meantime, my lieutenant-general shall be in my stead, than whom never prince commanded a more noble or worthy subject, not doubting but by your obedience to my general, by your concord in the camp, and your valor in the field, we shall shortly have a famous victory over those enemies of my God, of my kingdom, and of my people."

We have minute proofs of the skill with which the government of Elizabeth made its preparations; for the documents still exist which were drawn up at that time by the ministers and military men who were consulted by Elizabeth respecting the defense of the country. Among those summoned to the advice of their queen at this crisis, were Sir Walter Raleigh, Lord Grey, Sir Francis Knolles, Sir Thomas Leighton, Sir John Norris, Sir Richard Grenville, Sir Richard Bingham, and Sir Roger Williams; and the biographer of Sir Walter Raleigh observes that "These councilors were chosen by the queen, as being not only men bred to arms, and some of them, as Grey, Norris, Bingham, and Grenville, of high military talents, but of grave experience in affairs of state, and in the civil government of provinces, - qualities by no means unimportant, when the debate referred not merely to the leading of an army or the plait of a campaign, but to the organization of a militia, and the communication with the magistrates for arming the peasantry, and encouraging them to a resolute and simultaneous resistance. From some private papers of Lord Burleigh, it appears that Sir Walter took a principal share in these deliberations; and the abstract of their proceedings, a document still preserved, is supposed to have been drawn up by him. They first prepared a list of places where it was likely the Spanish army might attempt a descent, as well as of those which lay most exposed to the force under the Duke of Parma. They next considered the speediest and most effectual means of defense, whether by fortification or the muster of a military array; and, lastly, deliberated on the course to be taken for fighting the enemy if he should land."

Some of Elizabeth's advisers recommended that the whole care and resources of the government should be devoted to the equipment of the armies, and that the enemy, when he attempted to land,



should be welcomed with a battle on the shore. But the wiser counsels of Raleigh and others prevailed, who urged the importance of fitting out a fleet, that should encounter the Spaniards at sea, and, if possible, prevent them from approaching the land at all. In Raleigh's great work on the "History of the World," he takes occasion, when discussing some of the events of the first Punic war, to give his reasonings on the proper policy of England when menaced with invasion. Without doubt, we have there the substance of the advice which he gave to Elizabeth's council; and the remarks of such a man on such a subject, have a general and enduring interest, beyond the immediate peril which called them forth. Raleigh says:- "Surely I hold that the best way is to keep our enemies from treading upon our ground: wherein if we fail, then must we seek to make him wish that he had stayed at his own home. In such a case if it should happen, our judgments are to weigh many particular circumstances, that belongs not unto this discourse. But making the question general, the positive, Whether England, without the help of her fleet, be able to debar an enemy from landing; I hold that it is unable so to do; and therefore I think it most dangerous to make the adventure. For the encouragement of a first victory to an enemy, and the discouragement of being beaten, to the invaded, may draw after it a most perilous consequence.

"Great difference I know there is, and a diverse consideration to be had, between such a country as France is, strengthened with many fortified places; and this of ours, where our ramparts are but the bodies of men. But I say that an army to be transported over sea, and to be landed again in an enemy's country, and the place left to the choice of the invader, cannot be resisted on the coast of England, without a fleet to impeach it; no, nor on the coast of France, or any other country; except every creek, port, or sandy bay, had a powerful army, in each of them, to make opposition. For let the supposition be granted that Kent is able to furnish twelve thousand foot, and that those twelve thousand be layed in the three best landing places within that country, to wit, three thousand at Margat, three thousand at the Nesse, and six thousand at Foulkstone, that is, somewhat equally distant from them both; as also that two of these troops (unless some other order be thought more fit) be directed to strengthen the third, when they shall see the enemies' fleet to head towards it: I say, that notwithstanding this provision if the enemy, setting sail from the Isle of Wight in the first watch of the night, and towing their long boats at their sterns, shall arrive by dawn of day at the Nesse, and thrust their army on shore there, it will be hard for those three thousand that are at Margat (twenty-and-four long miles from thence), to come time enough to reinforce their fellows at the Nesse. Nay, how shall they at Foulkstone be able to do it, who are nearer by more than half the way? Seeing that the enemy, at his first arrival, will either make his entrance by force, with three or four shot of great artillery, and quickly put the first three thousand that are entrenched at the Nesse to run, or else give them so much to do that they shall be glad to send for help to Foulkstone, and perhaps to Margat, whereby those places will be left bare.



Now let us suppose that all the twelve thousand Kentish soldiers arrive at the Nesse, ere the enemy can be ready to disembark his army, so that he will find it unsafe to land in the face of so many prepared to withstand him, yet must we believe that he will play the best of his own game (having liberty to go which way he list), and under covert of the night, set sail towards the east, where what shall hinder him to take ground either at Margat, the Downes, or elsewhere, before they, at the Nesse, can be well aware of his departure? Certainly there is nothing more easy than to do it. Yea, the like may be said of Weymouth, Purbeck, Poole, and of all landing-places on the south west. For there is no man ignorant, that ships, without putting themselves out of breath, will easily outrun the soldiers that coast them. 'Les armées ne; volent point en poste;'— 'Armies neither fly, nor run post,' saith a marshal of France. And I know it to be true, that a fleet of ships may be seen at sunset, and after it at the Lizard, yet by the next morning they may recover Portland, whereas an army of foot shall not be able to march it in six days. Again, when those troops lodged on the sea-shores, shall be forced to run from place to place in vain, after a fleet of ships, they will at length sit down in the midway, and leave all at adventure. But say it were otherwise, that the invading enemy will offer to land in some such place, where there shall be an army of ours ready to receive him; yet it cannot be doubted, but that when the choice of all our trained bands, and the choice of our commanders and captains, shall be drawn together (as they were at Tilbury in the year 1588) to attend the person of the prince, and for the defense of the city of London; they that remain to guard the coast can be of no such force as to encounter an army like unto that wherewith it was intended that the Prince of Parma should have landed in England.

"For end of this digression, I hope that this question shall never come to trial; his majesty's many moveable forts will forbid the experience. And although the English will no less disdain that any nation under heaven can do, to be beaten, upon their own ground, or elsewhere, by a foreign enemy; yet to entertain those that shall assail us with their own beef in their bellies, find before they eat of our English capons, I take it to be the wisest way; to do which his majesty, after God, will employ his good ships on the sea, and not trust in any entrenchment upon the shore."

The introduction of steam as a propelling power at sea, has added tenfold weight to these arguments of Raleigh. On the other hand, a well constructed system of railways, especially of coast-lines, aided by the operation of the electric telegraph, would give facilities for concentrating a defensive army to oppose an enemy on landing and for moving troops from place to place in observation of the movements of the hostile fleet, such as would have astonished Sir Walter even more than the sight of vessels passing rapidly to and fro without the aid of wind or tide. The observation of the French Marshall whom he quotes, is now no longer correct. Armies can be made to pass from place to place almost with the speed of wings, and far more rapidly than any post-traveling that was known in the Elizabethan or any other age. Still, the presence of a sufficient armed force at the right



spot, at the right time. can never be made a matter of certainty; and even after the changes that have taken place, no one can doubt but that the policy of Raleigh is that which England should ever seek to follow in defensive war. At the time of the Armada, that policy certainly saved the country, if not from conquest, at, least from deplorable calamities. If indeed the enemy had landed, we may be sure that he would have been heroically opposed. But history shows us so many examples of the superiority of veteran troops over new levies, however numerous and brave, that without disparaging our countrymen's soldierly merits, we may well be thankful that no trial of them was made on English land. Especially must we feel this, when we contrast the high military genius of the Prince of Parma, who would have headed. the Spaniards, with the imbecility of the Earl of Leicester, to whom the deplorable spirit of favoritism, which formed the greatest blemish in Elizabeth's character, had then committed the chief command of the English armies.

The ships of the royal navy at this time amounted to no more than thirty-six; but the most serviceable merchant vessels were collected from all the ports of the country; and the citizens of London, Bristol, and the other great seats of commerce, showed as liberal a zeal in equipping and manning vessels as the nobility and gentry displayed in mustering forces by land. The seafaring population of the coast, of every rank and station, was animated by the same ready spirit; and the whole number of seamen who came forward to man the English fleet was 17,472. The number of the ships that were collected was 191; and the total amount of their tonnage 31,985. There was one ship in the fleet (the Triumph) of 1100 tons, one of 1000, one of 900, two of 800 each, three of 600, five of 500, five of 400, six of 300, six of 250, twenty of 200, and the residue of inferior burden. Application was made to the Dutch for assistance; and, as Stowe expresses it, "The Hollanders came roundly in, with threescore sail, brave ships of war, fierce and full of spleen, not so much for England's aid, as in just occasion for their own defense; these men foreseeing the greatness of the danger that might ensue, if the Spaniards should chance to win the day and get the mastery over them; in due regard whereof their manly courage was inferior to none."

We have more minute information of the numbers and equipment of the hostile forces than we: have of our own. In the first volume of Hakluyt's VOYAGES, dedicated to Lord Effingham, who commanded against the Armada, there is given (from the contemporary foreign writer, Meteran) a more complete and detailed catalogue than has perhaps ever appeared of a similar armament.

"A very large and particular description of this navie was put in print and published by the Spaniards; wherein was set downe the number, names, and burthens of the shippes, the number of mariners and soldiers throughout the whole fleete; likewise the quantitie of their ordinance, of their armour, of bullets, of match, of gun-poulder, of victuals, and of all their navall furniture, was in the saide description particularized. Unto all these were added the names of the governours,



captaines, noblemen, and gentlemen voluntaries, of whom there was so great a multitude, that scarce was there any family of accompt, or any one principall man throughout all Spaine, that had not a brother, sonne, or kinsman in that fleete; who all of them were in good hope to purchase unto themselves in that navie (as they termed it) invincible, endless glory and renown, and to possess themselves of great seignories and riches in England, and in the Low Countreys. But because the said description was translated and published out of Spanish into divers other languages, we will here only make an abridgement or brief rehearsal thereof.

"Portugal furnished and set forth under the conduct of the Duke of Medina Sidonia, generall of the fleete, ten galeons, two zabraes, 1300 mariners, 3300 souldiers, 300 great pieces, with all requisite furniture.

"Biscay, under the conduct of John Martines de Ricalde, admiral of the whole fleete, set forth tenne galeons, four pataches, 700 mariners, 2000 souldiers, 260 great pieces, &c.

"Guipusco, under the conduct of Michael de Orquendo, tenne galeons, four pataches, 700 mariners, 2000 souldiers, 310 great pieces.

"Italy with the Levant islands, under Martine de Vertendona, ten galeons, 800 mariners, 2000 souldiers, 310 great pieces, &c.

"Castile, under Diego Flores de Valdez, fourteen galeons, two pataches, 1700 mariners, 2400 souldiers, and 280 great pieces, &c.

"Andaluzia, under the conduct of Petro de Valdez ten galeons, one patache, 800 mariners, 2400 souldiers, 280 great pieces, &c.

"Item, under the conduct of John Lopes de Medina, twenty-three great Flemish hulkes, with 700 mariners, 3200 souldiers, and 400 great pieces.

"Item, under Hugo de Moncada, foure galliasses, containing 1200 gally-slaves, 460 mariners, 870 souldiers, 200 great pieces, &c.

"Item, under Diego de Mandrana, foure gallies of Portugall, with 888 gally-slaves, 360 mariners, twenty great pieces, and other requisite furniture.

"Item, under Anthonie de Mendoza, twenty-two pataches and zabraes, with 574 mariners, 488 souldiers, and 193 great pieces.

"Besides the ships aforementioned, there were twenty caravels rowed with oares, being appointed to perform necessary services under the greater ships, insomuch that all the ships appertayning to this navie amounted unto the summe of 150, eche one being sufficiently



provided of furniture and victuals.

"The number of mariners in the saide Aeete were above 8000, of slaves 2088 of souldiers 20,000 (besides noblemen and gentlemen voluntaries), of great cast pieces 2600. The foresaid ships were of an huge and incredible capacitie and receipt: for the whole fleete was large enough to containe the burthen of 60,000 tunnes.

"The galeons were 64 in number, being of an huge bignesse, and very flately built, being of marvellous force also, and so high, that they resembled great castles, most fit to defend themselves and to withstand any assault, but in giving any other ships the encounter farr inferiour unto the English and Dutch ships, which can with great dexteritie weild and turne themselves at all assayes. The upperworke of the said galeons was of thicnesse and strength sufficient to bear off musketshot. The lower worke and the timbers thereof were out of measure strong, being framed of planks and ribs foure or five foote in thicnesse, insomuch that no bullets could pierce them, but such as were discharged hard at hand; which afterward proved true, for a great number of bullets were found to sticke fast within the massie substance of those thicke planks. Great and well pitched cables were twined about the masts of their shippes, to strengthen them against the battery of shot. "The galliasses were of such bignesse, that they contained within them chambers, chapels, turrets, pulpits, and other commodities of great houses. The galliasses were rowed with great oares, there being in eche one of them 300 slaves for the same purpose, and were able to do great service with the force of their ordinance. All these, together with the residue aforenamed, were furnished and beautified with trumpets streamers, banners, warlike ensignes, and other such like ornaments.

"Their pieces of brazen ordinance were 1600, and of yron 1000.

"The bullets thereto belonging were 120 thousand.

"Item of gun-poulder, 5600 quintals. Of matche, 1200 quintals. Of muskets and kaleivers, 7000. Of haleberts and partisans, 10,000.

"Moreover they had great store of canons, doublecanons, culverings and field-pieces for land services.

"Likewise they were provided of all instruments necessary on land to conveigh and transport their furniture from place to place; as namely of carts, wheeles, wagons, &c. Also they had spades, mattocks, and baskets, to set pioners to worke. They had in like sort great store of mules and horses, and whatsoever else was requisite for a land-armie. They were so well stored of biscuit, that for the space of halfe a yeere, they might



allow eche person in the whole fleete halfe a quintall every month; whereof the whole summe amounteth unto an hundreth thousand quintals.

"Likewise of wine they had 147 thousand pipes, sufficient also for halfe a yeeres expedition. Of bacon, 6500 quintals. Of cheese, three thousand quintals. Besides fish, rise, beans, pease, oile, vinegar, &c. "Moreover they had 12,000 pipes of fresh water, and all other necessary provision, as, namely, candles, lanternes, lampes, sailes, hempe, oxe-hides, and lead to stop holes that should be made with the battery of gunshot. To be short, they brought all things expedient, either for a fleete by sea, or for an armie by land.

"This navie (as Diego Pimentelli afterward confessed) was esteemed by the king himselve to containe 32,000 persons, and to cost him every day 30 thousand ducates.

"There were in the said navie five terzaes of Spaniards (which terzaes the Frenchmen call regiments), under the command of five governours, termed by the Spaniards masters of the field, and amongst the rest there were many olde and expert souldiers chosen out of the garisons of Sicilie, Naples, and Tercea. Their captaines or colonels were Diego Pimentelli, Don Francisco de Toledo, Don Alonco de Lucon, Don Nicolas de Isla, Don Augustin de Mexia; who had each of them thirty-two companies under their conduct. Besides the which companies, there were many bands also of Castilians and Portugals, every one of which had their peculiar governours, captains, officers, colours, and weapons."

While this huge armada was making ready in the southern ports of the Spanish dominions, the Prince of Parma, with almost incredible toil and skill, collected a squadron of war-ships at Dunkirk, and his flotilla of other ships and of flat-bottomed boats for the transport to England of the picked troops, which were designed to be the main instruments in subduing England. Thousands of workmen were employed, night and day, in the construction of these vessels, in the ports of Flanders and Brabant. One hundred of the kind called hendes, built at Antwerp, Bruges, and Ghent, and laden with provision and ammunition, together with sixty flat-bottomed boats, each capable of carrying thirty horses, were brought, by means of canals and fosses, dug expressly for the purpose, to Nieuport and Dunkirk. One hundred smaller vessels were equipped at the former place, and thirty-two at Dunkirk, provided with twenty thousand empty barrels, and with materials for making pontoons, for stopping up the harbors, and raising forts and entrenchment's. The army which these vessels were designed to convey to England amounted to thirty thousand strong, besides a body of four thousand cavalry, stationed at Courtroi, composed chiefly of the ablest veterans of Europe; invigorated by rest, (the siege of Sluys having been the only enterprise in which they were employed during the last campaign,) and excited by the



hopes of plunder and the expectation of certain conquest. And "to this great enterprise and imaginary conquest, divers princes and noblemen came from divers countries; out of Spain came the Duke of Pestrana, who was said to be the son of Ruy Gomez de Silva, but was held to be the king's bastard; the Marquis of Bourgou, one of the Archduke Ferdinand's sons, by Philippina Welserine; Don Vespasian Gonzaga, of the house of Mantua, a great soldier, who had been viceroy in Spain; Giovanni de Medici, Bastard of Florence Amedo, Bastard of Savoy, with many such like, besides others of meaner quality."

Philip had been advised by the deserter, Sir William Stanley, not to attack England in the first instance, but first to effect a landing and secure a strong position in Ireland; his admiral, Santa Cruz, had recommended him to make sure, in the first instance, of some large harbor on the coast of Holland or Zealand, where the Armada, having entered the channel, might find shelter in case of storm, and whence it could sail without difficulty for England; but Philip rejected both these counsels, and directed that England itself should be made the immediate object of attack; and on the 20th of May the Armada left the Tagus, in the pomp and pride of supposed invincibility, and amidst the shouts of thousands, who believed that England was already conquered. But steering to the northward, and before it was clear of the coast of Spain, the Armada was assailed by a violent storm, and driven back with considerable damage to the ports of Biscay and Galicia. It had, however, sustained its heaviest loss before it left. the Tagus, in the death of the veteran admiral Santa Cruz, who had been destined to guide it against England.

This experienced sailor, notwithstanding his diligence and success, had been unable to keep pace with the impatient ardor of his master. Philip II. had reproached him with his dilatoriness, and had said with ungrateful harshness, "You make an ill return for all my kindness to you." These words cut the veteran's heart, and proved fatal to Santa Cruz. Overwhelmed with fatigue and grief, he sickened and died. Philip II. had replaced him by Aionzo Perez de Gusman, Duke of Ededina Sidonia, one of the most powerful of the Spanish grandees, but wholly unqualified to command such an expedition. He had, however, as his lieutenants, two seamen of proved skill and bravery, Juan de Martinerr. Recalde of Biscay, and Miguel Orquendo of Guipuzcoa. The report of the storm which had beaten back the Armada reached England with much exaggeration, and it was supposed by some of the queen's counselors that the invasion would now be deferred to another year. But Lord Howard of Effingham, the lord high-admiral of the English fleet, judged more wisely that the danger was not yet passed, and, as already mentioned, had the moral courage to refuse to, dismantle his principal ships, though he received orders to that effect. But it was not Howard's design to keep the English fleet in costly inaction, and to wait patiently in our own harbors, till the Spaniards had recruited their strength, and sailed forth again to attack us. The English seamen of that age (like their successors) loved to strike better than to parry, though, when emergency required, they could be patient and cautious in their



bravery. It was resolved to proceed to Spain, to learn the enemy's real condition, and to deal him any blow for which there might be opportunity. In this bold policy we may well believe him to have been eagerly seconded by those who commanded under him. Howard and Drake sailed accordingly to Corunna, hoping to surprise and attack some part of the Armada in that harbor; but when near the coast of Spain, the north wind, which had blown up to this time, veered suddenly to the south; and fearing that the Spaniards might put to sea and pass him unobserved, Howard returned to the entrance of the channel, where he cruised for some time on the, look out for the enemy. In part of a letter written by him at this period, he speaks of the difficulty of guarding so large a breadth of sea,—a difficulty that ought not to be forgotten when modern schemes of defense against hostile fleets from the south are discussed. "I myself," he wrote, "do lie in the midst of the Channel, with the greatest force; Sir Francis Drake hath twenty ships, and four or five pinnaces, which lie towards Ushant; and Mr. Hawkins, with as many more, lieth towards Scilly, Thus we are fain to do, or else with this wind they might pass us by, and we never the wiser. -The Sleeve is another manner of thing than it was taken for: we find it by experience and daily observation to be 100 miles over: a large room for me to look unto!" But after some time further reports that the Spaniards were inactive in their harbour, where they were suffering severely from sickness, caused Howard also to relax in his vigilance; and he returned to Plymouth with the greater part of his fleet.

On the 12th of July, the Armada having completely refitted, sailed again for the Channel, and reached it without obstruction or observation by the English.

The design of the Spaniards was, that the Armada should give them, at least for a time, the command of the sea, and that it should join the squadron which Parma had collected, off Calais. Then, escorted by an overpowering naval force, Parma and his army were to embark in their flotilla, and cross the sea to England, where they were to be landed, together with the troops which the Armada brought from the ports of Spain. The scheme was not dissimilar to one formed against England a little more than two centuries afterwards.

As Napoleon, in 1805, waited with his army and flotilla at Boulogne, looking for Villeneuve to drive away the English cruisers, and secure him a passage across the Channel, so Parma, in 1558, waited for Medina Sidonia to drive away the Dutch and English squadrons that watched his flotilla, and to enable his veterans to cross the sea to the land that they were to conquer. Thanks to Providence, in each case England's enemy waited in vain!

Although the numbers of sail which the queen's government, and the patriotic zeal of volunteers, had collected for the defense of England, exceeded the number of sail in the Spanish fleet, the English ships were, collectively, far inferior in size to their adversaries; their aggregate tonnage being less by half than that of the enemy. In the number of guns, and weight of metal, the disproportion was still greater. The English admiral was also obliged to subdivide his force; and Lord Henry Seymour,



with forty of the best Dutch and English ships was employed in blockading the hostile ports in Flanders, and in preventing the Prince of Parma from coming out of Dunkirk.

The orders of King Philip to the Duke de Medina. Sidonia were, that he should, on entering the channel, keep near the French coast, and, if attacked by the English ships, avoid an action, and steer on to Calais roads, where the Prince of Parma's squadron was to join him. The hope of surprising and destroying the English fleet in Plymouth, led the Spanish admiral to deviate from these orders, and to stand across to the English shore; but, on findings that Lord Howard was coming out to meet him, he resumed the original plan, and determined to bend his way steadily towards Calais and Dunkirk, and to keep merely on the defensive against such squadrons of the English as might come up with him.

It was on Saturday, the 20th of July, that Lord Effingham came in sight of his formidable adversaries. The Armada was drawn up in form of a crescent, which from horn to horn measured some seven miles. There was a south-west wind; and before it the vast vessels sailed slowly on. The English let them pass by; and then, following in the rear, commenced an attack on them. A running fight now took place, in which some of the best ships of the Spaniards were captured; many more received heavy damage; while the English vessels, which took care not to close with their huge antagonists, but availed themselves of their superior celerity in tacking and maneuvering, suffered little comparative loss. Each day added not only to the spirit, but to the number of Effingham's force. Raleigh, Oxford, Cumberland, and Sheffield joined him; and "the gentlemen of England hired ships from all parts at their own charge, and with one accord came flocking thither as to a set field, where glory was to be attained, and faithful service performed unto their prince and their country." Raleigh justly praises the English admiral for his skillful tactics. He says, "Certainly, he that will happily perform a fight at sea, must be skillful in making choice of vessels to fight in; he must believe that there is more belonging to a good man-of-war, upon the waters, than great daring; and must know that there is a great deal of difference between fighting loose, or at large and grappling. The guns of a slow ship pierce as well, and make as great holes as those in a swift. To clap ships together, without consideration, belongs rather to a madman than to a man of war; for by such an ignorant bravery was Peter Strossie lost at the Azores, when he fought against the Marquis of Santa Cruza. In like sort had the Lord Charles Howard, Admiral of England, been lost in the year 1588, if he had not been better advised, than a great many malignant fools were, that found fault with his demeanor. The Spaniards had an army aboard then, and he had none: they had more ships than he had, and of higher building and charging; so that, had he entangled himself with those great and powerful vessels, he had greatly endangered this kingdom of England. For, twenty men upon the defenses are equal to a hundred that board and enter; whereas then, contrariwise, the Spaniards had a hundred, for twenty of ours, to defend themselves withall. But our admiral knew his advantage, and held it: which, had he not done, he had not been worthy to have held



his head."

The Spanish admiral also showed great judgment and firmness in following the line of conduct that had been traced out for him; and on the 27th of July he brought his fleet unbroken, though sorely distressed, to anchor in Calais roads. But the King of Spain had calculated ill the number and the activity of the English and Dutch fleets; as the old historian expresses it, "It seemeth that the Duke of Parma and the Spaniards grounded upon a vain and presumptuous expectation, that all the ships of England and of the Low Countreys would at the first sight of the Spanish and Dunkerke navie have betaken themselves to flight, yeelding them sea-room, and endeavouring only to defend themselves their havens, and sea-coasts from invasion. Wherefore their intent and purpose was, that the Duke of Parma, in his small and flat-bottomed ships should, as it were, under the shadow and wings of the Spanish fleet, convey over all his troupes, armour, and warlike provisions, and with their forces so united, should invade England; or, while the English fleet were busied in fight against the Spanish, should enter upon any part of the coast which he thought to be most convenient. Which invasion (as the captives afterwards confessed) the Duke of Parma thought first to have attempted by the river of Thames; upon the banks whereof, having at the first arrival landed twenty or thirty thousand of his principal souldiers, he supposed that he might easily have won the city of London; both because his small ships should have followed and assisted his land-forces, and also for that the city itself was but meanly fortified and easy to overcome, by reason of the citizens' delicacy and discontinuance from the wares, who, with continual and constant labor, might be vanquished, if they yielded not at the first assault.

But the English and Dutch found ships and mariners enough to keep the Armada itself in check, and at the same time to block up Parma's flotilla. The greater part of Seymour's squadron left its cruising-ground off Dunkirk to join the English admiral off Calais; but the Dutch manned about five-and-thirty sail of good ships, with a strong force of soldiers on board, all well seasoned to the sea-service, and with these they blockaded the Flemish ports that were in Parma's power. Still it was resolved by the Spanish admiral and the prince to endeavor to effect a junction, which the English seamen were equally resolute to prevent: and bolder measures on our side now became necessary. The Armada lay off Calais, with its largest ships ranged outside, "like strong castles fearing no assault; the lesser placed in the middle ward." The English admiral could not, attack them in their position without great disadvantage, but on the night of the 20th he sent eight fire-ships among them, with almost equal effect to that of the fire-ships which the Greeks so often employed against the Turkish fleets in their late war of independence. The Spaniards cut their cables and put to sea in confusion. One of the largest galeasses ran foul of another vessel and was stranded. The rest of the fleet was scattered about on the Flemish coast, and when the morning broke, it was with difficulty and delay that they obeyed their admiral's signal to range themselves round him near Gravelines.



Now was the golden opportunity for the English to assail them, and prevent them from ever letting loose Parma's flotilla against England; and nobly was that opportunity used. Drake and Fenner were the first English captains who attacked the unwieldy leviathans: then came Fenton, Southwell, Burton, Cross, Raynor, and then the lord admiral, with Lord Thomas Howard and Lord Sheffield. The Spaniards only thought of forming and keeping close together, and were driven by the English past Dunkirk, and far away from the Prince of Parma, who in watching their defeat from the coast, must, us: Drake expressed it, have chafed like a bear robbed of her whelps. This was indeed the last and the decisive battle between the two fleets. It is perhaps, best described in the very words of the contemporary writer as we may read them in Hakluyt.

"Upon the 29th of July in the morning, the Spanish fleet after the forsayd tumult, having arranged themselves againe into order, were, within sight. of Greveling, most bravely and furiously encountered by the English; where they once again got the wind of the Spaniards; who suffered themselves to be deprived of the commodity of the place in Caleis road, and of the advantage of the wind neer unto Dunkerk, rather than they would change their array or separate their forces now conjoynd and united together, standing only upon their defence.

"And howbeit there were many excellent and warlike ships in the English fleet, yet scarce were there 22 or 23 among them all, which matched 90 of the Spanish ships in the bigness, or could conveniently assault them. Wherefore the English ships using their prerogative.f nimble steerage, whereby they could turn and wield themselves with the wind which way they listed, came often times very near upon the Spaniards, and charged them so sore, that non and then they were but a pike's length asunder: and so continually giving them one broadside after another, they discharged all their shot both great and small upon them, spending one whole day from morning till night in that violent kind of conflict, untill such time as powder and bullets failed them. In regard of which want they thought it convenient not to pursue the Spaniards any longer, because they had many great vantages of the English, namely, for the extraordinary bigness of their ships, and also for that they were so neerley conjoynd, and kept together in so good array, that they could by no meanes be fought withall one to one. The English thought, therefore that they had right well acquitted themselves, in chasing the Spaniards first from Caleis, and then from Dunkerk, and by that meanes to have hindered them from joyning with the Duke of Parma his forces, and getting the wind of them, to have driven them from their own coasts.

"The Spaniards that day sustained great loss and damage, having many of their shippes shot thorow and thorow, and they discharged likewise great store of ordinance



against the English; who, indeed, sustained some hindrance, but not comparable to the Spaniard's loss: for they lost not any one ship or person of account, for very diligent inquisition being made, the English men all that time wherein the Spanish navy sayled upon their seas, are not found to have wanted above one hundred of their people: albeit Sir Francis Drake's ship was pierced with shot above forty times, and his very cabben was twice shot thorow, and about the conclusion of the fight, the bed of a certaine gentleman lying weary thereupon, was taken quite from under him with the force of a bullet. Likewise, as the Earle of Northumberland and Sir Charles Blunt were at dinner upon a time, the bullet of a demy-culverin brake thorow the midst of their cabben, touched their feet, and strooke downe two of the standers by, with many such accidents befalling the English shippes, -which it were tedious to rehearse."

It reflects little credit on the English government that the English fleet was so deficiently supplied with ammunition, as to be unable to complete the destruction of the invaders. But enough was done to ensure it. Many of the largest Spanish ships were sunk or captured in the action of this day. And at length the Spanish admiral, despairing of success, fled northward with a southerly wind, in the hope of rounding Scotland, and so returning to Spain without a farther encounter with the English fleet. Lord Effingham left a squadron to continue the blockade of the Prince of Parma's armament; but that wise general soon withdrew his troops to more promising fields of action. Meanwhile the lord admiral himself, and Drake chased the vincible Armada, as it was now termed, for some distance northward; and then, when it seemed to bend away from the Scotch coast towards Norway, it was thought best, in the words of Drake, "to leave them to those boisterous and uncouth northern seas. The sufferings and losses which the unhappy Spaniards sustained in their flight round Scotland and Ireland, are well known. Of their whole Armada only fifty-three shattered vessels brought back their beaten and wasted crews to the Spanish coast which they had quitted in such pageantry and pride.

Some passages from the writings of those who took part in the struggle, have been already quoted; and the most spirited description of the defeat of the Armada which ever was penned, may perhaps be taken from the letter which our brave vice-admiral Drake wrote in answer to some mendacious stories by which the Spaniards strove to hide their shame. Thus does he describe the scenes in which he played so important a part:

"They were not ashamed to publish, in sundry languages in print, great victories in words, which they pretended to have obtained against this realm, and spread the same in a most false sort over all parts of France, Italy, and elsewhere; when, shortly afterwards, it was happily manifested in very deed to all nations, how their navy, which they termed invincible, consisting of one hundred and forty sail of ships, not only of their own kingdom, but strengthened with the greatest argosies,

Portugal carracks, Florentines, and large hulks of other countries, were by thirty of her majesty's own ships of war, and a few of our own merchants, by the wise, valiant, and advantageous conduct of the Lord Charles Howard, high-admiral of England, beaten and shuffled together even from the Lizard in Cornwall, first to Portland, when they shamefully left Don Pedro de Valdez with his mighty ship; from Portland to Calais, where they lost Hugh de Moncado, with the galleys of which he was captain; and from Calais, driven with squibs from their anchors, were chased out of the sight of England, round about Scotland and Ireland. Where, for the sympathy of their religion, hoping to find succor and assistance, a great part of them were crushed against the rocks, and those others that landed, being very many in number, were, notwithstanding, broken, slain, and taken; and so sent from village to village, coupled in halters, to be shipped into England, where her majesty, of her princely and invincible disposition, disdaining to put them to death, and scorning either to retain or to entertain them, they were all sent back again to their countries, to witness and recount the worthy achievement of their invincible and dreadful navy. Of which the number of soldiers, the fearful burthen of their ships, the commanders' names of every squadron, with all others, their magazines of provision were put in print, as an army and navy irresistible and disdaining prevention: with all which their great and terrible ostentation, they did not in all their sailing round about England so much as sink or take one ship, bark, pinnace, or cock boat of ours, or even burn so much as one sheep-cote on this land."



"A victory described in detail is indistinguishable from a defeat."

— Jean-Paul Sartre



(This war between Spain and England would continue until 1603. :-)

1592

Foundation of the University of Dublin.

IRELAND



IRELAND

IRELAND

1593

Hugh O'Neill declared himself The O'Neill, heir of the High Kingdom.

IRELAND

1594

When the Ulster chieftains rebelled, there began the “Tyrone War” in [Ireland](#) between the Celtic society and the English colonialist society, ended ultimately in the total defeat and humiliation of Celtic Ireland. The English commander, Lord Mountjoy, was provided with ample funds to recruit and suborn any Irish units which could be captured and persuaded to pledge allegiance to the queen. Such suborned military units were of course not trusted, but instead were kept under pay “rather to prevent their fighting against us, than for confidence in their fighting for us.” Meanwhile they were carefully being “exposed to endure the brunt of service upon all occasions” in the expectation that by the end of the period of strife they could be decimated. (As Fynes Moryson (1566-1603) would write in 1617, “*the death of these peaceable swordsmen, though falling on our [the English] side, was yet [regarded as] rather a gain than a loss.*” A starvation policy had been prosecuted primarily in Ulster but also throughout the island by Lord Mountjoy for a full three and one-half years of this nine-year episode. During each planting time, armies had taken to the field to prevent any planting. During each growing season, the armies had devoted themselves to cutting down or burning any crops found in any field. During and after each harvest, any stored grain that could be located had been confiscated. Each winter the effort had been made to drive the Irish out of their villages, naked into the woods to die of exposure. Edmund Spenser, master of an English plantation in Ireland and Sheriff-designate for Cork, advised Queen Elizabeth,

Until Ireland can be famished, it cannot be subdued.

The pressure had been unprincipled and relentless, and by the end was triumphant. When the forces of Hugh O'Neil went down in defeat, it was all over except the shouting.



1596

L. Shih Chen published *PEN TS'AO KANG MU*, the most well-known and praised of Chinese herbals.

This was a poor harvest year in Europe. Caspar Bauhin published a short notice on the [potato](#) *Solanum tuberosum*.

PLANTS

This was the 2d of the three so-called “dear years” of England, during which not only meat but even dairy products were in such low supply that they commanded such a price as to be entirely out of the reach of the poor.¹¹ In these years wheat flour would often need to be augmented by grinding and boiling the root of the cuckoopint, *Arum maculatum*, until even wheat would become too dear for regular consumption by the poor and the many would shift their menus in the direction of “Horse corne, beanes, peason, otes, tare and lintels.”¹²

IRELAND

1598

O'Neill defeated Sir Henry Bagenal at Yellow Ford in [Ireland](#). An uprising in Munster destroyed an English plantation. Edmund Spenser, master of another such plantation and Sheriff-designate for Cork, wrote for the benefit of his Queen Elizabeth “A Breife Note of Ireland,” informing her that there was no negotiation possible with the Irish. Only by a strategy of famine, of starving out these local warlike island tribes and reducing them to abjectivity, could a lasting peace be created for the Emerald Isle. The most utter ruthlessness was the policy which he urged for the colonial government. Let the means serve the end:

Until Ireland can be famished, it cannot be subdued.

11. A. Appleby, [FAMINE](#) IN TUDOR AND STUART ENGLAND (Stanford CA: Stanford UP, 1978), page 5.

12. J.C. Drummond and A. Wilbraham, *THE ENGLISHMAN'S FOOD: A HISTORY OF FIVE CENTURIES OF ENGLISH DIET* (London: Jonathan Cape, 1958), page 88.

1599

Robert Greene's THE COMICAL HISTORY OF ALPHONSUS, KING OF ARAGON,

COMICAL KING ALPHONSUS

and A PLEASANT CONCEITED COMEDY OF GEORGE A GREEN, THE PINNER OF WAKEFIELD.

GEORGE-A-GREEN

Robert Devereux, 2d Earl of Essex arrived in Ireland with an army, only to find himself outmaneuvered by O'Neill. Soon Queen Elizabeth I would underscore the fact that this unfortunate English leader had not made adequate use of his head by having him beheaded on the green of the Tower of London.



HEADCHOPPING

17TH CENTURY

1600

Lord Mountjoy assumed control of Crown forces, garrisoned Ireland, and destroyed food stocks. O'Neill asked for help from Spain.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1601

The Spanish sent forces to aid the Irish, landing these forces at Kinsale.

Lord Mountjoy besieged the Spanish.

O'Neill and Red Hugh O'Donnell marched the length of [Ireland](#) and besieged Mountjoy.

At the Battle of Kinsale, O'Neill's forces botched their attack and Mountjoy was victorious.

O'Donnell fled to Spain.

1603

July 25, Friday: Queen Elizabeth I having died on March 23rd, on this day [King James VI of Scotland](#) was crowned in



London (he was, not incidentally, alleging his Stuarts to be descended from the King Arthur of British fanelore). In his service [Francis Bacon](#) would flourish. On this day of the new king's coronation Bacon was knighted, becoming Sir Francis. He would rise to become Baron Verulam, Viscount St. Albans and Lord Chancellor of England. His fall would come about in the course of a struggle between King and Parliament. He would be accused of having taken a bribe while a judge, and found guilty as charged. He thus would lose his personal honor, as well as his fortune and his place at court.



By the coronation of James VI of Scotland as [James I, King of England](#) (1603-1625), the idea that the educated, informed, and sometimes conflicting and confused voices of esquires, merchants, lawyers, and

clergymen might be tolerated and even encouraged had received the sanction of decades of experience.



(The portrait above does not reveal a couple of significant things about the person of this scholarly monarch. His tongue was too large for his mouth, and he had some sort of neurological condition in his legs that was causing numerous stumbles, and injuries.)

This monarch would extend and modify the Lieutenant's house at the Tower of London, which had been built in the 1540s and now is referred to as the Queen's House. He would relocate his royal lions to better dens in the west gate barbican. He would come to refer to his kingdom as "Great Britain."

Sir Walter Raleigh, accused of treason against him ("him" = James, not "him" = Arthur), was imprisoned in the Tower. King James's efforts to suppress dissent would alienate many of his citizen-subjects, and then his son, ruling as Charles I, would attempt even greater rigour, reasserting censorship with a comprehensiveness not before experienced in England. Thus, after the English civil war, it would be due not to John Milton's *AEROPAGITICA* but rather to a Hobbesian pragmatism, that the need to inform the general public, if only in a rudimentary manner, would be becoming accepted as an integral part of English politics.

AN INFORMED CITIZENRY

But perhaps at this point we should not be speaking of "a Hobbesian pragmatism," for at this point Master Thomas Hobbes, barely 15 years of age, was just beginning his studies at Magdalen Hall in Oxford:

It is not to be forgotten that before he went to the University,

he had turned [Euripides](#)' *MEDEA* out of Greek into Latin iambics.



[Michael Drayton](#), who had gotten along well with the court of Queen Elizabeth, would address a poem of compliment to James on his accession as King of England — but his effort would be ridiculed and this court would rudely reject his services.

With James Stuart (I and VI) coming to the throne, with a single crown for England and Scotland, with the Treaty of Mellifont in which O'Neill surrendered, with the end of the Elizabethan Wars and the enforcement of English law, with the municipality of Belfast being founded upon the former estate of late Earl of Donegall in order to recover his debts, there began in [Ireland](#), particularly in Ulster, the period of the English encroachment by plantation, which would endure until 1641.

1605

October 26, Wednesday: Lord Monteagle, a Catholic member of parliament, was sitting at supper with friends when a messenger came to the door with a letter. It seems he must have been unsuspecting of this letter's contents, for he had the message read out. The letter, anonymous, contained a quite strange warning which might be translated into an English legible to us now as something like the following:

Therefore, I would advise you as you value your life, to find some excuse not to attend this Parliament. For though there is no sign of any trouble, yet I say, they shall

receive a terrible blow at this Parliament, yet they shall not see who hurts them.

my lord out of the love i beare ~~unto~~ To some of your friends
 i have a care of your preservation therefore i would
 advise you as you tender your life to deliv. some
 excuse to shift of your attendance at this parliament
 for god and man hath concurred to punish the wickednes
 of this time and thinke not slightly of this advertisement
 but retire your self into your countie where you
 may expect the event in justt for the
 apparance of anni stir yet i say they shall receive a terrible
 blowe this parliament and yet they shall not see who
 hurts them this counce is not to be continued because
 it maye do you good and can do you no harme for the
 danger is passed as soon as you have burnt the letter
 and i hope god will give you the grace to make good
 use of it to whose holy protection i commend you

To the right honorable
 the lord mountague

Lord Monteagle would take this interesting document to the chief minister of King James I, Robert Cecil. That would lead to a search of the cellars beneath Westminster. In those cellars would be discovered 36 ninety-pound barrels of black powder, and then would appear on the scene a person who was in London under an assumed name, "Johnson." Under extended torture, this "Johnson," whose name would turn out to be [Guy Fawkes](#), would reveal the identities of other of his Catholic conspirators.

(The letter would turn out to be in the hand of Mrs. Ann Vaux, who had recently been a guest at [Hindlip Hall, Worcestershire](#), and we infer that its contents had been dictated by the heavily pregnant mistress of that hall, Mary Habington, who had gotten wind of the Gunpowder Plot because of the activities of her husband [Sir Thomas Habington](#) and had become concerned for the wellbeing of one particular member of the parliament — her brother Lord Monteagle.)

(This Catholic plot would have great ramifications in the future dealings of England with locations of a large Catholic population, such as for one prime instance [Ireland](#).)





IRELAND

IRELAND

1606

In Scotland, free coalminers and salt-pan workers, who had an unfortunate tendency to abandon their work “upon hope of greater gain” in some more lucrative occupation, were reclassified by the Privy Council as the bond slaves for life of whoever were their current employers. They might be sold as an asset along with the mine or the saltworks as such a facility changed hands, or otherwise disposed of by their owners. In addition, the owners of Scotland’s coal-mine and salt-pan resources were authorized to seek out and seize any Scotsmen who were demonstrably unemployed, whether homeless or not, and without further legal formality to bind them into [slavery](#). In practice, this new status of bond slave for life would work out to be hereditary, and would continue until this practice would, at the end of the 18th Century, cease to be of economical advantage to the owners of Scotland’s coal-mine and salt-pan resources.

Private plantation in Ards by Scots.

IRELAND

1607

“The Flight of the Earls”: The feudal order declined in [Ireland](#) when the Ulster chiefs –101 of them– fled *en masse* to [Rome](#) after being defeated by the English, and then resettled themselves in Spain. The counties of Armagh, Cavan, Coleraine, Donegal, Fermanagh, and Tyrone were declared forfeit and Crown property.

1608

King James I began the clearing from Ulster of [Irish](#) and the moving in of English and Scottish farmers. The Ulster Tenant Rights bill protected these Scots and English, but allowed the eviction of the Irish at any time without any compensation.

1609

Plantation of Ulster implemented; lowland Scots and English arrived.

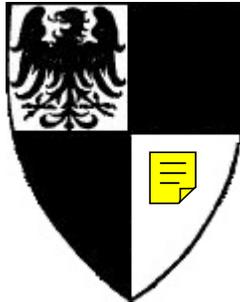
IRELAND

Practically on his deathbed, the [Reverend Alexander Hume](#) roused himself to issue a final appeal to the clergy of the Kirk of Scotland, “Ane afold Admonitioun to the Ministerie of Scotland, be ane deing Brother.” If they relapse into Prelacy this might lead them into, horror of horrors, [Popery](#).

1612

In Ireland, Coleraine county and the municipality of Derry were given to the London Companies to administer and renamed "Londonderry."

December 6: Daniel Gookin had been born, perhaps in County Cork, Ireland, in the latter part of this year, as the 3d son of Daniel Gookin of County Kent and County Cork and Mary (or Mariam) Byrd (or Birde) Gookin of Saffron Walden in Essex, a couple that had been married in Canterbury Cathedral because of the fact that the



bride's father, the Reverend Richard Byrd, DD, was one of the Canons of that Cathedral. On this day the newborn was baptized at the church of St. Augustine-the-Less (which is to say, this was not the Cathedral Church of St Augustine at College Green on the south side of Bristol) in Bristol, Northbourne, County Kent.



Daniel and Mary (Byrd) Gookin had five sons. Richard, the eldest, was born about 1609 and named after his grandfather, Dr. Byrd. At the time of his father's death he was apparently still a member of the paternal household, being described in the administrator's bond as "Richard Gookin of St. Finn Barre, Cork, Gent.," but as he did not serve as one of the administrators it may be that he was engaged in some occupation that made it impracticable. Nothing has been learned about his career, though it is certain that he died before 1655, and fair to presume that he married, since he alone of all the members of the family could have been the father of "John Gookin of St. Dunstan's in the East, London, mariner," concerning whom also nothing is known except that on November 21, 1665, being then a "bachelor aged



about 28," he married "Mrs Francis Pitt of Stepney, widow, aged about 23."

Edward, the second son, who was baptized at Ripple in 1611, died young. Next came Daniel, born toward the end of 1612; then John, who was perhaps the twin brother of Daniel; then a second Edward, probably born in 1615, as he was old enough in April, 1633, to be constituted one of the administrators of his father's estate, yet still a minor, for his mother was appointed his guardian on the same day that the letters of administration were issued. He died, unmarried, before 1655.

It may be that there was also a daughter Mary, born about 1617, for, on July 2, 1635, a marriage license bond for the marriage of "Marie Gowkine" to "Hugh Bullock of London, gentleman" was filed in the City of Cork. It seems more likely, however, that "Mary Gowkine" was Daniel Gookin's widow. If so, the marriage did not take place, for about three weeks later Mary, who appears to have gone to visit the family of her brother-in-law Sir Vincent Gookin, then living at Bitton in Gloucestershire, died and was buried there on July 27, 1635.

Daniel and John, the third and fourth sons of Daniel Gookin, were probably away from home at the time of their father's death. We know that Daniel was at the Marie's Mount plantation as early as 1631, when he was only eighteen, and not unlikely John may have been there with him. John's career was a short one. On October 17, 1636, he was granted 500 acres of land on the Nansemond River in Virginia for transporting ten persons to the colony, and in the course of the next five years he had three additional grants aggregating 1490 acres more. In 1637 or 1638 he was appointed one of the Commissioners for keeping monthly courts in Lower Norfolk, and in 1639 was a Burgess for Upper Norfolk and attended the Grand Assembly that met in James City on January 6. A few days prior to February 4, 1640/1 he married Sarah the relict of Captain Adam Thorowgood of Lynn Haven, Lower Norfolk county. Captain Thorowgood was one of the principal men of the colony. His wife Sarah was the fifth daughter of Robert Offley, Turkey merchant of Grace street, London, whose wife Ann was the daughter of Sir Edward Osborne, Knt., Lord Mayor of London, 1583, by his wife Ann, daughter and sole heir of William Hewitt, Lord Mayor of London, 1559, "a merchant of great repute." Sarah Offley was baptized at St. Benet's April 16, 1609, and was married to Adam Thorowgood at St. Anne's, Blackfriars, July 18, 1627. She bore him a son and three daughters, who were living at the time of her marriage to John Gookin. By her second husband she had one daughter, Mary Gookin, born in 1641 or 1642, who was married about 1660 to Captain William Moseley of Rolleston, Lower Norfolk, and after his death in 1671, became the second wife of Lieut. Colonel Anthony Lawson.

In 1642 John Gookin had the title of Captain, and on March 29, 1643, he was Commander at a court held for Lower Norfolk. He died on November 2, 1643, being then only about thirty years of age. Four years later his widow was married to her third husband, Colonel Francis Yardley, son of Governor Sir George Yardley. She died in August, 1657, and was buried beside John Gookin, at Church Point, Lynn Haven. The tombstone erected to their memory



IRELAND

IRELAND

is the only one now readable of those formerly in the church-yard there, the others having been submerged or destroyed by the incursion of the sea. It bears the inscription:

Here lieth y^e body of Capt John Gooking and also
y^e body of M^{rs} Sarah Yardley, who was wife to
Capt. Adam Thorowgood first, Capt John
Gooking & Collonell Francis Yardley, who
deceased August 1657.

1613

Sir Arthur Chichester summoned Parliament in Dublin.

IRELAND

1614

In this year or the following one, [John Denham](#) was born in Dublin to [Sir John Denham](#), judge and Chief Baron of the Exchequer of [Ireland](#), and his 2d wife Eleanor. He would be educated at Trinity College, Oxford and at Lincoln's Inn in London.

Construction was beginning, on Londonderry's wall.

1615

Parliament dissolved; Chichester recalled to England. First Convocation of Church of [Ireland](#).

1616

By this year the Gookin family was living in Carrigaline, [Ireland](#), where [Daniel Gookin](#) presumably would spend his childhood before being sent to be educated in England.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1617

Londonderry's walls were completed.

IRELAND

1620

November 13, day: [Master Gookin](#) contracted with the Virginia Company for “transportaçon” of “fayr and lardge Cattle and of our English breed” “outt of [Ireland](#) into Virginia” at a rate of “eleven pounds the Heiffer.” The vessel that would be chartered for this expedition was named *The Flyinge Harte*.

IRELAND

IRELAND

1621

Fall: According to [John Smith](#)'s THE GENERALL HISTORIE OF VIRGINIA, NEW-ENGLAND, AND THE SUMMER ISLES, during this season Daniel Gookin, accompanied by his son [Daniel Gookin](#), sailed from [Ireland](#) "with fifty men of his owne and thirty passengers" to establish themselves at Newport News on the Virginia coast.



November 22, day: On the Virginia coast "arrived [Master Gookin](#) out of [Ireland](#), with fiftie men of his owne and thirtie Passengers, exceedingly well furnished with all sorts of Provision and cattle and planted himself at Nupors-Newes. The cotton in a yeare grew so thicke as one's arme, and so high as a man: here anything that is planted doth prosper so well as in no place better." *The Flyinge Harte's* 40 younge Cattle would be well and safely landed. The contracted rate of "eleven pounds the Heiffer" seemed to be enough to generate a profit.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1622

Late April or Early May: Daniel Gookin and his son [Daniel Gookin](#) returned in the *Sea Flower* from their plantation in Virginia to the Virginia Company headquarters in London, and then [Ireland](#).

November: By this point [Daniel Gookin](#) (the elder) was in possession of the castle and lands of Carrigaline, [Ireland](#). His income of approximately £250 per year from this estate in County Cork would have seemed a very comfortable one.

1625

Francis Bacon published his essay "Of Gardens" in which he imagined a princely 30-acre botanical Eden.

King James I died. The botanist John Parkinson had been his Royal Apothecary.



King Charles I (at this point 25 years of age) would rule as "Charles, by the Grace of God, King of England, Scotland France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, etc." (this rule over France was nominal) to his execution for treason in 1649:



Charles would marry a 15-year-old, Henrietta Maria, a sister of King Louis XIII of France, and the royal couple would produce four sons (Charles, who died as a teenager, Charles again, who would become Charles II, James, and Henry) and five daughters (Mary, Elizabeth, Anne, Catherine, and Henrietta Anne). At some point during this year or later, Mary Dyer was able to visit the court at Buckingham Palace (presumably she would have been using the name Marie Barrett), in "a dress worked in many colored silks, with gold and silver thread, the groundwork [of which was] ... rich white satin [and the embroidery of which was] butterflies, flowers, grasshoppers [and] other insects." She would be taking this fancy gown with her to the New World — and according to report some pieces of it are still in the family. (The family also still preserves a gold bodkin bearing the initials MD.)

DYER OR DYRE



IRELAND

IRELAND

1633

Sir Thomas Wentworth was made Lord Deputy.

IRELAND

1634

The Church of [Ireland](#) accepted the Thirty-Nine Articles of the Church of England.

1641

In the British Isles during this year and the next, there was a Gaelic and Old English (Norman) rebellion going on that would become known as the “War of the Three Kingdoms.” King Charles I of England was being refused permission by the Parliament to raise a personal army to combat this rebellion. The King’s policies were creating not only civil war in England but also insurrection in Ulster. This period would eventually be brought to an end, in 1652, when the English colonists of Irish soil would triumph as part of the suppression of [Ireland](#) by the forces of Oliver Cromwell.

According to Bishop [Thomas Percy](#)’s RELIQUES OF ANCIENT ENGLISH POETRY (4th edition, 1794), the words “Lilli-Burlero-Bullen-a-la” were “words of distinction used among the Irish Papists at the time of their massacre of the Protestants in 1641.” Presumably if one was aware of this code phrase, this indicated that one was not lying — that one was truly a fellow Catholic and need not summarily be offed. Later this would become the refrain of a nonsense song satirizing the Earl of Tyrconnel, on the occasion of his going to Ireland during January 1686/1687 as [King James II](#)’s Catholic vicegerent. The ditty would play a major part in rousing anti-Catholic feeling and bringing about the Revolution of 1688. What goes around comes around.

[William Davenant](#), a supporter of the monarchy during this disturbance, was declared guilty of high treason (two years later, after the successful end of the siege at Gloucester, he would be knighted by the king).



IRELAND

IRELAND

1649

After a Royalist uprising leading to a 2d civil war during Summer 1648, [Oliver Cromwell](#) supervised King Charles I's trial and execution. The Commonwealth, in which England was to be governed as a republic, was established and would last until 1660; [Cromwell](#) harshly suppressed Catholic rebellion in [Ireland](#).¹³ Amidst

13. The Puritan prisoner [Samuell More](#) was of course set free by Lord Protector Cromwell. Eventually he would become a Member of Parliament. In his will there would be no mention of the four inconvenient small children whom he had so coldly sent to transportation.



this turmoil Friend [George Fox](#) was preaching:

Abundance was opened concerning these things; how all lay out of the wisdom of God, and out of the righteousness and holiness that man at the first was made in. But as all believe in the Light, and walk in the Light, – that Light with which Christ hath enlightened every man that cometh into the world, – and become children of the Light, and of the day of Christ, all things, visible and invisible, are seen, by the divine Light of Christ, the spiritual heavenly man, by whom all things were created.

Moreover, when I was brought up into His image in righteousness and holiness, and into the paradise of God He let me see how Adam was made a living soul; and also the stature of Christ, the mystery that had been hid from ages and generations: which things are hard to be uttered, and cannot be borne by many. For of all the sects in Christendom (so called) that I discoursed with, I found none who could bear to be told that any should come to Adam's perfection, – into that image of God, that righteousness and holiness, that Adam was in before he fell; to be clean and pure, without sin, as he was. Therefore how shall they be able to bear being told that any shall grow up to the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ, when they cannot bear to hear that any shall come, whilst upon earth, into the same power and Spirit that the prophets and apostles were in? – though it be a certain truth that none can understand their writings aright without the same Spirit by which they were written.

Now the Lord God opened to me by His invisible power that every man was enlightened by the divine Light of Christ, and I saw it shine through all; and that they that believed in it came out of condemnation to the Light of life, and became the children of it; but they that hated it, and did not believe in it were condemned by it, though they made a profession of Christ. This I saw in the pure openings of the Light without the help of any man; neither did I then know where to find it in the Scriptures; though afterwards, searching the Scriptures, I found it. For I saw, in that Light and Spirit which was before the Scriptures were given forth, and which led the holy men of God to give them forth, that all, if they would know God or Christ, or the Scriptures aright, must come to that Spirit by which they that gave them forth were led and taught.

On a certain time, as I was walking in the fields, the Lord said unto me, "Thy name is written in the Lamb's book of life, which was before the foundation of the world": and as the Lord spoke it, I believed, and saw in it the new birth. Some time after the Lord commanded me to go abroad into the world, which was like a briery, thorny wilderness. When I came in the Lord's mighty power with the Word of life into the world, the world swelled and made a noise like the great raging waves of the sea. Priests and professors, magistrates and people, were all like a sea when I came to proclaim the day of the Lord amongst them, and to preach repentance to them.



I was sent to turn people from darkness to the Light, that they might receive Christ Jesus; for to as many as should receive Him in His Light, I saw He would give power to become the sons of God; which power I had obtained by receiving Christ. I was to direct people to the Spirit that gave forth the Scriptures, by which they might be led into all truth, and up to Christ and God, as those had been who gave them forth.

Yet I had no slight esteem of the holy Scriptures. They were very precious to me; for I was in that Spirit by which they were given forth; and what the Lord opened in me I afterwards found was agreeable to them. I could speak much of these things, and many volumes might be written upon them; but all would prove too short to set forth the infinite love, wisdom, and power of God, in preparing, fitting, and furnishing me for the service to which He had appointed me; letting me see the depths of Satan on the one hand, and opening to me, on the other hand, the divine mysteries of His own everlasting kingdom.

When the Lord God and His Son Jesus Christ sent me forth into the world to preach His everlasting gospel and kingdom, I was glad that I was commanded to turn people to that inward Light, Spirit, and Grace, by which all might know their salvation and their way to God; even that Divine Spirit which would lead them into all truth, and which I infallibly knew would never deceive any.

But with and by this divine power and Spirit of God, and the Light of Jesus, I was to bring people off from all their own ways, to Christ, the new and living way; and from their churches, which men had made and gathered, to the Church in God, the general assembly written in heaven, of which Christ is the head. And I was to bring them off from the world's teachers, made by men, to learn of Christ, who is the Way, the Truth, and the Life, of whom the Father said, "This is my beloved Son, hear ye Him"; and off from all the world's worships, to know the Spirit of Truth in the inward parts, and to be led thereby; that in it they might worship the Father of spirits, who seeks such to worship Him. And I saw that they that worshipped not in the Spirit of Truth, knew not what they worshipped.

And I was to bring people off from all the world's religions, which are vain, that they might know the pure religion; might visit the fatherless, the widows, and the strangers, and keep themselves from the spots of the world. Then there would not be so many beggars, the sight of whom often grieved my heart, as it denoted so much hard-heartedness amongst them that professed the name of Christ.

I was to bring them off from all the world's fellowships, and prayings, and singings, which stood in forms without power; that their fellowship might be in the Holy Ghost, and in the Eternal Spirit of God; that they might pray in the Holy Ghost, and sing in the Spirit and with the grace that comes by Jesus; making melody in their hearts to the Lord, who hath sent His beloved Son to be their Saviour, and hath caused His heavenly sun to shine upon all the world, and His heavenly rain to fall upon the just and the unjust, as His outward rain doth fall, and His outward sun doth shine on all.



I was to bring people off from Jewish ceremonies, and from heathenish fables, and from men's inventions and worldly doctrines, by which they blew the people about this way and the other, from sect to sect; and from all their beggarly rudiments, with their schools and colleges for making ministers of Christ, – who are indeed ministers of their own making, but not of Christ's; and from all their images, and crosses, and sprinkling of infants, with all their holy-days (so called), and all their vain traditions, which they had instituted since the Apostles' days, against all of which the Lord's power was set: in the dread and authority of which power I was moved to declare against them all, and against all that preached and not freely, as being such as had not received freely from Christ.

Moreover, when the Lord sent me forth into the world, He forbade me to put off my hat to any, high or low; and I was required to Thee and Thou all men and women, without any respect to rich or poor, great or small. And as I travelled up and down I was not to bid people Good morrow, or Good evening; neither might I bow or scrape with my leg to any one; and this made the sects and professions to rage. But the Lord's power carried me over all to His glory, and many came to be turned to God in a little time; for the heavenly day of the Lord sprung from on high, and broke forth apace, by the light of which many came to see where they were.

Oh, the blows, punchings, beatings, and imprisonments that we underwent for not putting off our hats to men! Some had their hats violently plucked off and thrown away, so that they quite lost them. The bad language and evil usage we received on this account are hard to be expressed, besides the danger we were sometimes in of losing our lives for this matter; and that by the great professors of Christianity, who thereby discovered they were not true believers.

And though it was but a small thing in the eye of man, yet a wonderful confusion it brought among all professors and priests; but, blessed be the Lord, many came to see the vanity of that custom of putting off the hat to men, and felt the weight of Truth's testimony against it.

About this time I was sorely exercised in going to their courts to cry for justice, in speaking and writing to judges and justices to do justly; in warning such as kept public houses for entertainment that they should not let people have more drink than would do them good; in testifying against wakes, feasts, May-games, sports, plays, and shows, which trained up people to vanity and looseness, and led them from the fear of God; and the days set forth for holidays were usually the times wherein they most dishonoured God by these things.

In fairs, also, and in markets, I was made to declare against their deceitful merchandise, cheating, and cozening; warning all to deal justly, to speak the truth, to let their yea be yea, and their nay be nay, and to do unto others as they would have others do unto them; forewarning them of the great and terrible day of the Lord, which would come upon them all.



IRELAND

IRELAND

I was moved, also, to cry against all sorts of music, and against the mountebanks playing tricks on their stages; for they burthened the pure life, and stirred up people's minds to vanity. I was much exercised, too, with school-masters and school-mistresses, warning them to teach children sobriety in the fear of the Lord, that they might not be nursed and trained up in lightness, vanity, and wantonness. I was made to warn masters and mistresses, fathers and mothers in private families, to take care that their children and servants might be trained up in the fear of the Lord, and that themselves should be therein examples and patterns of sobriety and virtue to them.

The earthly spirit of the priests wounded my life; and when I heard the bell toll to call people together to the steeple-house, it struck at my life; for it was just like a market-bell, to gather people together, that the priest might set forth his ware for sale. Oh, the vast sums of money that are gotten by the trade they make of selling the Scriptures, and by their preaching, from the highest bishop to the lowest priest! What one trade else in the world is comparable to it? notwithstanding the Scriptures were given forth freely, and Christ commanded His ministers to preach freely, and the prophets and apostles denounced judgment against all covetous hirelings and diviners for money.

But in this free Spirit of the Lord Jesus was I sent forth to declare the Word of life and reconciliation freely, that all might come to Christ, who gives freely, and who renews up into the image of God, which man and woman were in before they fell, that they might sit down in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.

FOX'S JOURNAL

George Fox

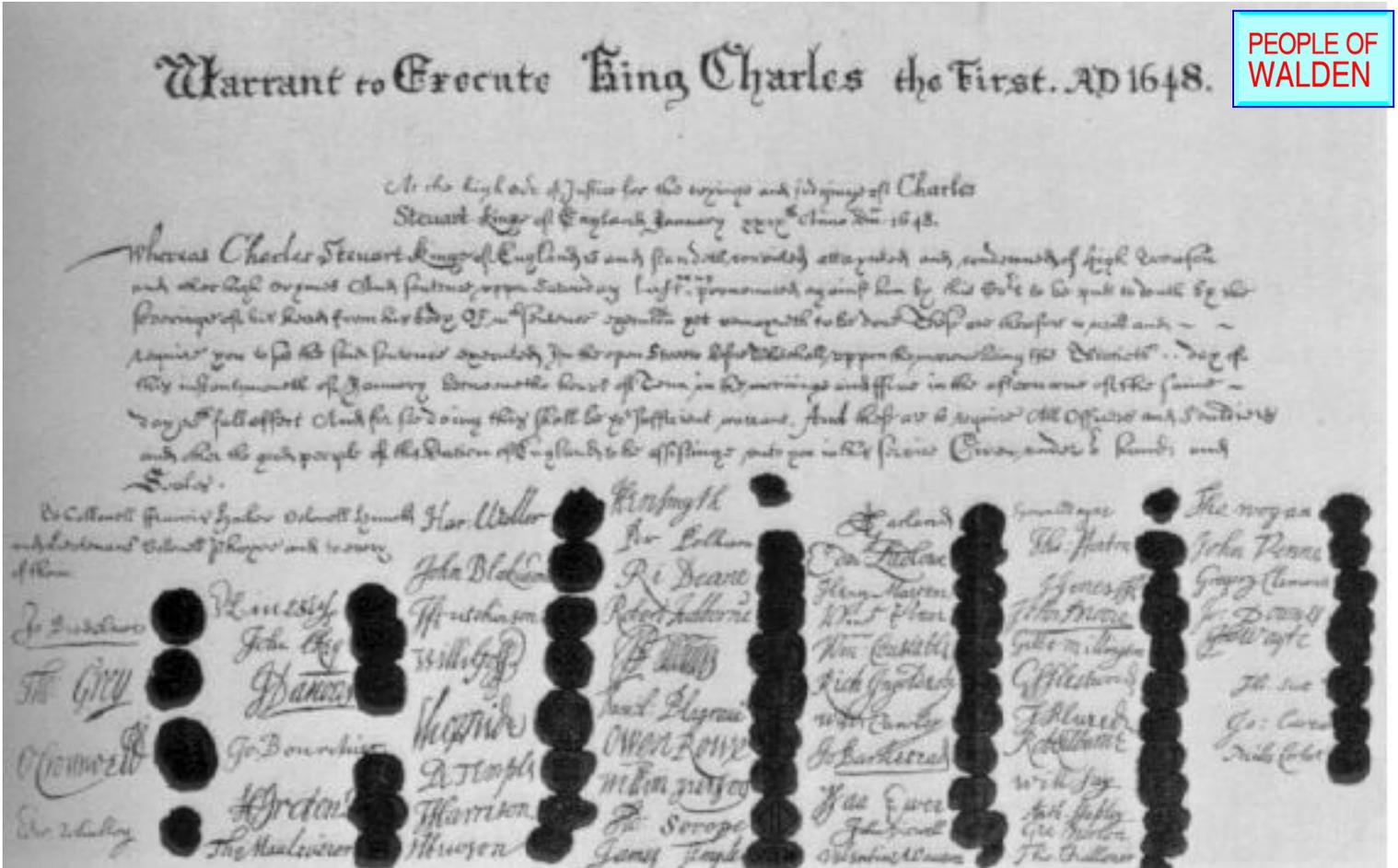


IRELAND

IRELAND

January 29: [Major-General William Goffe](#) of [Oliver Cromwell](#)'s army, and his father-in-law [Edward Whalley](#), as members of that government's High Court of Commission, had been selected by the minority of the Long Parliament for the trial and condemnation of his Majesty, King Charles I of England. On the death-warrant of

the monarch Goffe's signature stands 3d and Whalley's signature 4th.



WALDEN: I have occasional visits in the long winter evenings, when the snow falls fast and the wind howls in the wood, from an old settler and original proprietor, who is reported to have dug Walden Pond, and stoned it, and fringed it with pine woods; who tells me stories of old time and of new eternity; and between us we manage to pass a cheerful evening with social mirth and pleasant views of things, even without apples or cider, - a most wise and humorous friend, whom I love much, who keeps himself more secret than ever did Goffe or Whalley; and though he is thought to be dead, none can show where he is buried. An elderly dame, too, dwells in my neighborhood, invisible to most persons, in whose odorous herb garden I love to stroll sometimes, gathering simples and listening to her fables; for she has a genius of unequalled fertility, and her memory runs back farther than mythology, and she can tell me the original of every fable, and on what fact every one is founded, for the incidents occurred when she was young. A ruddy and lusty old dame, who delights in all weathers and seasons, and is likely to outlive all her children yet.

MAJOR-GENERAL WILLIAM GOFFE
LT.-GENERAL EDWARD WHALLEY

Given the doctrine of the divine right of kings, and given that we are the sort of people that we are, the demise of this monarch would of course instantly inspire a cult of the martyr:

REGICIDE



[next screen]



Per a [Guardian](#) (London) article for January 29, 1999:

The king was executed 350 years ago tomorrow.
Now we are once again in the throes of constitutional change.
David Walker wonders if the turbulence of the Civil War period
offers Tony Blair a history lesson

When the restored monarch “came into his own again” his followers wreaked vengeance on the readiest symbol of that extraordinary man who had risen by sheer force of self-belief to rule England, ravage Ireland and repress Scotland.

The royalists disinterred [Oliver Cromwell's](#) body, dismembered it and set his head on a pole outside Westminster Hall, where it remained a curiosity to passers-by ([Samuel Pepys](#) tells us) for many years.

The new king, Charles II, was wiser than his father, he died in his bed in his palace. Charles I had mounted the scaffold on that January day in 1649, condemned to death by a parliamentary commission cowed by Cromwell's “vehement importunity.” His address outside the banqueting hall in Whitehall—now a fixture on the London tourist run—barely carried beyond the serried ranks Cromwell and his generals had made into a fighting force of a quality England had never seen before. (Some historians say the very point of Cromwell was to effect military modernisation, a central problem in the reign of Charles I having been England's martial inadequacies.)¹⁴

The king's words passed to posterity, explaining both the necessity and the incompleteness of the revolution which had overthrown him. As a contemporary record put it “he did not believe the happiness of the people lay in sharing government, subject and sovereign being clean different. And if he should have given way to an arbitrary government, and to have all laws changed according to the sword, he needed not to have suffered, and so said he was a martyr for the people.”¹⁵

Those two principles emerge clear from the welter of events from the 1630s through to the Glorious Revolution in 1688 when the martyr's other son, [James II's](#), poisoned by exile and religious dogmatism, was chased to Portsmouth and exile. The happiness of the English people (and, later, the Scots and Welsh though not the Irish) did permanently lie in sharing government with executive authority. The amount of power retained by the monarchy within the system remained subject to dispute—revisionist historians tell us the Georges in the 18th century were more involved in running the country than we used to think and George VI's biographer, Robert Rhodes James, has recently chronicled his attempts to butt in during the 1940s.

But the principle of power sharing was established, first within a landowner dominated cabal then more broadly with a parliament claiming to represent the property-owning nation (The name of that nation is a problem. “Britain” was created during the 18th century, Linda Colley has argued, and may now be crumbling.)

14. Mark Kishlansky, A MONARCHY TRANSFORMED, BRITAIN 1603-1714, Allen Lane, 1996

15. Godfrey Davies, THE EARLY STUARTS, Oxford 1959 quoting [Moderate Intelligencer](#), February 8, 1648/9



The Explanation of the EMBLEME.

Ponderibus genus omne mali, probrisq; gravatus,
Vixq; ferenda ferens, Palma ut Depressa, resurgo.

Ac, velut undarum Fluctus Ventiq;, furorom
Irati Populi Rupes immota repello.
Clarior è tenebris, caelestis Stella, corusco,
Victor et aeternum-felici face triumpho.

Suro Fulgentem rutilo gemmisq; micantem,
At curis Gravidam spernendo calco Coronam.

Spinolam, at ferri facilem, quo Spes mea, Christi
Auxilio, Nobis non est tractare molestum.

Aeternam, fixis fidei, sempiternq; beatam
In Coelos oculis Specto, Nobisq; paratam.

Quod Vanum est, sperno: quod Christi Gratia faceret
Amplius studium est: Virtutis Gloria merces.

To Xī δὲ ἐν ἡδίστης τῆς πόλεως, δὲ τὸ Κάτωρα.

Though clogg'd with weights of miseries
Palm-like Depress'd, I higher rise.

And as th' unmoved Rock out-braves
The boistrous Windes and raging waves:
So triumph I. And shine more bright
In sad Affliction's Darksom night.

That Splendid, but yet toilsom Crown
Regardlessly I trample down.

With joie I take this Crown of thorn,
Though sharp, yet easie to be born.

That heav'nlic Crown, already mine,
I view with eyes of Faith divine.

I slight vain things; and do embrace
Glorie, the just reward of Grace.

G. D.



Power sharing through universal suffrage had to wait until 1948.

The king's second principle, of opposition to "arbitrary government," has also permanently lodged in the myths and sentiments of the inhabitants of the British Isles and their descendants. We know (thank you Lord Hoffmann) that the decisions of judges in courts can be arbitrary, but since the Civil War there has grown up a great faith in due process and procedure. Carried across the Atlantic the principle is being demonstrated this week in those peculiar and hollow but also impressively grave proceedings in the Senate of the United States.

Here in Britain it is displayed, perhaps to excess, in the way we conduct the public business: it's OK for Jack Cunningham to ride on Concorde as long as he takes the trouble to run the trip past his permanent secretary (answerable according to procedure as accounting officer) as the unwritten rules say he should. The rules do remain unwritten. A problem Oliver Cromwell encountered when he assumed the mantle of Protector while still seeking to govern through a representative parliament was the lack of a settled constitution. His problem remains ours: at the heart of the Blair programme is a promise that things –relationships, rights, responsibilities– will have to be written down, so we all know just what the rules are.

Yet it's thanks to the Stuarts and Oliver Cromwell that the English, Scots and Welsh developed (the Irish were not allowed to) an aversion to the arbitrariness represented by armed troops riding through the streets. It's the reason why the "massacre" of Peterloo in 1819 became a Victorian radical's touchstone and why military deployment against strikers at Tonypandy before the first world war still rings somewhere in the popular consciousness. British martial spirit is highly valued as long as it is exercised abroad or confined to barracks.

This season's anniversaries (it's also 400 years since the birth of Cromwell) have attracted extra attention for two reasons. One is devolution and the focus it brings to the peculiar make-up of the United Kingdom. Some right wing commentators have ingeniously tried to blame him for the fact the Scots voted in Tony Blair's referendum for a measure of self-government, forgetting that it was the revolt of some Scots against Charles I which lit one of the powder trails to the Civil War.

It's a selective memory, too, which remembers Cromwell's military campaign in Ireland, the massacre at Drogheda and all that, but fails to see the lines of continuity in English policy towards Ireland which, before Cromwell, had sent Charles I's favourite Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford across the Irish Sea to "pacify" — one of his most successful officers was William Rainsborough, kinsman of Thomas, Tony Benn's great exemplar, the Cromwellian colonel who sided with the 17th century's proto-communist Levellers to declare that "the poorest he in England hath a life to live as the greatest he."

Why Cromwell remains such a fascinating figure is that it is very difficult to skewer him on any contemporary left-right spectrum. God's Englishman he was but hard for would-be English nationalists to stomach because he was a regicide. He killed the king in the people's name and that should endear him to the left (as it usually did in the Victorian era when Cromwell was a significant reference point in politics).

But Cromwell had left his home in Huntingdon to raise a troop of horse-soldiers partly in defence of private property, threatened by King Charles's despotic powers of taxation and confiscation — a good right wing cause. Of course Cromwell is now deeply strange for us. Britain may still vestigially be protestant.

The rising against the Stuarts produced an act of succession to the crown which still excludes Roman Catholics; Prince Charles would not last night have been stepping out with Camilla if she acknowledged the Pope. But we are now light years away from the world of Christian faith in which Cromwell could say: "One beam in a dark place hath exceeding much refreshment in it. Blessed be His name for shining upon so dark a heart as mine."¹⁶

And yet there is still strong contemporary resonance in the continuous constitutional debate of those years in the middle of the 17th century. The other reason for attending to the anniversaries is that we, too, are in the throes of changing the way we are governed. New Labour's programme of modernisation (a word unknown in the 17th century when the talk was much more of cleaving to ancient models) embraces the House of Lords, methods of election, the institutionalisation of human rights, devolution and, potentially, monetary integration with the rest of Europe. But is there really anything to learn from that far-off era?

Analogies from the 17th century are seductive. It's the attractiveness of the language of Milton, Jonson and Fox. But they are deeply foreign to us now. Their distance is marked by their sense, shown in Charles as much as Cromwell, that they walked daily in or near the company of a god whose latter-day conversation partners are few. Right-wingers and conservatives might say the lesson of history has to do with the difficulty of changing constitutional arrangements. They might cite those words of Charles on the scaffold and the paradox of a strong executive (which Tony Blair personifies) imposing new arrangements from above, running the risk of using power arbitrarily and stifling dissent. Left wingers and radicals have to be Cromwellian at least in agreeing that unless there is a large popular element in government it is destined to fall into despotism and unfreedom.

A generation ago the history of the 17th century was taught almost with the constitutional bits left out. Social and economic historians were all the rage and great works such as J.R. Tanner's *ENGLISH CONSTITUTIONAL CONFLICTS OF THE 17TH CENTURY* gathered dust on the shelves: everyone read Christopher Hill and Lawrence Stone and Hugh Trevor-Roper arguing about the rise of the gentry and the dissolution of the aristocracy. Recently, the political historians have made a come back and a new synthesis may be emerging. It's based on a proposition Tony Blair and colleagues should note.

One reason why constitutional debate 350 years ago was injected with such passion was because it took place within a context of social change, in an opening society where a rustic squire called Cromwell could become a power in parliament. The other day Tony Blair talked of re-modelling Britain as a middle-class society, where everyone could aspire to the bourgeois version of the good life. What is missing from his

16. R.H. Tawney, *RELIGION AND THE RISE OF CAPITALISM*, Penguin 1937 quoting from Carlyle's edition of Cromwell's letters

constitutional proposals is a link to that social vision. Perhaps that's because the new middle classes are politically satiated.

What's absent in comparison with the past is anger, the drive for changing the way we are governed because of a sense of oppression and injustice. Lord Cranborne is a lot less dangerous than the nobles around Charles I. Advocates of constitutional change don't have much sociology going for them, there's little sign of forces hungry for Lords reform or proportional representation.¹⁷ Tory eccentric William Rees-Mogg wrote the other day about our need for a new Cromwell to keep a lid on the turbulence swirling around. In fact when it comes to institutional reform Tony Blair's problem is the passivity and comfortableness of the majority — except in Scotland and Ireland.

For the first and last time in British history, a Parliament put a monarch on trial, found him guilty of high treason — and on the following day would execute him.

Throughout the 18th century, the BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER would be prescribing a form of service for the commemoration of this event (as it also did in regard to the giving of thanks for the frustration of the Gunpowder Plot, and for the celebration of the Restoration annually on May 29th).



The running header for the text reads “King Charles the Martyr,” not, as so many Royalists have faithfully averred, “Saint Charles the Martyr.” Sainthood requires miracles, and the only miracle Charles I ever performed was making his supper disappear. However, this sort of wretched excess would not finally be elided from the BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER until it had long since ceased to be used except by particularly bloodthirsty Royalists.

17. Robert Hazell, CONSTITUTIONAL FUTURES, Oxford 1999



The creation of a saint (and there are a total of 5 churches in England dedicated to King Charles I the Martyr, one of which is at Falmouth in Cornwall) in these rubrics may now seem strange. Without pushing the comparison too hard, the same process may be observed today in the American Episcopal Church, in the forms of commemorations now used to honor the Reverend Dr. [Martin Luther King, Jr.](#), which show the same progress toward what appears almost to amount to a canonization.

The King's execution (referring now to Charles, rather than Martin) is still commemorated each January 30th by a procession to Le Sueur's equestrian statue at the top of Whitehall (from whence all distances in England are ever to be measured), at which venue a commemorative service is held. From the 1752 version of the BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER, here are some elements of that prescribed service, headed:

A FORM of PRAYER and FASTING, to be used Yearly upon the Thirtieth of *January*, being the Day of the Martyrdom of the Blessed King *Charles* the First: To implore the mercy of God, that neither the Guilt of that sacred and innocent Blood, nor those other Sins, by which God was provoked to deliver up both us and our King into the hands of cruel and unreasonable men, may at any time hereafter be visited upon us, or our Posterity.

There then follow orders both for morning and evening prayer and for communion.

Morning Prayer opens with three scriptural sentences (DANIEL 9:9-10, JEREMIAH 10:24, and PSALM 143, v2).

The *Venite* is then replaced by thirty verses selected from the PSALMS, NEHEMIAH, LAMENTATIONS, GENESIS, the BOOK OF WISDOM, DEUTERONOMY, and REVELATION, ordained to be recited as a responsorial psalm between priest on the one hand and clerk and people on the other. Then follow PSALMS 9, 10 and 11; then follow 2 SAMUEL 1 and MATTHEW 27.

The first collect at morning prayer was then replaced with the two following collects:

O most mighty God, terrible in thy judgments, and wonderful in thy doings towards the children of men; who in thy heavy displeasure didst suffer the life of our gracious Sovereign King *Charles* the First to be (as) this Day taken away by the hands of cruel and bloody men: We thy sinful creatures here assembled before thee, do, in the behalf of all the people of this land, humbly confess, that they were the crying sins of this Nation, which brought down this heavy judgment upon us. But, O gracious God, when thou makest inquisition for blood, lay not the guilt of this innocent blood (the shedding whereof nothing but the blood of thy Son can expiate) - lay it not to the charge of the people of this land; nor let it ever be required of us, or our posterity. Be merciful, O Lord, be merciful unto thy people, whom thou hast redeemed; and be not angry with us for ever: But pardon us for thy mercies sake, through the merits of thy Son Jesus Christ our Lord. *Amen.*

Blessed Lord, in whose sight the death of thy Saints is precious; We magnify thy Name for thine abundant grace bestowed upon our martyred Sovereign; by which he was enabled so cheerfully to follow the steps of his blessed Master and Saviour, in a constant meek suffering of all barbarous indignities, and at last resisting unto blood; and even then, according to the same pattern, praying for his murderers. Let his memory, O Lord, be ever blessed among us; that we may follow the example of his courage and constancy, his meekness and patience, and great charity. And grant that this our land may be freed from the vengeance of his righteous blood, and thy mercy glorified in the forgiveness of our sins: and all for Jesus Christ his sake, our



only Mediator and Advocate. *Amen.*

To emphasize the penitential nature of the service, the Great Litany was then ordered always to be used, and three more collects followed, seeking forgiveness for sins.

The order for the communion service prescribed the two collects given above. The choice of lessons is particularly interesting: the epistle is I PETER 2:13-23, starting “Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake, whether it be to the King, as supreme; or unto governors...,” and the gospel is MATTHEW 21:33-42, the parable of the husbandmen and the vineyard who slew even the owner’s son. On this day the sermon was to be replaced by a reading of the 1st and 2nd parts of the Homily against Disobedience and wilful Rebellion “set forth by Authority.” Two more special collects then follow, of which the first seems particularly interesting:

O Lord, our heavenly Father, who didst not punish us as our sins have deserved, but hast in the midst of judgment remembered mercy; We acknowledge it thine especial favour, that though for our many and great provocations, thou didst suffer thine anointed, blessed King *Charles* the first (as on this day) to fall into the hands of violent and blood-thirsty men, and barbarously to be murdered by them; yet thou didst not leave us for ever, as sheep without a shepherd, but by thy gracious providence did miraculously preserve the undoubted Heir of his Crowns, our then gracious Sovereign King *Charles* the second, from his bloody enemies, hiding him under the shadow of thy wings, until their tyranny was overpast; and didst bring him back, in thy good appointed time, to sit upon the throne of his Father; and together with the Royal Family didst restore to us our ancient Government in Church and State. For these thy great and unspeakable mercies we render to thee our most humble and unfeigned thanks; beseeching thee still to continue thy gracious protection over the whole Royal Family, and to grant to our gracious Sovereign King *GEORGE*, a long and happy Reign over us: So we that are thy people, will give thee thanks for ever, and will always be shewing forth thy praise from generation to generation, through Jesus Christ our Lord and Saviour. *Amen.*

For the Evening Prayer, the responsorial reading prescribed for Morning Prayer was to be repeated. The proper psalms were 79, 94 and 85, the proper lessons were JEREMIAH 12 (or DANIEL 9:1-22), HEBREWS 11:32 and HEBREWS 12:1-7. The first collect of Evensong was to be replaced by two special ones, and the final Evensong collect “Lighten our darkness...” was to be followed by the three additional collects prescribed for morning prayer and one other prayer to follow the Prayer of St. Chrysostom.

The collects for Evening Prayer was perhaps the most interesting of all, to those of us who find this sort of thing interesting, as it completed a sense of movement towards catharsis from the effects of the King’s execution:

O Almighty Lord God, who by thy wisdom not only guidest, and orderest all things most suitably to thine own justice; but also performest thy pleasure in such a manner, that we cannot but acknowledge thee to be righteous in all thy ways, and holy in all thy works: We thy sinful people do here fall down before thee, confessing that thy judgments were right, in permitting cruel men, sons of Belial (as on this day) to imbrue their hands in the blood of thine Anointed; We having drawn down the same upon ourselves, by the great and long provocations of our sins against thee. For which we do therefore here humble ourselves



before thee; beseeching thee to deliver this Nation from blood-guiltiness (that of this day especially) and to turn from us and our posterity all those judgments which we by our sins have worthily deserved: Grant this, for the all-sufficient merits of this Son our Saviour Jesus Christ. *Amen.*

Blessed God, just and powerful, who didst permit thy dear Servant, our dread Sovereign King *Charles* the First, to be (as upon this day) given up to the violent outrages of wicked men, to be despitefully used, and at the last murdered by them: Though we cannot reflect upon so foul an act, but with horror and astonishment; yet we do most gratefully commemorate the glories of thy grace, which then shined forth in thine Anointed; whom thou wast pleased, even at the hour of death, to endue with an eminent measure of exemplary patience, meekness, and charity, before the face of his cruel enemies. And albeit thou didst suffer them to proceed to such a height of violence, as to kill him, and to take possession of his throne; yet didst thou in great mercy preserve his Son, whose right it was, and at length by a wonderful providence bring him back, and set him thereon, to restore thy true Religion, and to settle peace amongst us: For these thy great Mercies we glorify thy Name, through Jesus Christ our blessed Saviour. *Amen.*

Such over-the-top commemoration would be elided from the BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER in 1859 on the grounds that it had not been generally observed for some years. According to D.H. Farmer's OXFORD DICTIONARY OF SAINTS (Oxford UP, 1978), 421, the commemoration on January 30th was squelched by request of Queen Victoria.

One of Swift's extant sermons dealt with the royal martyr. In it the preacher was warning the congregation against "running into either extreme of two bad opinions, with relation to obedience ... some would allow them [kings] an equal power with God ... on the other side, some look upon kings as answerable for every mistake or omission in government, and bound to comply with the most unreasonable demands of an unquiet faction ... between these two extremes, it is easy ... to choose a middle; to be good and loyal subjects, yet according to your power, faithful assertors of your religion and liberties." But Swift would be far from the only major writer to pen a 30th-of-January sermon. Refer, for instance, to the Samuel Johnson one to be found in Volume XIV of the Yale edition (Sermon 23). Johnson characterized the Parliamentarians and Puritans them as a "faction" that, having grown impatient of "obedience" to civil and ecclesiastical governours, establishing its power by a "murder of the most atrocious kind, deliberate, contumelious, and cruel." Among his hymns written for the liturgy of the Church of England, Christopher Smart included an odd one for the commemoration of the royal martyr:

The persecutor was redeemed
And preach'd the name he had blasphem'd;
But, ah! tho' worded for the best,
How subtle men his writings wrest.
Hence heresies and sects arose
According to the saint they chose,
All against Christ alike — but all
Of some distorted text of Paul.
Had not such reas'ners been at strife,
With Christ's good doctrine and his life,
The land of God's selected sheep
Had 'scap'd this day to fast and weep.
Ah great unfortunate, the chief
Of monarchs in the tale of grief,
By marriage ill-advised, akin
To Moab and the man of sin!

When Christ was spitted on and slain,
 The temple rent her veil in twain;
 And in the hour that Charles was cast
 The church had well night groan'd its last.
 But now aloft her head she bears,
 Accepted in his dying pray'rs; —
 Great acts in human annals shine —
 Great sufferings claim applause divine.

King Charles was tried for treason against the newly sovereign people of England not so much because he defied the law, or taxed them without their consent, but because in the end he was making war on them. The regicides who fled to Connecticut are now commemorated on New Haven green — the younger [Sir Henry Vane](#), the [regicide](#) who came to Parliament from the post of Governor of the Massachusetts Bay colony — Hugh Peter, the pastor of Salem who offered cold comfort and a final prayer for Charles on the scaffold — John Milton (whom King Charles II had the wit to pardon). — And their attentive disciple John Adams.

January 31: King Charles I of England and Scotland having been executed, a Commonwealth was established under [Oliver Cromwell](#) — there was Glorious Revolution and a good time was being had by almost all those who had managed to survive the fights so far.¹⁸



This verse on the event is from Andrew Marvell's "An Horatian Ode upon Cromwell's Return from [Ireland](#)":

He nothing common did or mean
 Upon that memorable scene,
 But with his keener eye
 The axe's edge did try;
 Nor call'd the gods with vulgar spite
 To vindicate his helpless right,
 But bowed his comely head
 Down as upon a bed.



18. A couple of centuries later, the family of Sir Henry Halford would have on its table a peculiar [salt](#)-cellar. It was a human vertebra set in gold and it was flat on one side. When Queen Victoria learned of this, she instructed that the curiosity was to be interred in the tomb of Charles I. (Those of us who are interested in this sort of thing would be interested to learn whether, when this object was placed inside the tomb, it was placed there full of salt, or emptied of salt.)



The crowd was being kept well back by soldiers wary of any rescue attempt. A young spectator quoted in *THE DIARIES AND LETTERS OF PHILIP HENRY, 1631-96* (ed. Matthew Henry Lee), attempted to describe the reaction as the severed head of the former monarch was held aloft: “‘The blow I saw give,’ said a young spectator, ‘and can truly say with a sad heart, at the instant whereof I remember well, there was such a grone [*sic*] by the thousands then present as I have never heard [*sic*] before, and desire it [*sic*] may never hear again.’” The troops would waste no time in clearing Whitehall of these witnesses.

WALDEN: For my part, I could easily do without the post-office. I think that there are very few important communications made through it. To speak critically, I never received more than one or two letters in my life -I wrote this some years ago- that were worth the postage. The penny-post is, commonly, an institution through which you seriously offer a man that penny for his thoughts which is so often safely offered in jest. And I am sure that I never read any memorable news in a newspaper. If we read of one man robbed, or murdered, or killed by accident, or one house burned, or one vessel wrecked, or one steamboat blown up, or one cow run over on the Western Railroad, or one mad dog killed, or one lot of grasshoppers in the winter, -we never need read of another. One is enough. If you are acquainted with the principle, what do you care for a myriad instances and applications? To a philosopher all news, as it is called, is gossip, and they who edit and read it are old women over their tea. Yet not a few are greedy after this gossip. There was such a rush, as I hear, the other day at one of the offices to learn the foreign news by the last arrival, that several large squares of plate glass belonging to the establishment were broken by the pressure, -news which I seriously think a ready wit might write a twelvemonth or twelve years beforehand with sufficient accuracy. As for Spain, for instance, if you know how to throw in Don Carlos and the Infanta, and Don Pedro and Seville and Granada, from time to time in the right proportions, -they may have changed the names a little since I saw the papers,- and serve up a bull-fight when other entertainments fail, it will be true to the letter, and give us as good an idea of the exact state or ruin of things in Spain as the most succinct and lucid reports under this head in the newspapers; and as for England, almost the last significant scrap of news from that quarter was the revolution of 1649; and if you have learned the history of her crops for an average year, you never need attend to that thing again, unless your speculations are of a merely pecuniary character. If one may judge who rarely looks into the newspapers, nothing new does ever happen in foreign parts, a French revolution not excepted.

What follows is a couple of “takes” on the character of this beheaded monarch, by Clarendon and by Sir Philip Warwick:

By CLARENDON.

The severall unhearde of insolencies which this excellent Prince was forced to submit to, at the other tymes he was brought before that odious judicatory, his Majesticke behaviour under



so much insolence, and resolute insistinge upon his owne dignity, and defendinge it by manifest authorities in the lawe, as well as by the cleerest deductions from reason, the pronouncinge that horrible sentence upon the most innocent person in the worlde, the execution of that sentence by the most execrable murther that ever was committed, since that of our blessed Savyour, and the circumstances therof, the application and interposition that was used by some noble persons to prævent that wofull murther, and the hypocrisy with which that interposition was deluded, the Saintlike behaviour of that blessed Martir, and his Christian courage and patience at his death, are all particulars so well knowne, and have bene so much enlarged upon in treatises peculiarly applyed to that purpose, that the farther mentioninge it in this place, would but afflict and grieve the reader, and make the relation itselfe odious; and therefore no more shall be sayd heare of that lamentable Tragedy, so much to the dishonour of the Nation, and the religion professed by it; but it will not be unnecessary to add the shorte character of his person, that posterity may know the inestimable losse which the nation then underwent in beinge deprived of a Prince whose example would have had a greater influence upon the manners and piety of the nation, then the most stricte lawes can have.

To speake first of his private qualifications as a man, before the mention of his princely and royall virtues, He was, if ever any, the most worthy of the title of an honest man; so greate a lover of justice, that no temptation could dispose him to a wrongfull action, except it were so disguysed to him, that he believed it to be just; he had a tendernes and compassion of nature, which restrayned him from ever doinge a hard hearted thinge, and therefore he was so apt to grant pardon to Malefactors, that his Judges represented to him the damage and insecurity to the publike that flowed from such his indulgence, and then he restrayned himselfe from pardoninge ether murders or highway robberyes, and quickly decerned the fruits of his severity, by a wouderfull reformation of those enormities. He was very punctuall and regular in his devotions, so that he was never knowne to enter upon his recreations or sportes, though never so early in the morninge, before he had bene at publike prayers, so that on huntinge dayes, his Chaplynes were bounde to a very early attendance, and he was likewise very stricte in observinge the howres of his private cabbinnett devotions, and was so seveare an exactor of gravity and reverence in all mention of religion, that he could never indure any light or prophane worde in religion, with what sharpnesse of witt so ever it was cover'd; and though he was well pleased and delighted with readinge verses made upon any occasyon, no man durst bringe before him any thinge that was prophane or uncleane, that kinde of witt had never any countenance then. He was so greate an example of conjugall affection, that they who did not imitate him in that particular, did not bragge of ther liberty, and he did not only permitt but directe his Bishopps to prosecute those skandalous vices, in the Ecclesiasticall Courtes, against persons of eminence, and neere relation to his service.



His kingly virtues had some mixture and alloy that hindered them from shining in full lustre, and from producing those fruits they should have bene attended with; he was not in his nature bountifull, though he gave very much, which appeared more after the Duke of Buckingham's death, after which those showers fell very rarely, and he paused to long in giving, which made those to whom he gave lesse sensible of the benefitt. He kept state to the full, which made his Courte very orderly, no man prsuminge to be seene in a place wher he had no pretence to be; he saw and observed men longe, before he received any about his person, and did not love strangers, nor very confident men. He was a patient hearer of causes, which he frequently accustomed himselfe to, at the Councill Board, and judged very well, and was dextrous in the mediating parte, so that he often putt an end to causes by perswasion, which the stubbornesse of mens humours made delatory in courts of justice. He was very fearelesse in his person, but not enterpryze, and had an excellent understandinge, but was not confident enough of it: which made him often tymes chaunge his owne opinion for a worse, and follow the advice of a man, that did not judge so well as himselfe: and this made him more irresolute, then the conjuncture of his affayres would admitt: If he had bene of a rougher and more imperious nature, he would have founde more respecte and duty, and his not applyinge some severa cures, to approachinge evils, proceeded from the lenity of his nature, and the tendernesse of his conscience, which in all cases of bloode, made him choose the softer way, and not hearken to severa counsell how reasonably soever urged. This only restrayned him from pursuinge his advantage in the first Scotts expedition, when humanely speakinge, he might have reduced that Nation to the most slavish obedyence that could have bene wished, but no man can say, he had then many who advized him to it, but the contrary, by a wouderfull indisposition all his Councill had to fightinge, or any other fatigue. He was alwayes an immoderate lover of the Scottish nation, havinge not only bene borne ther, but educated by that people and besiedged by them alwayes, havinge few English aboute him till he was kinge, and the major number of his servants beinge still of those, who he thought could never fayle him, and then no man had such an ascendent over him, by the lowest and humblest insinuations, as Duke Hambleton had.

As he excelled in all other virtues, so in temperance he was so stricte that he abhorred all deboshry to that degree, that at a greate festivall solemnity wher he once was, when very many of the nobility of the English and Scotts were entertayned, he was told by one who withdrew from thence, what vast draughts of wine they dranke, and that ther was one Earle who had dranke most of the rest downe and was not himselfe mooved or altered, the kinge sayd that he deserved to be hanged, and that Earle comminge shortly into the roome wher his Majesty was, in some gayty to shew how unhurte he was from that battle, the kinge sent one to bidd him withdraw from his Majestys presence, nor did he in some dayes after appeare before the kinge.

Ther were so many miraculous circumstances contributed to his



ruine, that men might well thinke that heaven and earth conspired it, and that the starres designed it, though he was from the first declension of his power, so much betrayed by his owne servants, that there were very few who remayned faythfull to him; yett that trechery proceeded not from any treasonable purpose to do him any harme, but from particular and personall animosityes against other men; and afterwards the terrour all men were under of the Parliament and the guilte they were conscious of themselves, made them watch all opportunityes to make themselves gracious to those who could do them good, and so they became spyes upon ther master, and from one piece of knavery, were hardned and confirmed to undertake another, till at last they had no hope of præservation but by the destruction of ther master; And after all this, when a man might reasonably believe, that lesse then a universall defection of three nations, could not have reduced a greate kinge to so ugly a fate, it is most certayne that in that very howre when he was thus wickedly murdered in the sight of the sunn, he had as greate a share in the heartes and affections of his subjects in generall, was as much beloved, esteemed and longed for by the people in generall of the three nations, as any of his predecessors had ever bene. To conclude, he was the worthyest gentleman, the best master, the best frende, the best husbände, the best father, and the best Christian, that the Age in which he lyved had produced, and if he was not the best kinge, if he was without some parts and qualityes which have made some kings greate and happy, no other Prince was ever unhappy, who was possessed of half his virtues and indowments, and so much without any kinde of vice.

By SIR PHILIP WARWICK.

He was a person, tho' born sickly, yet who came thro' temperance and exercise, to have as firm and strong a body, as most persons I ever knew, and throughout all the fatigues of the warr, or during his imprisonment, never sick. His appetite was to plain meats, and tho' he took a good quantity thereof, yet it was suitable to an easy digestion. He seldom eat of above three dishes at most, nor drank above thrice: a glasse of small beer, another of claret wine, and the last of water; he eat suppers as well as dinners heartily; but betwixt meales, he never medled with any thing. Fruit he would eat plentifully, and with this regularity, he moved as steddily, as a star follows its course. His deportment was very majestick; for he would not let fall his dignity, no not to the greatest Forraigners, that came to visit him and his Court; for tho' he was farr from pride, yet he was carefull of majestie, and would be approacht with respect and reverence. His conversation was free, and the subject matter of it (on his own side of the Court) was most commonly rational; or if facetious, not light. With any Artist or good Mechanick, Traveller, or Scholar he would discourse freely; and as he was commonly improved by them, so he often gave light to them in their own art or knowledge. For there were few Gentlemen in the world, that knew more of useful or necessary learning, than this Prince did: and yet his proportion of books was but small, having like Francis the first of France, learnt more by the ear, than



by study. His way of arguing was very civil and patient; for he seldom contradicted another by his authority, but by his reason: nor did he by any petulant dislike quash another's arguments; and he offered his exception by this civill introduction, *By your favour, Sir, I think otherwise on this or that ground:* yet he would discountenance any bold or forward addresse unto him. And in suits or discourse of busines he would give way to none abruptly to enter into them, but lookt, that the greatest Persons should in affairs of this nature addresse to him by his proper Ministers, or by some solemn desire of speaking to him in their own persons. His exercises were manly; for he rid the great horse very well; and on the little saddle he was not only adroit, but a laborious hunter or field-man: and they were wont to say of him, that he fail'd not to do any of his exercises artificially, but not very gracefully; like some well-proportion'd faces, which yet want a pleasant air of countenance. He had a great plainnes in his own nature, and yet he was thought even by his Friends to love too much a versatile man; but his experience had thorowly weaned him from this at last.

He kept up the dignity of his Court, limiting persons to places suitable to their qualities, unless he particularly call'd for them. Besides the women, who attended on his beloved Queen and Consort, he scarce admitted any great Officer to have his wife in the family. Sir Henry Vane was the first, that I knew in that kind, who having a good dyet as Comptroller of the Houshold, and a tenuity of fortune, was winkt at; so as the Court was fill'd, not cramm'd. His exercises of Religion were most exemplary; for every morning early, and evening not very late, singly and alone, in his own bed-chamber or closet he spent some time in private meditation: (for he durst reflect and be alone) and thro' the whole week, even when he went a hunting, he never failed, before he sat down to dinner, to have part of the Liturgy read unto him and his menial servants, came he never so hungry, or so late in: and on Sundays and Tuesdays he came (commonly at the beginning of Service) to the Chappell, well attended by his Court-Lords, and chief Attendants, and most usually waited on by many of the Nobility in town, who found those observances acceptably entertain'd by him. His greatest enemies can deny none of this; and a man of this moderation of mind could have no hungry appetite to prey upon his subjects, tho' he had a greatnes of mind not to live precariously by them. But when he fell into the sharpnes of his afflictions, (than which few men underwent sharper) I dare say, I know it, (I am sure conscientiously I say it) tho' God dealt with him, as he did with St. Paul, not remove the thorn, yet he made his grace sufficient to take away the pungency of it: for he made as sanctified an use of his afflictions, as most men ever did.

No Gentleman in his three nations, tho' there were many more learned, (for I have supposed him but competently learned, tho' eminently rational) better understood the foundations of his own Church, and the grounds of the Reformation, than he did: which made the Pope's Nuncio to the Queen, Signior Con, to say (both of him and Arch-Bishop Laud, when the King had forced the



Archbishop to admit a visit from, and a conference with the Nuncio) *That when he came first to Court, he hoped to have made great impressions there; but after he had conferr'd with Prince and Prelate, (who never denyed him any thing frowardly or ignorantly, but admitted all, which primitive and uncorrupted Rome for the first 500 years had exercised,) he declared he found, That they resolved to deal with his Master, the Pope, as wrestlers do with one another, take him up to fling him down. And therefore tho' I cannot say, I know, that he wrote his Icon Basilike, or Image, which goes under his own name; yet I can say, I have heard him, even unto my unworthy selfe, say many of those things it contains: and I have bin assur'd by Mr. Levett, (one of the Pages of his Bedchamber, and who was with him thro' all his imprisonments) that he hath not only seen the Manuscript of that book among his Majestie's papers at the Isle of Wight, but read many of the chapters himselfe: and Mr. Herbert, who by the appointment of Parliament attended him, says, he saw the Manuscript in the King's hand, as he believed; but it was in a running character, and not that which the King usually wrote. And whoever reads his private and cursory letters, which he wrote unto the Queen, and to some great men (especially in his Scotch affairs, set down by Mr. Burnet, when he stood single, as he did thro' all his imprisonments) the gravity and significancy of that style may assure a misbeliever, that he had head and hand enough to express the ejaculations of a good, pious, and afflicted heart; and Solomon says, that affliction gives understanding, or elevates thoughts: and we cannot wonder, that so royal a heart, sensible of such afflictions, should make such a description of them, as he hath done in that book.*

And tho' he was of as slow a pen, as of speech; yet both were very significant: and he had that modest esteem of his own parts, that he would usually say, *He would willingly make his own dispatches, but that he found it better to be a Cobler, than a Shoemaker.* I have bin in company with very learned men, when I have brought them their own papers back from him, with his alterations, who ever contest his amendments to have bin very material. And I once by his commandment brought him a paper of my own to read, to see, whether it was suitable unto his directions, and he disallow'd it slightly: I desir'd him, I might call Doctor Sanderson to aid me, and that the Doctor might understand his own meaning from himselfe; and with his Majestie's leave, I brought him, whilst he was walking, and taking the aire; whereupon wee two went back; but pleas'd him as little, when wee return'd it: for smilingly he said, *A man might have as good ware out of a Chandler's shop:* but afterwards he set it down with his own pen very plainly, and suitable unto his own intentions. The thing was of that nature, (being too great an owning of the Scots, when Duke Hamilton was in the heart of England so meanly defeated, and like the crafty fox lay out of countenance in the hands of his enemies,) that it chilled the Doctors ink; and when the matter came to be communicated, those honourable Persons, that then attended him, prevayl'd on him to decline the whole. And I remember, when his displeasure was a little off, telling him, how severely he had dealt in his



charactering the best pen in England, Dr. Sanderson's; he told me, he had had two Secretaries, one a dull man in comparison of the other, and yet the first best pleas'd him: *For, said he, my Lord Carleton ever brought me my own sense in my own words; but my Lord Faulkland most commonly brought me my instructions in so fine a dress, that I did not alwaies own them.* Which put me in mind to tell him a story of my Lord Burleigh and his son Cecil: for Burleigh being at Councill, and Lord Treasurer, reading an order penn'd by a new Clerk of the Councill, who was a Wit and Scholar, he flung it downward to the lower end of the Table to his son, the Secretary, saying, *Mr. Secretary, you bring in Clerks of the Councill, who will corrupt the gravity and dignity of the style of the Board:* to which the Secretary replied, *I pray, my Lord, pardon this, for this Gentleman is not warm in his place, and hath had so little to do, that he is wanton with his pen: but I will put so much busines upon him, that he shall be willing to observe your Lordship's directions.* These are so little stories, that it may be justly thought, I am either vain, or at leasure to sett them down; but I derive my authority from an Author, the world hath ever revered, viz, Plutarch; who writing the lives of Alexander the great and Julius Cesar, runs into the actions, flowing from their particular natures, and into their private conversation, saying, *These smaller things would discover the men, whilst their great actions only discover the power of their States.*

One or two things more then I may warrantably observe: First, as an evidence of his natural probity, whenever any young Nobleman or Gentleman of quality, who was going to travell, came to kiss his hand, he cheerfully would give them some good counsel, leading to morall virtue, especially to good conversation; telling them, that *If he heard they kept good company abroad, he should reasonably expect, they would return qualified to serve him and their Country well at home;* and he was very carefull to keep the youth in his times uncorrupted. This I find in the Mémoires upon James Duke Hamilton, was his advice unto that noble and loyal Lord, William, afterwards, Duke Hamilton, who so well serv'd his Son, and never perfidiously disserv'd him, when in armes against him. Secondly, his forementioned intercepted letters to the Queen at Naisby had this passage in them, where mentioning religion, he said, *This is the only thing, wherein we two differ;* which even unto a miscreant Jew would have bin prooffe enough of this King's sincerity in his religion; and had it not bin providence or inadvertence, surely those, who had in this kind defam'd him, would never themselves have publish'd in print this passage, which thus justified him.

This may be truly said, That he valued the Reformation of his own Church, before any in the world; and was as sensible and as knowing of, and severe against, the deviations of Rome from the primitive Church, as any Gentleman in Christendom; and beyond those errors, no way quarrelsom towards it: for he was willing to give it its due, that it might be brought to be willing to accept, at least to grant, such an union in the Church, as might have brought a free and friendly communion between Dissenters,



IRELAND

IRELAND

without the one's totall quitting his errors, or the other's being necessitated to partake therein: and I truly believe this was the utmost both of his and his Archbishop's inclinations; and if I may not, yet both these Martyrs confessions on the scaffold (God avert the prophecy of the last, *Venient Romani*) surely may convince the world, that they both dyed true Assertors of the Reformation. And the great and learned light of this last age, Grotius, soon discern'd this inclination in him: for in his dedication of his immortal and scarce ever to be parallel'd book, *De Jure Belli & Pacis*, he recommends it to Lewis XIII, King of France, as the most Royall and Christian design imaginable for his Majestic to become a means to make an union amongst Christians in profession of religion; and therein he tells him, how well-knowing and well-disposed the King of England was thereunto. In a word, had he had as daring and active a courage to obviate danger; as he had a stedly and undaunted in all hazardous rencounters; or had his active courage equall'd his passive, the rebellious and tumultuous humor of those, who were disloyall to him, probably had been quash'd in their first rise: for thro'-out the English story it may be observed, that the souldier-like spirit in the Prince hath bin ever much more fortunate and esteem'd, than the pious: a Prince's awfull reputation being of much more defence to him, than his Regall (nay Legall) edicts.

1650

Exile of [Irish](#) landowners to Connaught (22% of land remained in the hands of Catholics).

Shortly after May: Although earlier Andrew Marvell had been opposed to [Oliver Cromwell](#)'s Commonwealth government, at this point, with Cromwell returning in triumph after crushing rebellion in [Ireland](#), he composed



“An Horatian Ode upon Cromwell’s Return from Ireland” from which [Henry Thoreau](#) would recycle the line “He liv’d reserved and austere” into the remark about Walden Pond reserved and austere like a hermit in Walden Woods, “If by living thus reserved and austere, like a hermit in the woods, so long...”:

[WALDEN](#): I have said that Walden has no visible inlet nor outlet, but it is on the one hand distantly and indirectly related to Flint’s Pond, which is more elevated, by a chain of small ponds coming from that quarter, and on the other directly and manifestly to Concord River, which is lower, by a similar chain of ponds through which in some other geological period it may have flowed, and by a little digging, which God forbid, it can be made to flow thither again. If by living thus reserved and austere, like a hermit in the woods, so long, it has acquired such wonderful purity, who would not regret that the comparatively impure waters of Flint’s Pond should be mingled with it, or itself should ever go to waste its sweetness in the ocean wave?

PEOPLE OF WALDEN

THOMAS GRAY

The forward youth that would appear
 Must now forsake his Muses dear,
 Nor in the shadows sing
 His numbers languishing.
 ’Tis time to leave the books in dust,
 And oil th’ unused armour’s rust,
 Removing from the wall
 The corslet of the hall.
 So restless Cromwell could not cease
 In the inglorious arts of peace,
 But thorough advent’rous war
 Urged his active star.
 And like the three-fork’d lightning, first
 Breaking the clouds where it was nurst,
 Did through his own side
 His fiery way divide.
 For ’tis all one to courage high,
 The emulous or enemy;
 And with such to enclose
 Is more than to oppose.



IRELAND

IRELAND

Then burning through the air he went,
And palaces and temples rent;
 And Cæsar's head at last
 Did through his laurels blast. [King Charles I had been beheaded on January 31, 1649]
'Tis madness to resist or blame [laurels were supposedly proof against lightning]
The force of angry Heaven's flame;
 And, if we would speak true,
 Much to the man is due,
Who from his private gardens where
He liv'd reserved and austere. [This is the line Thoreau used.]
 As if his highest plot [plot = purpose]
 To plant the bergamot, [the bergamot was a variety of pear]
Could by industrious valour climb
To ruin the great work of time,
 And cast the kingdom old
 Into another mould.
Though justice against fate complain,
And plead the ancient rights in vain;
 But those do hold or break
 As men are strong or weak.
Nature that hateth emptiness
Allows of penetration less, [having two bodies simultaneously in the same space
was considered more abhorrent to nature than a vacuum]

 And therefore must make room
 Where greater spirits come.
What field of all the civil wars
Where his were not the deepest scars?
 And Hampton shows what part
 He had of wiser art,
Where, twining subtle fears with hope,
He wove a net of such a scope
 That Charles himself might chase
 To Carisbrooke's narrow case, [When Charles I fled from Hampton Court he was trapped
at Carisbrooke on the Isle of Wight, and would be put to death
to avoid further danger of his gaining support for an uprising.
Marvell accepted the common contemporary view (probably
mistaken) that Cromwell had connived at the escape in order to
entrap his victim.]

That thence the royal actor borne
The tragic scaffold might adorn,
 While round the armed bands
 Did clap their bloody hands.
He nothing common did or mean
Upon that memorable scene,
 But with his keener eye
 The axe's edge did try;
Nor call'd the gods with vulgar spite
To vindicate his helpless right,
 But bowed his comely head
 Down as upon a bed.
This was that memorable hour
Which first assur'd the forced pow'r.
 So when they did design
 The Capitol's first line, [According to Pliny the Elder a *caput*, a human head, had been dug up
during excavation for the foundations of the temple of Jupiter
in Rome, causing this temple to be henceforward known
as the *Capitol*; that discovery had been proclaimed
as an omen of Rome's headship over the world.]

A bleeding head, where they begun,
Did fright the architects to run;
 And yet in that the state
 Foresaw its happy fate.
And now the Irish are asham'd
To see themselves in one year tam'd;
 So much one man can do
 That does both act and know.
They can affirm his praises best,



And have, though overcome, confest
 How good he is, how just,
 And fit for highest trust;
 Nor yet grown stiffer with command,
 But still in the republic's hand;
 How fit he is to sway
 That can so well obey.
 He to the Commons' feet presents
 A kingdom for his first year's rents;
 And, what he may, forbears
 His fame, to make it theirs,
 And has his sword and spoils ungirt,
 To lay them at the public's skirt.
 So when the falcon high
 Falls heavy from the sky,
 She, having kill'd, no more does search
 But on the next green bough to perch,
 Where, when he first does lure,
 The falc'ner has her sure.
 What may not then our isle presume
 While victory his crest does plume!
 What may not others fear
 If thus he crown each year!
 A Cæsar he ere long to Gaul,
 To Italy an Hannibal,
 And to all states not free,
 Shall climacteric be.
 The Pict no shelter now shall find
 Within his parti-colour'd mind;

 But from this valour sad
 Shrink underneath the plaid,
 Happy if in the tufted brake
 The English hunter him mistake,
 Nor lay his hounds in near
 The Caledonian deer.
 But thou, the war's and fortune's son,
 March indefatigably on;
 And for the last effect
 Still keep thy sword erect;
 Besides the force it has to fright
 The spirits of the shady night,

 The same arts that did gain
 A pow'r, must it maintain.

[the kingdom of Ireland]

[at the public's skirt = at the feet of the government]

[climacteric = critical, dangerous]

[Pict (*picti*) = the painted people = Scots]

[“parti-coloured” because they had changed their politics after the execution of Charles]

[sad = steadfast, sober]

[which is to say, send hounds to flush out the deer]

[the hilt of a sword, in the shape of a cross, had power to avert evil spirits]

1652

The Parliamentary soldier [William Edmundson](#) rode into Derbyshire and married a young woman, to whom he had been contracted before. After some time he and his wife determined to relocate to [Ireland](#), and got off the boat in the port of Dublin not long after the plague.

During this period, finally, through a negotiated agreement between [Lord Protector Cromwell](#) and King Charles I's advocate, Lawrence Wilkinson was allowed to find refuge in [Providence, Rhode Island](#). He and his wife Susanna Smith Wilkinson, daughter of Christopher Smith, would have sons Joseph Wilkinson, born on March 2, 1654, Samuel Wilkinson, and John Wilkinson, and daughters Susanna Wilkinson, born on March 9, 1652; Joanna Wilkinson, born on March 2, 1657, and Susanna Wilkinson (again), born during February 1662. (It would be, presumably, this youngest son John Wilkinson who would become a grandfather of [Jemimah Wilkinson](#), the “Publik Universal Friend” of Rhode Island, and also an ancestor of Oziel Wilkinson the metal



worker of Pawtucket.)

WILKINSON FAMILY

At the culmination of the rebellion which had begun in 1641 in [Ireland](#), after eleven years of intense hostilities, the island had been stripped and was “void as a wilderness.” The half of the people who had attempted to oppose Cromwell who were still alive were reduced to eating human flesh, when they were not consuming carrion. The victorious English colonists brought about the sale by drovers and other intermediaries of some 35,000 to 40,000 defeated Irish warriors, to the armies of foreign powers. This “transplantation” was in all particulars an Irish [slave](#) trade “to Hell or Connaught” begun after the remaining Irish had been forced to move west of the River Shannon. By and large these men would be able to continue in the status of soldier, albeit by serving a foreign master in a foreign clime, except for some unfortunate number of the more intransigent ones, probably somewhat less than a thousand, who could not be trusted with their weapons but would instead need to be reduced as common laborers on the sugar-cane plantations of the West Indies.¹⁹ As all these thousands upon thousands of defeated warriors were being transshipped out of Irish ports, some 6,000 Irish Catholic priests, Irish Catholic women, and Irish Catholic boys were in addition sent along with them for free, in order to be disposed of them locally, without any separate record being maintained of these civilian auxiliaries. This Irish slave trade would not be brought to a completion until 1657.²⁰

INTERNATIONAL SLAVE TRADE

W.E. Burghardt Du Bois: In 1652 Rhode Island passed a law designed to prohibit life slavery in the colony. It declared that “Whereas, there is a common course practised amongst English men to buy negers, to that end they may have them for service or slaves forever; for the preventinge of such practices among us, let it be ordered, that no blacke mankind or white being forced by covenant bond, or otherwise, to serve any man or his assignes longer than ten yeares, or untill they come to bee twentie four yeares of age, if they bee taken in under fourteen, from the time of their cominge within the liberties of this Collonie. And at the end or terme of ten yeares to sett them free, as the manner is with the English servants. And that man that will not let them goe free, or shall sell them away elsewhere, to that end that they may bee enslaved to others for a long time, hee or they shall forfeit to the Collonie forty pounds.”²¹

This law was for a time enforced,²² but by the beginning of the eighteenth century it had either been repealed or become a dead letter; for the Act of 1708 recognized perpetual slavery, and laid an impost of £3 on Negroes imported.²³ This duty was really a tax on the transport trade, and produced a steady income for twenty years.²⁴ From the year 1700 on, the citizens of this State

19. As a footnote, a pointy reminder by Theodore W. Allen: “It is only a ‘white’ habit of mind that reserves ‘slave’ for the African-American and boggles at the term ‘Irish slave trade’.”

20. When the proposal was recently made by a black reverend in [Providence, Rhode Island](#) that we should now remove the word “plantation” from the official state name “Rhode Island and Providence Plantations” on grounds that such a word honored the state’s history of human slavery, some white clown-in-denial wrote to the ProJo local newspaper and insisted that while indeed there had been slavery in [Rhode Island](#), the local historical “slaves” (this clown, or the clowning newspaper editor of the clownish ProJo newspaper, had put the term inside scarequotes) had been merely white people such as the Irish warriors who had been indentured as slaves for a period of ten years. Nothing for us to be ashamed of, he trumpeted informedly!

INDENTURE

21. RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, I. 240.

22. Cf. letter written in 1681: NEW ENGLAND REGISTER, XXXI. 75-6. Cf. also Arnold, HISTORY OF RHODE ISLAND, I. 240.

23. The text of this act is lost (COLONIAL RECORD, IV. 34; Arnold, HISTORY OF RHODE ISLAND, II. 31). The Acts of Rhode Island were not well preserved, the first being published in Boston in 1719. Perhaps other whole acts are lost.



engaged more and more in the carrying trade, until Rhode Island became the greatest slave-trader in America. Although she did not import many slaves for her own use, she became the clearing-house for the trade of other colonies. Governor Cranston, as early as 1708, reported that between 1698 and 1708 one hundred and three vessels were built in the State, all of which were trading to the West Indies and the Southern colonies.²⁵ They took out lumber and brought back molasses, in most cases making a slave voyage in between. From this, the trade grew. Samuel Hopkins, about 1770, was shocked at the state of the trade: more than thirty distilleries were running in the colony, and one hundred and fifty vessels were in the slave-trade.²⁶ "Rhode Island," said he, "has been more deeply interested in the slave-trade, and has enslaved more Africans than any other colony in New England." Later, in 1787, he wrote: "The inhabitants of Rhode Island, especially those of Newport, have had by far the greater share in this traffic, of all these United States. This trade in human species has been the first wheel of commerce in Newport, on which every other movement in business has chiefly depended. That town has been built up, and flourished in times past, at the expense of the blood, the liberty, and happiness of the poor Africans; and the inhabitants have lived on this, and by it have gotten most of their wealth and riches."²⁷ The Act of 1708 was poorly enforced. The "good intentions" of its framers "were wholly frustrated" by the clandestine "hiding and conveying said negroes out of the town [Newport] into the country, where they lie concealed."²⁸ The act was accordingly strengthened by the Acts of 1712 and 1715, and made to apply to importations by land as well as by sea.²⁹ The Act of 1715, however, favored the trade by admitting African Negroes free of duty. The chaotic state of Rhode Island did not allow England often to review her legislation; but as soon as the Act of 1712 came to notice it was disallowed, and accordingly repealed in 1732.³⁰ Whether the Act of 1715 remained, or whether any other duty act was passed, is not clear. While the foreign trade was flourishing, the influence of the Friends and of other causes eventually led to a movement against slavery as a local institution. Abolition societies multiplied, and in 1770 an abolition bill was ordered by the Assembly, but it was never passed.³¹ Four years later the city of Providence resolved that "as personal liberty is an essential part of the natural rights of mankind," the importation of slaves and the system of slavery should cease in the colony.³² This movement finally resulted, in 1774, in an act "prohibiting the importation of Negroes into this Colony," - a law which

24. E.g., it was expended to pave the streets of Newport, to build bridges, etc.: RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, IV. 191-3, 225.

25. RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, IV. 55-60.

26. Patten, REMINISCENCES OF SAMUEL HOPKINS (1843), page 80.

27. Hopkins, WORKS (1854), II. 615.

28. Preamble of the Act of 1712.

29. RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, IV. 131-5, 138, 143, 191-3.

30. RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, IV. 471.

31. Arnold, HISTORY OF RHODE ISLAND, II. 304, 321, 337. For a probable copy of the bill, see NARRAGANSETT HISTORICAL REGISTER, II. 299.

32. A man dying intestate left slaves, who became thus the property of the city; they were freed, and the town made the above resolve, May 17, 1774, in town meeting: Staples, ANNALS OF PROVIDENCE (1843), page 236.



curiously illustrated the attitude of Rhode Island toward the slave-trade. The preamble of the act declared: "Whereas, the inhabitants of America are generally engaged in the preservation of their own rights and liberties, among which, that of personal freedom must be considered as the greatest; as those who are desirous of enjoying all the advantages of liberty themselves, should be willing to extend personal liberty to others; - Therefore," etc. The statute then proceeded to enact "that for the future, no negro or mulatto slave shall be brought into this colony; and in case any slave shall hereafter be brought in, he or she shall be, and are hereby, rendered immediately free...." The logical ending of such an act would have been a clause prohibiting the participation of Rhode Island citizens in the slave-trade. Not only was such a clause omitted, but the following was inserted instead: "Provided, also, that nothing in this act shall extend, or be deemed to extend, to any negro or mulatto slave brought from the coast of Africa, into the West Indies, on board any vessel belonging to this colony, and which negro or mulatto slave could not be disposed of in the West Indies, but shall be brought into this colony. Provided, that the owner of such negro or mulatto slave give bond ... that such negro or mulatto slave shall be exported out of the colony, within one year from the date of such bond; if such negro or mulatto be alive, and in a condition to be removed."³³ In 1779 an act to prevent the sale of slaves out of the State was passed,³⁴ and in 1784, an act gradually to abolish slavery.³⁵ Not until 1787 did an act pass to forbid participation in the slave-trade. This law laid a penalty of £100 for every slave transported and £1000 for every vessel so engaged.³⁶

33. RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, VII. 251-2.

34. BARTLETT'S INDEX, page 329; Arnold, HISTORY OF RHODE ISLAND, II. 444; RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, VIII. 618.

35. RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, X. 7-8; Arnold, HISTORY OF RHODE ISLAND, II. 506.

36. BARTLETT'S INDEX, page 333; NARRAGANSETT HISTORICAL REGISTER, II. 298-9. The number of slaves in Rhode Island has been estimated as follows: -

In 1708, 426. RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, IV. 59.

In 1730, 1,648. RHODE ISLAND HISTORICAL TRACTS, No. 19, pt. 2, page 99.

In 1749, 3,077. Williams, HISTORY OF THE NEGRO RACE IN AMERICA, I. 281.

In 1756, 4,697. Williams, HISTORY OF THE NEGRO RACE IN AMERICA, I. 281.

In 1774, 3,761. RHODE ISLAND COLONIAL RECORD, VII. 253.

1653

During the first part of this year New Amsterdam, because Lord Protector Oliver Cromwell had declared war upon the Dutch Republic, busied itself in the erection of a defensive wall across Manhattan to the north of the white settlement, guarding themselves against any English militias, or native American war parties, that might approach from that direction.

It is clear that [John Smith](#) was not only able “to beare arms,” but also willing to do so despite his marriage to a [Quaker](#) woman — because in this year he served as an officer aboard a “barque” which the militia of [Plymouth](#) sent to fight the Dutch at “Manhatoes.” (It is not clear that there was any actual contact.)

Under the Act of Settlement, Parliament’s opponents in [Ireland](#) were stripped of their estates.

While on a trip from his home in [Ireland](#) to England, [William Edmundson](#) was convinced by Friend [James Naylor](#) to become a [Quaker](#).



James Naylor was having a meeting about three miles from where I was. I went to it with my eldest brother Thomas and another kinsman, having an earnest desire to converse with some of that people, retaining a love for and believing well of them from the first hearing the report of them. And I was glad of this opportunity. We were all three convinced of the Lord’s blessed truth, for God’s witness in our hearts answered to the truth of what was spoken, and the Lord’s former dealings with me came fresh into my remembrance. Then I knew it was the Lord’s hand that had been striving with me for a long time. This was in the year 1653.

Then my understanding began to be opened and many Scriptures were brought to my remembrance, which I had often read and yet understood not. But now being turned to a measure of the Lord’s Spirit manifested in my heart which often had reproved me for evil in my ignorance, I knew that it was he which led into all truth, agreeably to the holy Scriptures of the law and prophets and Christ and his apostles. And I thought that all that heard it declared must own it, it was so plain to me. A few days after I was thus far convinced of the blessed truth, the Lord’s power



IRELAND

IRELAND

seized upon me through his Spirit, whereby I was brought under great exercises of mind. Yea, all my parts came under this exercise, for the Lord's hand was mighty upon me in judgments mixed with mercies, so that my former ways were hedged up. But I loved the Lord's judgments, for I knew I had sinned against him and must be purged through judgment. And though under this exercise of conscience towards God, yet I did my business in England and shipped my goods to be landed at Carrickfergus or Belfast.

1654

Lord Protector [Oliver Cromwell](#), striving to overthrow the Spanish power in the West Indies, fitted out large



naval and military forces under Admiral Penn and General Venables and sent them to Jamaica to operate against Hispaniola. He named a board of three commissioners, with controlling authority, of which [Edward Winslow](#) became the head.



With [Ireland](#)'s armies in defeat and exile, the only mounted persons on the island were English soldiers.



To the English ruling class Ireland was a tabula rasa on which it could inscribe what it would.

At about this point one of these English soldiers, Friend [William Edmundson](#), got on his horse and visited two Quaker families in Rosenallis in county Laois in Ireland, apparently the Cantrill family of Tineil and the Chander family of Ballyhide.



RELIGIOUS SOCIETY OF FRIENDS

1656

William Marston, Sr. needed to pay a fine of £10 to the county court after being discovered to be in possession of “two [Quaker](#) books and a paper of the Quakers.”

A Baptist, [John Perrot](#), became convinced as a [Quaker](#) after hearing Edward Burrough (1634/35-1663), although it would seem he continued to wear a sword appropriate to his standing in society. He began to preach in the vicinity of Limerick, [Ireland](#). He and [John Luffe \(Love\)](#) went off as missionaries to the [Catholics](#) and Jews of the [Italian](#) peninsula.

**1659**

[Richard Cromwell](#) was forced by the army to resign, and the “Rump” Parliament was restored. [Sir Henry Vane](#) returned to the House of Commons, when he became the leader of the Republican party. The fall of Richard Cromwell’s government brought about [Major-General William Goffe](#)’s loss of influence.

[REGICIDE](#)

Friend [Samuel Shattuck](#) and a number of other prominent New England members of the [Religious Society of Friends](#) were residing in London, in exile from their homes on this side of the pond.

Friend [William Edmundson](#) and a group of Quakers settled in the vicinity of Mountmellick in county Laois in [Ireland](#). The other Friends were:

William Archer
William Barcrof (*circa* 1612-1696)
Thomas Beale
Evan Bevan
Rodger Boswel (died in 1666)
Godfrey Cantrel (died in 1686)
William Capton (died in 1672)
John Chandler
John Edmundson
John Gee
John Goodbody
Nicholas Gribbell (*circa* 1641-1728)
John Hug
Richard Jackson (1643-1697)
William Moon (died in 1659)
William Neale
William Parker
John Pim (1641-1718)
Tobias Pladwell
John Savage
Richard Scot (1625-1707)
Thomas Stalker
Thomas Stevenson
John Thompson (died in 1695)
William Walpole (died in 1691)
Robert Wardel

1660

➔ At the restoration of the monarchy, [John Evelyn](#) was well received by King Charles II; he would be asked on a variety of commissions.



This marked the beginning of the period of the Stuart Restoration during which [Irish](#) hopes for national freedom would revive.

Until this point, the North American continent's African laborers seem not to have had the status of lifetime and hereditary bondsmen and bondswomen. Rather, until this point their status seems to have been essentially the same as the status of bond laborers being imported from Europe: not only non-hereditary but also for a limited term.

SLAVERY
INDENTURE

1662

The Navigation Acts prohibited [Irish](#) exports to America (export of livestock to England also was prohibited).

1669

Exports of [Irish](#) woolens, glass, and beer to England was prohibited.



1672

In [Ireland](#), Catholics were barred from serving in high office.

1677

January 22: Foodstuffs contributed by the residents of Dublin, [Ireland](#), known as “Irish Charity,” were being distributed to the white people who had suffered during the New England race war.

On the 22d of January, 1677, the government made allowance to the people distressed by the war in Massachusetts; and allotted to the selectmen of the several towns in proportion to their losses, out of the “Irish Charity,” in “meal, oatmeal, wheat, malt at 18s per ball. Butter, 6d. and cheese, 4d per pound.” In the list accompanying this order the following towns appear.³⁷

“KING PHILLIP’S WAR”

Town	Families	Persons	Amount
Charlestown	29	102	£15. 6s.
Watertown	19	76	£11. 8s.
Cambridge	14	61	£9. 3s.
Concord	18	72	£10. 16s.
Sudbury	12	48	£7. 8s.
Woburn	8	43	£6. 9s.
Billerica	1	4	£0. 12s.
Boston	125	432	£66. 6s.

37. The whole list is published in the New Hampshire Collection, vol. iii. pages 102, 103.

[Lemuel Shattuck](#)’s 1835 [A HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF CONCORD:....](#). Boston MA: Russell, Odiorne, and Company; Concord MA: [John Stacy](#), 1835

(On or about November 11, 1837 [Henry Thoreau](#) would indicate a familiarity with the contents of at least pages 2-3 and 6-9 of this historical study.)

1685

February 24 (February 14, Old Style): The body of Charles II was buried in Westminster Abbey “without any manner of pomp.” His brother James would be named as [King James II of England and Ireland](#) and as [King James VII of Scotland](#).

[John Evelyn](#)'s diary entry for this day was in part as follows:

The King was [this night] very obscurely buried in a Vault under Hen: 7th Chapell in Westminster, without any manner of pomp, and soone forgotten after all this vanity, & the face of the whole Court exceedingly changed into a more solemne and moral behaviour: The new King affecting neither Prophanesse, nor bouffonry: All the Greate Officers broke their white-Staves on the Grave &c: according to forme:



February 15 (Old Style): *Dr. Tenison preach'd to the Household on 42.Psal:ult: The 2d sermon (which should have ben before the King, who to the great grieffe of his subjects, did now the first time go to Masse publicly in the little Oratorie at the Dukes lodgings, the doores set wide open) was by Mr. Fox, a young quaint Preacher, who made a very profitable sermon on Pro: Fooles make a mock at sin, against prophanes & Atheisme; now reigning more than ever through the late dissolutenesse of the Court:...*

February 22 (Old Style): *Severall most usefull tractates against Dissenters, Papists & Fanatics, & resolution of Cases, were now publish'd by the London divines:...*

March 5 (Old Style): *To my griefe I saw the new pulpet set up in the popish oratory at W-hall, for the Lent preaching, Masse being publiqly saied, & the Romanists swarming at Court with greater confidence than had ever ben seene in England since the Reformation, so as every body grew Jealous to what this would trend; A Parliament was now also summond, and greate industry used to obtaine Elections which might promote the Court Interest: Most of the Corporations being now by their new Charters in power to make what returnes of members they pleased: Most of the Judges likewise having given their opinions that his Majestie might still take the Costomes, which to foure Judges ([esteem'd] the best Lawyers) seemed against the Act of Parliament which determines it with the Kings life: Now came over divers Envoyès & greate Persons to condole the Death of the late King: The Q[ueen] Dowager received them on a bed of mourning, the whole Chamber seiling & floore hung with black, tapers lighted; so as nothing could be more Lugubrous & solemn: The Q[ueen] Consort sat out under a state on a black foot-cloth, to entertaine the Circle as the Q[ueen] used to do, & that very decently:*

1688

According to Bishop [Thomas Percy](#)'s RELIQUES OF ANCIENT ENGLISH POETRY (4th edition, 1794), the words "Lilli-Burlero-Bullen-a-la" had been "words of distinction used among the Irish Papists at the time of their massacre of the Protestants in 1641." This shibboleth-phrase had become the refrain of a nonsense song satirizing the Earl of Tyrconnel on the occasion of his visit to [Ireland](#) in January 1686-1687 as the Catholic vicegerent of [King James II](#). The bad memories resulted at this point in another Irish revolution of "Protestants" who had none of the spirit of Jesus vs. "Catholics" who had none of the spirit of Jesus.

November 15, Monday (November 5, Old Style): Annie "Goody" Glover of Salem, the [Irish](#) immigrant who had confessed and been found guilty of [witchcraft](#), was [hanged](#) on [Boston Neck](#).



The fleet of [William, Prince of Orange](#) arrived at Tor Bay on the coast of the English Channel and his army began to disembark. The relevant news item, per the journal of [John Evelyn](#):

Being the anniversary of the powder plot, our Viccar preach'd on 76. Psal. 10. by divers Instances: shewing the disasters & punishments overtaking perfidious designes.



1689

April 11 (Old Style): The “Glorious Revolution” overthrew the English Catholics and [King James II](#), and [William, Prince of Orange](#) (and Mary, his wife), with much help from [Huguenot](#) exiles in Great Britain, took the throne as the Protestant sovereigns of England.



The deposed king James II would flee to [Ireland](#) but in the following year would be defeated at the Battle of the Boyne. The Jacobite War would culminate in a few years, in the defeat of [Irish](#) Catholics by the Dutch/English King William III and expropriation of land owned by Catholics.

Whereupon, an Act of Toleration would close a chapter in [Quaker](#) history: the Convention Parliament would issue a Bill of Rights limiting the powers of the monarchy over Parliament.

READ THE FULL TEXT

After many years of guarded privilege, as one of the acts of the Glorious Revolution the government charter of the Merchant Adventurers Company was withdrawn.

This act, ratifying the Revolution of 1688-1689, would incorporate the earlier “Declaration of Rights” offered to William upon his accession. This established a constitutional monarchy in Britain. It barred Roman

Dumb. 2444

The London Gazette.

Published by Authority.

From Thursday April 11. to Monday April 15, 1689.

Whitehall, April 11.

THis Day the Coronation of their Sacred Majesties King *William* and Queen *Mary* was performed at *Westminster* in manner following.

THeir Majesties being come from *Whitehall* to *Westminster*, and the Nobility, &c. being put in Order by the *Heralds*, They came down in State into *Westminster* hall, where the *Swords* and *Spurs* were presented to Them.
After which the *Dean* and *Prebendaries* of *Westminster*, having brought the *Crowns* and other *Regalia*, presented them severally to Their Majesties; which, with the *Swords* and *Spurs*, were thereupon delivered to the *Lords* appointed to carry them.

Thus Their Majesties in Their Robes of *Crimson Velvet*, King with a *Cap*, and the Queen a *Circlet* on her Head, the Nobility in *Crimson Velvet* Robes with their Coronets on their Hands, and the rest of the Proceeding in their proper Habits marched on foot upon *Blew Cloth* to *Westminster*—All the Way and Houses on each side being Crowded with Numbers of Spectators expressing their great Joy and Satisfaction by loud repeated Acclamations.

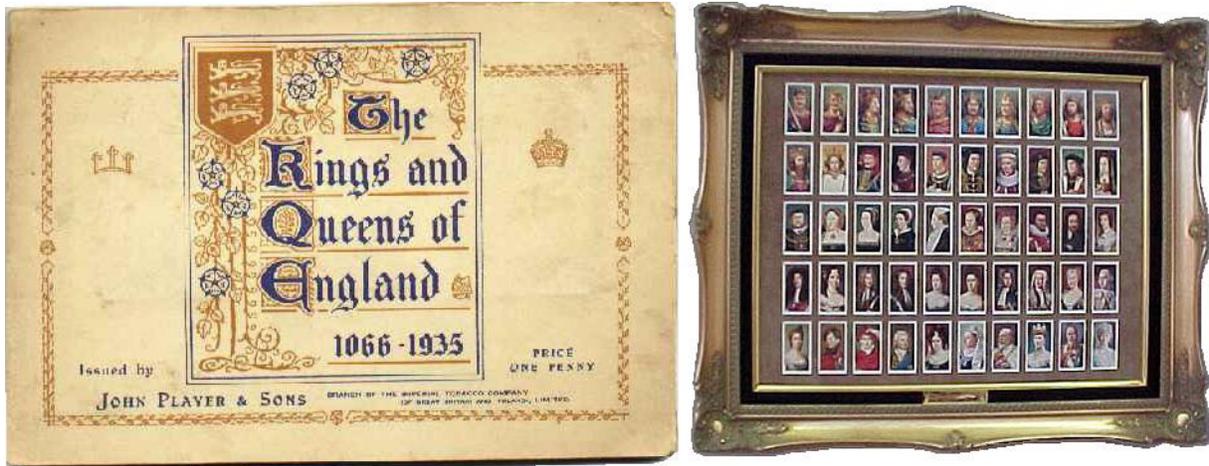
Being Entred the Church, and all duly seated, the *Bishop* of *London*, who performed this great Solemnity, began with *Recognition*, which ended with a mighty *Shout*. Then Their Majesties Offered, and the *Lords* who bore the *Regalia*, presented them at the *Altar*. The *Litany* was sung by the *Bishops*, and after the *Epistle*, *Gospel*, and *Nicene Creed* the *Bishop* of *Salisbury* Preach'd on this Text, 2 Sam. 23. 3, 4

After Sermon Their Majesties took the *Oath*, and were Conducted to their *Regal Chairs* placed on the *Theater* (they might be more Conspicuous to the Members of the *House of Commons*, who were seated in the *North Cross*) were Anointed.

IRELAND

IRELAND

Catholics from the throne. [William III and Mary II](#) became joint monarchs of England and Scotland (to 1694).



A Toleration Act granted freedom of worship to dissenters in England. This Toleration Act closed a chapter in Quaker history. Although the [Religious Society of Friends](#) would still be prosecuted for refusal to pay tithes, the prosecution rate would fall off as many Friends would connive in the payment of, and in some cases even the receiving of, tithes. By the turn of the century the [Quakers](#) would have adjusted to England, and England to them.

Although [Quakers](#) would still be prosecuted for refusal to pay tithes, the prosecution rate would fall off and many Friends would connive in the payment of, and in some cases, the receiving of tithes. By the turn of the century the Quakers would have adjusted to England, and England to them.

The [Huguenot](#) young scholar [Abel Boyer](#) ventured from the continent of Europe to England and would there suffer a period of great economic stress.

[“William and Mary”](#) would ally with Spain, Austria, and the Netherlands to engage in what were called in Europe “King William’s Wars,” to oppose the expansionism of the French under King Louis XIV. In North America these would be referred to as the French and Indian Wars and would be fought between the French and English and their respective Indian allies, the Algonquian and the Iroquois, for control of the colonial lands. These wars will continue off and on in America until 1763:



1690

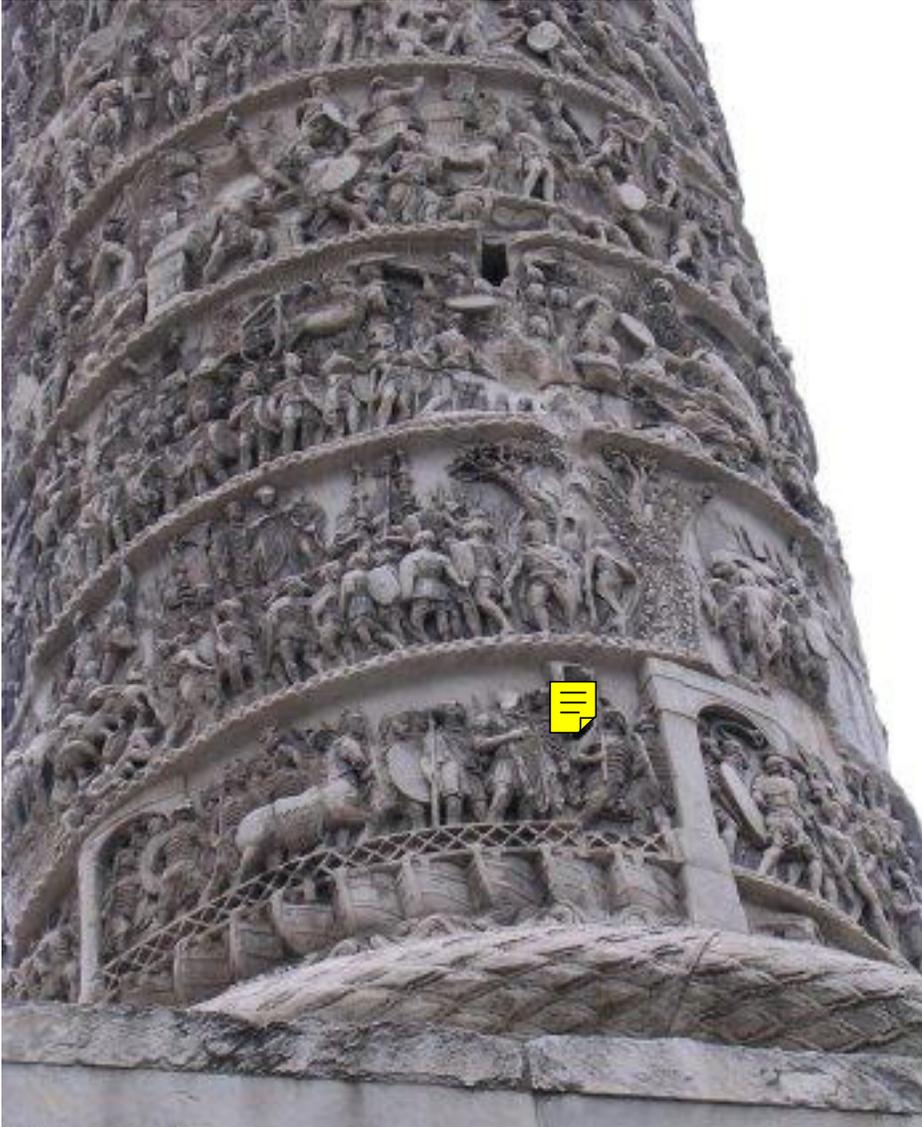
→ July 12 (Old Style): On what would become [Henry Thoreau](#)'s birthday, the Protestant [King William III](#), who had been [William of Orange](#), defeated the Catholic king of Scotland [James VII](#) who had been [King James II](#) of England, at the battle of Aughrim (Aghrim) on the Boyne River, thus forever establishing Protestant hegemony in Northern [Ireland](#). (This would become the celebrated "Orangeman's Day.")



During the following years at the end of the 17th Century, the lands belonging to [Irish](#) Catholics would be expropriated by the conquering forces of the Protestant English under King William III.

IRELAND

IRELAND



What goes around keeps coming around and around and around...



These were [John Evelyn](#)'s entries in his diary:

July 13 (Old Style): ... *King William having vanquished K James in Ireland, there was much publique rejoicing: It seemes K[ing] J: army would not stand, namely the Irish, but the English Irish & French made greate resistance: Shomberg was slaine, and Dr. Wa[il]ker, who so bravely defended L[ord] derry: K[ing] W: received a slight wound by the grazing of a cannon bullet on his shouldier, which yet he endured with very little interruption of his pursuit: Hamilton, who brake his word, about Tyrconnells, was taken: K[ing] J. is reported gon back to France: Droghedah & Dublin surrendered: and if K[ing] W. be returning, one may say of him as Caesar; Veni, vidi, vici, for never was such a Kingdome won in so short an Expedition; But to alay much of this the French fleete having exceedingly beaten the Dutch fleete, & ours not daring to interpose, ride at present in our Chanell, threatning to Land, which causes an extraordinary alarme &c:*



July 17 (Old Style): *I went to London to visite some friends in the Toure, where asking for my Lord Clarendon (now with divers other Noble persons imprisoned upon suspicion of a plot) by mistake they directed me to the E. of Torrington who about 3 days before had ben sent for from the Fleete, was put into the Toure for his Cowardize and not fighting the French Fleete, which having beaten a Squadron of the Hollanders (whilst Torrington did nothing) did now ride masters at sea with that power as gave terror to the whole nation, in daily expectation of a descent, which God Almighty avert:*

July 30 (Old Style): *I went to Lond[on] Dined with [Mr. Pepys](#) now suffered to returne to his house in regard of his Indisposition: I return'd home calling in at the R. Society, where Mr. Hook read a discourse of the cause of most hills & mountaines to be from subterranean eruptions &c:*

August 1 (Old Style): *Came the Duke of Grafton to visite me, going now to his ship at the mouth of the River: [to transport him to Ireland where he was slaine.]*



August 10 (Old Style): ... *The K[ing] William having taken in Waterford, Duncannon, & other places marches to Limrick, which Tyrconell seemes with 4000 french &c to hold out; &c. The French F[leete] still hovering about the Western Coast, (we having 300 saile of rich Merchant Ships in the bay of Plimoth,) our Fleete begin to move towards them under 3 Admiralls in Commission: The Country in the West all on their Guard, A camp of about 4000 still on Blakheath: The Germans and especialy that in Flanders very strong waiting to give battell to the French who are this yeare on the defence; The Duke of Savoy, waites joyning with some German troopes to block up Catenate the Fr:Gen: there:
[A very extraordinary fine season.]*

August 12 (Old Style): *So greate and long a storme of Thunder & lightning as had seldom ben seene in these countries.*

August 13 (Old Style): *I went to Lond[on] The season now much changed to wett & cold: The French fleete returned to Brest & from our Coast, the Militia of the Trained Bands horse & foote which were up through out England now dismiss'd:
The French King having newes that King William was slaine, and his Army defeated in Ireland, causes such a Triumph at Paris & all over France, as was never heard of or almost read in any history, when in the midst of it, the unhappy K[ing] James being vanquished, brought himselfe (by a speedy flight & escape) the sad tidings of his owne defeate, to the greate reproch of the French who made such unseasonable boasting:*

August 15 (Old Style): *I was desired to be one of the Baile of the Earle of Clarendon for his Lordships release out of the Tower; with divers other noblemen: [Bishop of St. Asaph expounds his Prophetys to me & [Mr. Pepys](#) &c:]*

August 17 (Old Style): ... *Some greate designe in hand, by our preparation at Sea, now the Fr: fleete is gone home:
Limrick not yet reduc'd: Our Camp at Blakheath marching to Portsmouth.
That Sweete & hopefull youth Sir Charles Tuke, (after hopes of his recovery) dead of the wounds he receiv'd in the fight [of Boine], to the greate sorrow of all his friends, being (I think) the last male of that noble family: to which my wife is related: A more virtuous young Gent[leman] I never knew, he was learned for his age, having had the advantage of the choicest breeding abroad, both as to Arts & Armes, had much Traveld; but was so unhappy to fall, in that unhappy side of an unfortunate King:*

September 14 (Old Style): ... *Extremity of wet, cause the siege to be raised before Limrick: so as K[ing] W. Returnes to England: re infectâ as to that plan: Lord Sydne[y] &c left chiefe governors in that Kingdome as far as Conquered, which is neere three parts:*

October 8 (Old Style): *The 8th of this moneth my Lord Spencer writ me word from Althorp out of N.hampton-shire that there happened an Earthquake the day before in the morning, which, tho short, sensibly shook the house: The like, & at the very same moment, (which was betweene 7 & 8 in the morning, viz, halfe an houre after 7:) the Gazette of this week acquainted us it so happned at Barnstable, Holy-head, & Dublin in Ireland: we were not at all sensible of it at Lond[on]
The Parliament voted the King 4 millions:*

October 12 (Old Style): ... *The French Generall, with Tyrconell & their forces gon back to france, beaten out by K[ing] William.
Corke Delivered: upon discretion; The Duke of Grafton mortaly wounded: [dies] Churchil: before Kingsale, [which he takes,] our Ships (most of them) come into Harbor: The Parliament siting & voting vast summs for the next yeares Warr:...*



October 26 (Old Style): ... *KingSale at last surrendred; meane while K[ing] James party burne all they have in their power of houses, & amongst them that stately palace of the Lord Orories which lately cost as reported 40000 pounds: By a disastrous accident a 3d rate ship (the Breda) firing blew up & destroyed all the passengers in which wer 25 prisoner of War to set saile for England the very next day: Many excellent ships have we thus unfortunately lost this yeare beside aboundance taken by the Enemy:...*

October 29 (Old Style): *I came up to Lond[on] Dover-streete with part of my family, to Winter with my son:*

October 31 (Old Style): *My Birth-Day, being now full 70 yeares of Age: Blessed be the Lord for the continuance of my health, & of all his mercies, hitherto hast thou brought me, To Thee alone be the acknowledgements from my Soule & all that is within me, which thou has[t] preserved: Grant deare father the increase of thy Grace, with the yeares of my life, 'til in compassion thou bring me to the consummation of Glory in the life to come, Amen.*

November 3 (Old Style): *Went to the Co: of Clancarty, to condole with her concerning her debauched & dissolut son, who had don so much mischef in Ireland, now taken & brought prisoner to the Toure:*

November 23 (Old Style): ... *Carried my Lord Godolphin (now resuming the Commission of the Treasury againe to all his friends wonder) [Mr. Pepys](#) Memoires.³⁸*

December 1 (Old Style): *R[oyal] Society St. Bartholomews day, I having been chosen President, by 21 Voices, with much difficulty, by all meanes [resolved] to avoyd it in this ill Conjunction of publique affaires, with greate difficulty, devolved the Election on Sir Rob: Southwell, [Secretary] of State to the King William in Ireland:...*

December 28 (Old Style): *Dr. Huff (president of Magd: in Oxon who was displac'd with severall of the fellows, for not taking the oath: imposed by K James, now restor'd & made Bishop): at St. James church on 18 John 36: Afternoone at White hall Dr. Blagrave sub-Almoner on 10:Mark:15:*

*Most of this moneth cold & frost: King preparing for his Journey into Holland hastens the parliament to dispatch all bills:
One Johnson a Knight executed at Tyburn for being Compl[i]ce with Campbel brother to the Lord Argile, for stealing away a young heiresse: &c:*

December 31 (Old Style): *I made up my Accompts for this yeare, paid wages &c: according to Costome —*

1692

The English established a Penal Code that would humble the [Irish](#):

- No Catholic priests allowed on the island.
- No religious orders or religious centers allowed on the island.
- No Catholics might vote, or receive a commission in the Army, or hold a government job, or practice law, or establish a school, or own a weapon, or inherit land, or purchase property.

38. Not of course his DIARY, but his MEMOIRES RELATING TO THE ROYAL NAVY, published in 1690, an account of his second Secretaryship to the Admiralty from 1684 to 1689.

1695

In what would come to be known as the “Flight of the Wild Geese,” most of the soldiers in King James’ army fled to the Continent. Enactment of the initial Penal Laws. Only 14% of the land remained in the hands of Catholics.

IRELAND

1699

By the end of the 17th Century, the few potato plants fetched from the Andes had created a major Irish crop.³⁹



39. By 1845, approximately $\frac{1}{3}$ d of the tillable land in Ireland would be devoted to this crop and approximately $\frac{2}{5}$ ths of the population would be relying upon this tuber, along with skim milk or buttermilk, as their main source for calories and vitamins and minerals and protein. This was not only because potatoes could be grown on marginal land, such as on bogs and on rocky hillsides, but also because, growing underground, the crop was less liable to seizure by the English overlords and tax collectors than, say, an above-ground crop such as wheat or Indian maize, and because the bulk of the potato and the fact that it could not be stored for long periods meant that it functioned better as a local subsistence crop than as a marketable commodity. These righteous overlords were therefore referring to it as “the lazy crop.” The spud was seen to be overly compatible with two things which these notables considered as the notable crimes of the “potato people” — their indolence and their incessant begetting of children.

IRISH POTATO FAMINE



IRELAND

IRELAND

18TH CENTURY

1701

The Act of Settlement declared that those royals who chose to get married with Roman Catholics were to become ineligible for the line of succession to the throne of England.

ANTI-CATHOLICISM

1702

When King William of England died in a riding accident, his successor, Queen Anne I, adhered to the existing Grand Alliance and war was proclaimed against France.



1704

José de Zuniga y Cerda, Governor of Florida, proclaimed in his Order for Apalachee Province that “Any negro of Carolina, Christian or not, free or [slave](#), who wishes to come fugitive, will be [given] complete liberty, so that those who do not wish to stay here may pass to other places as they see fit, with their freedom papers which I hereby grant them by word of the king.”

[MANUMISSION](#)

The English forces from South Carolina destroyed most of the Spanish [Catholic](#) missions remaining outside the vicinity of St. Augustine in North Florida.

In [Ireland](#), the Penal Law system of religio-racial oppression of [Catholics](#) was in effect (until 1829).

In England, the Test Act was passed to limit rights of all dissenters (non-Anglicans): Presbyterians were awarded nearly the same treatment as [Catholics](#). The Penal Code was enacted to bar [Catholics](#) from voting, education, and the military.

October: [Maryland](#) imposed a “poll tax” duty of 20 shillings each on the import of Negroes to defray the public expense of those of them who proved to be useless for labor, and on the import of [Irish](#) Servants to guard against the possibility that so many of them might accumulate as to be able to mount a [Papist servile insurrection](#).

“An Act imposing Three Pence per Gallon on Rum and Wine, Brandy and Spirits; and Twenty Shillings per Poll for Negroes; for raising a Supply to defray the Public Charge of this Province; and Twenty Shillings per Poll on Irish Servants, to prevent the importing too great a Number of Irish Papists into this Province.” Revived in 1708 and 1712. Bacon, LAWS, 1704, Chapter XXXIII; 1708, Chapter XVI; 1712, Chapter XXII.

[INTERNATIONAL SLAVE TRADE](#)

[SLAVERY](#)

[John Evelyn](#)’s diary entries for this month:

October 1: ... *The weather exceedingly faire & seasonable, so as the yeare has ben wonderfully plentiful in all the fruits of the Earth, so as seldom a more propitious yeare has ben known, God make us thankful.*

The seige of Landau yet continuing, its redition is hourelly expected: Sir G. Rooke & Mediterranean fleete come home safly: The losse on both sides very greate, but the Victory acknowledged on our side: The unhapy D. of Bavaria, retired to Flanders having lost his glorious Country:

October 22: ... *The Queene [on one side] Lords & Comm: with extraordinary expressions of grace and kindnesse, congratulating their meeting, after the late Successes, & intimations of need of supplys to finish the humbling the French &c: & the Lords & Commons satisfaction of her government, & the like Congratulations of successe in Germany, gave hopes of a perfect and unanimous agreement of this Sessions just now begun:*



1707

The Act of Union combined the legislative governments of England and Scotland. The union would thereafter be known as the United Kingdom of Great Britain.

1709

When a French [privateer](#) had plundered Lewes' Town, and after several vessels had been plundered and burnt in the bay, the citizens of Philadelphia became concerned that their government protect them against such actions of war. The [Friends](#) generally held a majority in the civil rule of Pennsylvania and New Jersey, and the "hot church party" in favor of a public defense petitioned the queen of England, declaring that these Quakers, due to their passive principles, were unfit to be civil rulers.

Friend Benjamin Clarke donated just shy of ten acres to the Religious Society of Friends in Princeton, New Jersey for a meetinghouse and burial ground. Use of the property for a burial ground would begin immediately, but for the time being the society would continue to meet in the homes of its members.

The [Friends](#) of Mountmellick in county Laois built their first meetinghouse. This is not it, but another meetinghouse that had been erected elsewhere in [Ireland](#), in Ballitore, in the previous year:



1710

In [Ireland](#), secret organizations were being formed. There were peasant wars over land.

1712

Friend William Penn suffered an attack of apoplexy which disabled him. He made his final will and it became obvious that in point of actual return on investment his estate in Europe was worth more than all his province of Pennsylvania. A previous will, done as of 1701, had directed that upon his death his black slaves were to be freed and in addition had endowed "old Sam" with 100 acres, but there was none of that in this final will. The old man left this estate in England and Ireland to William Penn II, his only surviving son by his 1st wife Gulielma Springett Penn. He left what remained of his estate in Pennsylvania after the sale of his proprietary interest to another, to the minor sons of his 2d wife Hannah Callowhill Penn, John Penn, Thomas Penn,



Richard Penn, and Dennis Penn, and made Hannah his sole executrix. She would become in effect all the colony had by way of a governor, ruling through deputies or lieutenant governors during the remainder of her sons' minority. She would instruct that the family's slaves be sold off.

31st of 6th Month: In Ireland, late in his 84th year, after having been ill for almost a month, William Edmundson died.

On the 4th of the said month he said to Friends present, "I find my legs fail me, and it is tedious to die upward," desiring that the Lord would make his passage easy. He requested that his will might be performed and the substance of his journal no way altered. And soon after said, "Lord Jesus Christ, thou great Physician, who canst cure me, look upon me. I had rather die than live." That night, being very ill and full of pain, he was desirous to go to bed, and when helped towards it, he kneeled down at the bed side and was enabled in the midst of his extremity to call upon God, to the comfort and satisfaction of Friends present, beseeching the Lord to abate in some measure the bitterness of the pain that lay on him, which in a great degree was answered. He got little sleep that night, yet he lay for the most part pretty easy and quiet. And towards morning,



being in a very tender frame of spirit, he was truly thankful to God for his mercy and goodness and did bless, praise, and magnify his great name for the same, desiring those present to praise the Lord also on his behalf.

On the 5th day of the month, some Friends being in the room sitting quietly by him, he desired their prayers for him, for he was weak and not able to undergo much. Soon after, he got a little sleep, and when he awoke, he besought the Lord to this effect, "Forget not thy wonted mercies, but mitigate these pains, if it be thy will, and stand not at a distance in this time of need, I pray thee, O Lord! Touch, one touch with thy finger and it cures all." A little after he ordered where his grave should be made and gave some advice and charges to his children.

On the 6th, he expressed to some Friends his concern and trouble of mind because of the pride and height that young people were gone into, far wide from the humility and plainness that truth led Friends into in the beginning, and said that one examples another therein, his spirit seeming burdened under a sense thereof. On going to bed, he renewed his supplication to the Lord not to forget his wonted kindness towards him.

On the 7th he said to his wife, "I am now clear of the world and the things of it."

To Friends who came to visit him that afternoon he said, "Friends, you would do well to retire to the Lord."

After a time of silent waiting, he prayed fervently to God to their great comfort. And though the extremity of his distemper was great, yet he bore it patiently. Friends from several parts coming to see him, he frequently declared his zealous concern for truth's prosperity and the promotion of its government in the churches of Christ, that not only those who were peculiarly concerned as elders in the discipline and oversight of the church should be rightly qualified and gifted for that service – men of truth, fearing God and hating covetousness, but also that all who were admitted into close communion as members of men's and women's meetings should be subject to truth and walk agreeable thereto in the whole course of their lives. When such came to visit him who had not been subject to those wholesome rules established in the church for good order and discipline, he did not spare to admonish and reprove them in the authority of truth for their good.

On the evening of the 10th, being in a heavenly frame of mind discernible to those near him, he spoke thus, "Heaven and earth, sea and dry land, and all things shall be shaken. Nothing may stand but what is according to the will of God. So look to it, Friends." And some time after, "I lie here under pain and would gladly be removed, but I am like one that pursues death and it flees from me, although I see not wherefore my time should be prolonged, my natural parts being decayed, neither do I see anything left undone which the Lord required of me when I had strength and ability, or that the Lord chargeth me with any neglect or transgression."

On the 18th, as he lay, he spoke thus to some present, "I have something to say to you, if you have ears to hear it. The spirit of vanity is let loose, the Lord suffers it, and it is like to



IRELAND

IRELAND

make a separation." At another time he said to some intimate Friends present, "There are wonderful things to be done. The Lord hath a mighty work to do that must be gone through, and there be few that see through it."

Several other weighty expressions dropped from the mouth of our dear, ancient Friend in the time of his sickness, some of which are inserted in the testimonies given forth by Friends who visited him near his end and were eye and ear witnesses thereof. Though many of his last sayings were not committed to writing, yet what is here collected may demonstrate his zeal for the glory of God and the welfare of Zion to his latter end. After about one month's sickness and pain of body, which was sharp to bear at times, having run the race with patience and kept the faith, he departed this life in sweet peace with the Lord, in unity with his brethren, and goodwill to all men....

4th of 7th Month: The body of [William Edmundson](#) was interred at the [Friends'](#) burial place at Tineel, [Ireland](#).

1714

In England, when Queen Anne I died, a rebellion in favor of the Stuarts was put down and a product of the House of Hanover took the throne as George I (although he took little interest). There would be separate Parliaments in Great Britain and [Ireland](#) but Poyning's Law would remain in force. Only 7% of the land in [Ireland](#) remained in the hands of [Catholics](#).

26th of 8th Month: In Dublin, [Ireland](#), [Friend](#) John Stoddart evaluated the life of [Friend William Edmundson](#).

And now the glorious Gospel is again preached in and to them that dwell upon the earth so that all may fear God and give glory to his name and worship him who made heaven and earth, the seas and fountains of water. And the Lord hath endued many with power from on high and sent them forth, as he did his messengers formerly, to direct and turn people's minds from darkness to light and from Satan's power to God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins and an inheritance among them that are sanctified by faith in Christ Jesus. Many have received the glad tidings of peace and salvation freely preached to them by the Lord's ministers in the authority of the Spirit and power of God in this mighty day of the Lord which is again revealed. He is come nigh to judgment, that the prince of this world may be cast out of the temple in which he had exalted himself and been worshipped as God. The kingdom of God is come, and coming more and more, and the power of his Christ is exalted in the hearts of many, whose right it is to reign. And though the devil and his angels war against him, and for a season be suffered to prevail in dark places of the earth so as to destroy the bodies of some of the followers of Christ, yet the Lamb and his followers shall have the victory, and the devil and his angels must be cast into the lake that burns for ever.



The Lamb's warfare is not for the destruction of men's lives, but of sin, the works of the devil in men. And the weapons of his followers are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds, casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ. Howbeit the Lamb, who is also the Lion of the tribe of Judah, hath power to rule the nations with a rod of iron. Therefore blessed are they that abide with and follow the Lamb through tribulations, in faith and patience, until they overcome and have their garments washed and made white in his blood, for they shall reign with him for ever. Of this number, we have cause to believe that this worthy servant of the Lord, William Edmundson, author of the ensuing journal, was one.

He was early visited with the inshining of the glorious light of this Gospel day in his own heart, whereby his state was often opened to him, though for a time he did not understand what it was that so enlightened him. He was left an orphan when young and thereby exposed to hardship. And after he grew up, he went into the army and continued a soldier some time under the parliament in the late civil wars in England and Scotland. Being religiously inclined he grew weary of that manner of life and delivered up his charge, returning towards his native place in England. Having been before contracted to a young woman in Derbyshire, he married her, and soon after came into the nation of Ireland with an intention to settle and trade. But he was under inward affliction upon his soul's account.

In a little time he went again to England to buy more goods, and being in the northern part among his relations, having an inclination in his mind, he went with two of them to a meeting of the people called Quakers, where, by the ministry of some of the said people, both he and his two relatives were convinced of the way of life. His understanding being opened by the truth, he then perceived that it was the Lord by his Holy Spirit who had been at work in his heart from his youth up. Wherefore he gave up to its manifestations and loved the Lord's judgments, because of sin, until he was purified and prepared thereby to be a partaker of mercy and a chosen vessel for the Lord's service.

Returning again to Ireland and being made willing to bear the cross of Christ, he soon met with various trials for the truth's sake and had the greater exercise, because there was not then any of the people called Quakers in that nation to have conversation with. His behaviour and deportment so reached both his wife and brother that they were soon convinced of the truth and willing to meet with him in his own house to worship God in spirit, though in outward silence, having refreshing seasons together in the presence of the Lord. And in a little time four more joined with him. About this time John Tiffin, a servant of the Lord, came over from England, who was a strength and comfort to Friends. Several were convinced and added to their number.

The Lord was pleased to open the mouth of our said Friend, William Edmundson, in the testimony of Jesus; and being faithful, his gift for the ministry was enlarged so that he became an able minister of Christ Jesus, skillful in dividing



IRELAND

IRELAND

the word of righteousness, plain and powerful in preaching, sound in doctrine, and profound in the mysteries of God, which were largely communicated to him. As a faithful steward and good scribe instructed into the kingdom, he, by direction of his Lord and Master, brought out of his treasury things new and old, suitable to the service required of him, for the glory of God and good of souls. Being willing to spend and be spent in doing the will of him that called him and not counting his life dear to himself so that he might finish the service and charge committed to his trust with joy, but being sensible of the Lord's call thereunto, he gave up cheerfully to follow the Lamb through many tribulations which attended for his testimony's sake.

He preached the Gospel of Christ freely in this nation in which he lived and suffered persecution, being often imprisoned in divers places. Once he spent about fourteen weeks in a close nasty dungeon among felons and malefactors, where he was almost stifled. He was frequently stocked, reviled, abused, and his goods made havoc of by covetous men. He also went many times into England, laboring in the work of the Gospel in divers parts, and three times into the Islands and English plantations in America, going the warfare at his own cost, that the Gospel might not be chargeable. He endured hardship as a good soldier of the Lamb, approving himself a faithful minister of Christ in much patience in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses for the Gospel's sake, in watchings, in fastings, in weariness and painfulness, by pureness, by knowledge, and by the power of God in his ministry, of which he had many seals in this nation and England and in the Islands of America, whom he had been instrumental in converting to God.

He was in journeys often, in perils by sea and land, and in the wilderness, both by wild beasts and bloody men in the time of the Indian wars in America, and by robbers in this nation in the time of the late calamity, who burnt his house and carried him away with his two sons, almost naked in the winter season, to kill them. But after much hard usage for several days, they were all three, by the good providence of God, delivered out of their hands.

This our ancient Friend had also exercise and grief by false brethren that opposed the testimony given him of the Lord to bear for his name, and he was not without affliction from some of his own offspring. Yet out of all the Lord delivered and preserved him faithful to a good old age, through good report and evil report so that near the conclusion of his time he could say that the Lord was his song and his strength. He was strong and courageous in the Lord's work and service, even after a decay came upon the outward man by reason of age and infirmities, being sound and clear in his understanding to the last.

As he had an excellent gift for the ministry, he was also endued with a large understanding and gift for government and religious discipline in the church of Christ. And having a discerning spirit, he stood firm in his zeal against those things that opposed the good order into which the Lord had gathered his people, and such men as under fair pretense would open a gap for false liberty. The care of the churches was upon him, especially in this nation where he lived and labored many years both in



IRELAND

IRELAND

doctrine and discipline. And as an elder that ruled well, he was esteemed highly by the faithful for his work's sake. Temperate he was in eating and drinking, decent and plain in apparel, in discourse weighty, being mostly concerning the things of God tending to instruction and edification. His countenance and deportment were manly and grave, expressing a noble and religious disposition of mind.

He was a loving husband, a careful and tender father, a firm friend and kind neighbor, given to hospitality, and though it was often his lot to be separated from his wife and children for the Gospel's sake, yet he ordered his affairs with discretion so that there might be no want in his family, either of commendable employment or necessaries. But his greater concern and labor was for the public good of the churches and promoting the government of Christ Jesus therein, for which he was zealous to the end, as appears by divers expressions from him a little before his departure, some of which follow as a supplement to the ensuing journal. And when upon due consideration with reflection on past time he was persuaded that his day's work was done, he humbly desired, in submission to the will of God, to be dissolved and be with Christ, to rest from his labor and affliction of body that attended, which in the Lord's time was granted him.

To conclude concerning this our well-beloved friend and elder, who by faith hath obtained a good report and whose memorial is and shall be blessed among the righteous, I refer the reader to a serious perusal of his following journal and those testimonies given forth by faithful Friends and brethren concerning him, with sincere desire, that the blessing of God may so attend thy reading as to excite thee to a faithful improvement of thy time and the gift of grace bestowed on thee through Christ Jesus so that thy latter end may be peace, and thy future state eternal happiness. So in Christian love I remain thy well-wishing friend,

John Stoddart.

Dublin, the 26th of the Eighth month, 1714.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1715

June 3, day: The colony of [Maryland](#) laid a prohibitive imposition of 20 shillings per head “on Negroes ...; and also on Irish Servants, to prevent the importing too great a Number of [Irish Papists](#) into this Province.”

Supplemented April 23, 1735, and July 25, 1754. COMPLEAT COLLECTION OF THE LAWS OF MARYLAND (ed. 1727), p. 157; Bacon, LAWS, 1715, Chapter XXXVI. §8; 1735, Chapter VI. §§1-3; ACTS OF ASSEMBLY, 1754, page 10.

INTERNATIONAL SLAVE TRADE

SLAVERY



[Cadwallader Colden](#) returned from Philadelphia to Scotland in order to get married with Alice Chryste. The newlyweds then voyaged back to Philadelphia.

[Robert Paterson](#) was born near Hawick, Scotland. This Scottish stonemason would make it his practice to commemorate and keep in repair the tombs of the Covenanters. He would meet Sir [Walter Scott](#) in Dunnotar churchyard.

The 1st Jacobite rising in Britain and Scotland attempted to restore the exiled James Francis Edward Stuart of the Stuart dynasty to the throne (James would become King James VII of Scotland and James III of England). England implemented a Riot Act, according to which if one dozen or more citizens were assembled and were disturbing the peace, and refused to disperse upon proper warning, they would face felony charges. This new procedure seemed less provocative and less dangerous than previous practices such as the military or police proceeding directly to fire over the heads of a group that might transform itself into an angry mob. The formal warning by the police would come to be termed “reading them the Riot Act”:

[WALDEN](#): Far through unfrequented woods on the confines of towns, where once only the hunter penetrated by day, in the darkest night dart these bright saloons without the knowledge of their inhabitants; this moment stopping at some brilliant station-house in town or city, where a social crowd is gathered, the next in the Dismal Swamp, scaring the owl and fox. The startings and arrivals of the cars are now the epochs in the village day. They go and come with such regularity and precision, and their whistle can be heard so far, that the farmers set their clocks by them, and thus one well conducted institution regulates a whole country. Have not men improved somewhat in punctuality since the railroad was invented? Do they not talk and think faster in the depot than they did in the stage-office? There is something electrifying in the atmosphere of the former place. I have been astonished at the miracles it has wrought; that some of my neighbors, who, I should have prophesied, once for all, would never get to Boston by so prompt a conveyance, were on hand when the bell rang. To do things “railroad fashion” is now the by-word; and it is worth the while to be warned so often and so sincerely by any power to get off its track. There is no stopping to read the riot act, no firing over the heads of the mob, in this case. We have constructed a fate, an *Atropos*, that never turns aside. (Let that be the name of your engine.) Men are advertised that at a certain hour and minute these bolts will be shot toward particular points of the compass; yet it interferes with no man’s business, and the children go to school on the other track. We live the steadier for it. We are all educated thus to be sons of Tell. The air is full of invisible bolts. Every path but your own is the path of fate. Keep on your own track, then.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1717

At London, the initial known Masonic lodge was formed.

The beginning of the [Irish](#) Presbyterian (Scots-Irish) exodus to North American colonies.

June 8, day: The colony of [Maryland](#) imposed an additional 20-shilling poll tax (duty per capita) on the importation of any more [Irish](#) servants and on any more Negroes.

"An Act for laying an Additional Duty of Twenty Shillings Current Money per Poll on all Irish Servants, ... also, the Additional Duty of Twenty Shillings Current Money per Poll on all Negroes, for raising a Fund for the Use of Publick Schools," etc. Continued by Act of 1728. COMPLETE COLLECTION OF THE LAWS OF MARYLAND (edition of 1727), page 191; Bacon, LAWS, 1728.

INTERNATIONAL SLAVE TRADE

SLAVERY

1718

Some [Irish](#) Presbyterian immigrants brought [potato](#) seed stock with them to [Boston](#).

1719

Spring: The first settlers of Derry, New Hampshire arrived, led by Reverend MacGregor of Londonderry, [Ireland](#). They called their settlement not Derry but Nutfield, New Hampshire. They immediately planted the potato seedstock they had brought with them — these were the 1st [potatoes](#) to be planted in the soil of what would become the United States of America, and the 1st potatoes to be planted in the New World by white intrusives rather than by indigenous red Americans.

1720

The Declaratory Act gave the British Parliament power over [Ireland](#).

Noting that some [Irish](#) had arrived on a ship and were “presuming to make a settlement,” the General Court of the Massachusetts Bay colony allowed them six, maybe seven, months to get the hell out — before they were thrown out. [Boston](#) was for Anglo-Saxon stock only.⁴⁰

40. The [Irish](#) would not, in fact, go away. How presumptuous the [Boston](#) Irish are!



"With the sole exception of a little band of French [Huguenot](#) refugees ... none but English immigrants were admitted to the [Massachusetts Bay] colony; even the Huguenots were here for half a century before they were naturalized."

— Tourtellot, Arthur Bernon, THE CHARLES
NY: Farrar & Rinehart, 1941, page 294



1721

The beginning of a series of famines in [Ireland](#), until 1841. Thousands would die each year of starvation and associated diseases, primarily because of the high rents which could be imposed upon the defeated Irish [Catholics](#). A commentator of the period would remark that "if at any time they are accidentally hired to common labour, they have not strength to perform it."



IRELAND

IRELAND

1723

According to the Anglo-Norman law of England, murder is not actionable if the victim can be shown to have been of the [Irish](#) persuasion. Similarly, according to a law which Virginia enacted in this year, “manslaughter of a [slave](#) is not punishable”:

If from the beginning of the 18th Century in Anglo-America the term “negro” meant [slave](#), except when explicitly modified by the word “free,” so under English law the term “hibernicus,” Latin for “Irishman,” was the legal term for “unfree.” If African-Americans were obliged to guard closely any document they might have attesting their freedom, so in Ireland, at the beginning of the 14th Century, letters patent, attesting to a person’s Englishness, were cherished by those who might fall under suspicion of trying to “pass.” If under Anglo-American slavery “the rape of a female slave was not a crime, but a mere trespass on the master’s property,” so in 1278 two Anglo-Normans brought into court and charged with raping Margaret O’Rorke were found not guilty because “the said Margaret is an Irishwoman.” If a law enacted in Virginia in 1723 provided that “manslaughter of a slave is not punishable,” so under Anglo-Norman law it sufficed for acquittal to show that the victim in a killing was [Irish](#). Anglo-Norman priests granted absolution on the grounds that it was “no more sin to kill an Irishman than a dog or any other brute.” If the Georgia Supreme Court ruled in 1851 that “the killing of a negro” was not a felony, but upheld an award of damages to the owner of an African-American bond-laborer murdered by another “white” man, so an English court freed Robert Walsh, an Anglo-Norman charged with killing John Mac Gilmore, because the victim was “a mere Irishman and not of free blood,” it being stipulated that “when the master of the said John shall ask damages for the slaying, he [Walsh] will be ready to answer him as the law may require.” If in 1884 the United States Supreme Court, citing much precedent authority, including the Dred Scott decision, declared that Indians were legally like immigrants, and therefore not citizens except by process of individual naturalization, so for more than four centuries, until 1613, the Irish were regarded by English law as foreigners in their own land. If the testimony of even free African-Americans was inadmissible, so in Anglo-Norman Ireland native Irish of the free classes were deprived of legal defense against English abuse because they were not “admitted to English law,” and hence had no rights that an Englishman was bound to respect.”



1729

Construction began on [Ireland](#)’s Newry Navigation, from Tyrone to Dublin.

CANALS

1735

Bishop [George Berkeley](#)'s THE QUERIST, containing proposals intended for the good of [Ireland](#).



THE BISHOP AS QUERIST

1736

Acts were passed requiring all persons to tithe to the Anglican Church, regardless of their own religion.

1739

In this year about 500,000 people would die in [Ireland](#) due to a widespread failure of the [potato](#) crop. Per the memoirs of [Benjamin Franklin](#), the itinerant preacher George Whitefield came from [Ireland](#) to Philadelphia:



FAMINE



In 1739 arrived among us from Ireland the Reverend Mr. Whitefield, who had made himself remarkable there as an itinerant preacher. He was at first permitted to preach in some of our churches; but the clergy, taking a dislike to him, soon refus'd him their pulpits, and he was oblig'd to preach in the fields. The multitudes of all sects and denominations that attended his sermons were enormous, and it was matter of speculation to me, who was one of the number, to observe the extraordinary influence of his oratory on his hearers, and bow much they admir'd and respected him, notwithstanding his common abuse of them, by assuring them that they were naturally half beasts and half devils. It was wonderful to see the change soon made in the manners of our inhabitants. From being thoughtless or indifferent about religion, it seem'd as if all the world were growing religious, so that one could not walk thro' the town in an evening without hearing psalms sung in different families of every street.

And it being found inconvenient to assemble in the open air, subject to its inclemencies, the building of a house to meet in was no sooner propos'd, and persons appointed to receive contributions, but sufficient sums were soon receiv'd to procure the ground and erect the building, which was one hundred feet long and seventy broad, about the size of Westminster Hall; and the work was carried on with such spirit as to be finished in a much shorter time than could have been expected. Both house and ground were vested in trustees, expressly for the use of any preacher of any religious persuasion who might desire to say something to the people at Philadelphia; the design in building not being to accommodate any particular sect, but the inhabitants in general; so that even if the Mufti of Constantinople were to send a missionary to preach Mohammedanism to us, he would find a pulpit at his service.

Mr. Whitefield, in leaving us, went preaching all the way thro' the colonies to Georgia. The settlement of that province had lately been begun, but, instead of being made with hardy, industrious husbandmen, accustomed to labor, the only people fit for such an enterprise, it was with families of broken shop-keepers and other insolvent debtors, many of indolent and idle habits, taken out of the jails, who, being set down in the woods, unqualified for clearing land, and unable to endure the hardships of a new settlement, perished in numbers, leaving many helpless children unprovided for. The sight of their miserable situation inspir'd the benevolent heart of Mr. Whitefield with the idea of building an Orphan House there, in which they might be supported and educated. Returning northward, he preach'd up this charity, and made large collections, for his eloquence had a wonderful power over the hearts and purses of his hearers, of which I myself was an instance.

I did not disapprove of the design, but, as Georgia was then destitute of materials and workmen, and it was proposed to send them from Philadelphia at a great expense, I thought it would have been better to have built the house here, and brought the children to it. This I advis'd; but he was resolute in his first project, rejected my counsel, and I therefore refus'd to contribute. I happened soon after to attend one of his sermons, in the course of which I perceived he intended to finish with a collection, and I silently resolved he should get nothing from me, I had in my pocket a handful of copper money, three or four silver dollars, and five pistoles in gold. As he proceeded I began to soften, and concluded to give the coppers. Another stroke of his oratory made me ashamed of that, and determin'd me to give the silver; and he finish'd so admirably, that I empty'd my pocket wholly into the collector's dish, gold and all. At this sermon there was also one of our club, who, being of my sentiments respecting the building in Georgia, and suspecting a collection might be intended, had, by precaution, emptied his pockets before he came from home. Towards the conclusion of the discourse, however, he felt a strong desire to give, and apply'd to a neighbour, who stood near him, to borrow some money for the purpose. The application was unfortunately [made] to perhaps the only man in the company who had the firmness not to be affected by the preacher. His answer was, "At any other time, Friend Hopkinson, I would lend to thee freely; but not now, for thee seems to be out of thy right senses."



Some of Mr. Whitefield's enemies affected to suppose that he would apply these collections to his own private emolument; but I who was intimately acquainted with him (being employed in printing his Sermons and Journals, etc.), never had the least suspicion of his integrity, but am to this day decidedly of opinion that he was in all his conduct a perfectly honest man, and methinks my testimony in his favour ought to have the more weight, as we had no religious connection. He us'd, indeed, sometimes to pray for my conversion, but never had the satisfaction of believing that his prayers were heard. Ours was a mere civil friendship, sincere on both sides, and lasted to his death.

The following instance will show something of the terms on which we stood. Upon one of his arrivals from England at Boston, he wrote to me that he should come soon to Philadelphia, but knew not where he could lodge when there, as he understood his old friend and host, Mr. Benezet, was removed to Germantown. My answer was, "You know my house; if you can make shift with its scanty accommodations, you will be most heartily welcome." He reply'd, that if I made that kind offer for Christ's sake, I should not miss of a reward. And I returned, "Don't let me be mistaken; it was not for Christ's sake, but for your sake." One of our common acquaintance jocosely remark'd, that, knowing it to be the custom of the saints, when they received any favour, to shift the burden of the obligation from off their own shoulders, and place it in heaven, I had contriv'd to fix it on earth.

The last time I saw Mr. Whitefield was in London, when he consulted me about his Orphan House concern, and his purpose of appropriating it to the establishment of a college.

He had a loud and clear voice, and articulated his words and sentences so perfectly, that he might be heard and understood at a great distance, especially as his auditories, however numerous, observ'd the most exact silence. He preach'd one evening from the top of the Court-house steps, which are in the middle of Market-street, and on the west side of Second-street, which crosses it at right angles. Both streets were fill'd with his hearers to a considerable distance. Being among the hindmost in Market-street, I had the curiosity to learn how far he could be heard, by retiring backwards down the street towards the river; and I found his voice distinct till I came near Front-street, when some noise in that street obscur'd it. Imagining then a semi-circle, of which my distance should be the radius, and that it were fill'd with auditors, to each of whom I allow'd two square feet, I computed that he might well be heard by more than thirty thousand. This reconcil'd me to the newspaper accounts of his having preach'd to twenty-five thousand people in the fields, and to the antient histories of generals haranguing whole armies, of which I had sometimes doubted. By hearing him often, I came to distinguish easily between sermons newly compos'd, and those which he had often preach'd in the course of his travels. His delivery of the latter was so improv'd by frequent repetitions that every accent, every emphasis, every modulation of voice, was so perfectly well turn'd and well plac'd, that, without being interested in the subject, one could not help being pleas'd with the discourse; a pleasure of much the same kind with that receiv'd from an excellent piece of musick. This is an advantage itinerant preachers have over those who are stationary, as the latter can not well improve their delivery of a sermon by so many rehearsals.

His writing and printing from time to time gave great advantage to his enemies; unguarded expressions, and even erroneous opinions, delivered in preaching, might have been afterwards explain'd or qualify'd by supposing others that might have accompani'd them, or they might have been deny'd; but litera scripta monet. Critics attack'd his writings violently, and with so much appearance of reason as to diminish the number of his votaries and prevent their encrease; so that I am of opinion if he had never written any thing, he would have left behind him a much more numerous and important sect, and his reputation might in that case have been still growing, even after his death, as there being nothing of his writing on which to found a censure and give him a lower character; his proselytes would be left at liberty to feign for him as great a variety of excellence as their enthusiastic admiration might wish him to have possessed.



...I turn'd my thoughts again to the affair of establishing an academy. The first step I took was to associate in the design a number of active friends, of whom the Junto furnished a good part; the next was to write and publish a pamphlet, entitled Proposals Relating to the Education of Youth in Pennsylvania. This I distributed among the principal inhabitants gratis; and as soon as I could suppose their minds a little prepared by the perusal of it, I set on foot a subscription for opening and supporting an academy; it was to be paid in quotas yearly for five years; by so dividing it, I judg'd the subscription might be larger; and I believe it was so, amounting to no less, if I remember right, than five thousand pounds. In the introduction to these proposals, I stated their publication, not as an act of mine, but of some publick-spirited gentlemen, avoiding as much as I could, according to my usual rule, the presenting myself to the publick as the author of any scheme for their benefit. The subscribers, to carry the project into immediate execution, chose out of their number twenty-four trustees, and appointed Mr. Francis, then attorney-general, and myself to draw up constitutions for the government of the academy; which being done and signed, a house was hired, masters engag'd, and the schools opened, I think, in the same year, 1749. The scholars increasing fast, the house was soon found too small, and we were looking out for a piece of ground, properly situated, with intention to build, when Providence threw into our way a large house ready built, which, with a few alterations, might well serve our purpose. This was the building before mentioned, erected by the hearers of Mr. Whitefield, and was obtained for us in the following manner. It is to be noted that the contributions to this building being made by people of different sects, care was taken in the nomination of trustees, in whom the building and ground was to be vested, that a predominancy should not be given to any sect, lest in time that predominancy might be a means of appropriating the whole to the use of such sect, contrary to the original intention. It was therefore that one of each sect was appointed, viz., one Church-of-England man, one Presbyterian, one Baptist, one Moravian, etc., those, in case of vacancy by death, were to fill it by election from among the contributors. The Moravian happen'd not to please his colleagues, and on his death they resolved to have no other of that sect. The difficulty then was, how to avoid having two of some other sect, by means of the new choice. Several persons were named, and for that reason not agreed to. At length one mention'd me, with the observation that I was merely an honest man, and of no sect at all, which prevail'd with them to chuse me. The enthusiasm which existed when the house was built had long since abated, and its trustees had not been able to procure fresh contributions for paying the ground-rent, and discharging some other debts the building had occasion'd, which embarrass'd them greatly. Being now a member of both setts of trustees, that for the building and that for the Academy, I had a good opportunity of negotiating with both, and brought them finally to an agreement, by which the trustees for the building were to cede it to those of the academy, the latter undertaking to discharge the debt, to keep for ever open in the building a large hall for occasional preachers, according to the original intention, and maintain a free-school for the instruction of poor children. Writings were accordingly drawn, and on paying the debts the trustees of the academy were put in possession of the premises; and by dividing the great and lofty hall into stories, and different rooms above and below for the several schools, and purchasing some additional ground, the whole was soon made fit for our purpose, and the scholars remov'd into the building. The care and trouble of agreeing with the workmen, purchasing materials, and superintending the work, fell upon me; and I went thro' it the more cheerfully, as it did not then interfere with my private business, having the year before taken a very able, industrious, and honest partner, Mr. David Hall, with whose character I was well acquainted, as he had work'd for me four years. He took off my hands all care of the printing-office, paying me punctually my share of the profits. This partnership continued eighteen years, successfully for us both.

The trustees of the academy, after a while, were incorporated by a charter from the governor; their funds were increas'd by contributions in Britain and grants of land from the proprietaries, to which the Assembly has since made considerable addition; and thus was established the present University of Philadelphia. I have been continued one of its trustees from the beginning, now near forty years, and have had the very great pleasure of seeing a number of the youth who have receiv'd their education in it, distinguish'd by their improv'd abilities, serviceable in public stations and ornaments to their country.

...another projector, the Rev. Gilbert Tennent, came to me with a request that I would assist him in procuring a subscription for erecting a new meeting-house. It was to be for the use of a congregation he had gathered among the Presbyterians, who were originally disciples of Mr. Whitefield. Unwilling to make myself disagreeable to my fellow-citizens by too frequently soliciting their contributions, I absolutely refus'd. He then desired I would furnish him with a list of the names of persons I knew by experience to be generous and public-spirited. I thought it would be unbecoming in me, after their kind compliance with my solicitations, to mark them out to be worried by other beggars, and therefore refus'd also to give such a list. He then desir'd I would at least give him my advice. "That I will readily do," said I; "and, in the first place, I advise you to apply to all those whom you know will give something; next, to those whom you are uncertain whether they will give any thing or not, and show them the list of those who have given; and, lastly, do not neglect those who you are sure will give nothing, for in some of them you may be mistaken." He laugh'd and thank'd me, and said he would take my advice. He did so, for he ask'd of everybody, and he obtained a much larger sum than he expected, with which he erected the capacious and very elegant meeting-house that stands in Arch-street.

1740

Fall: This was a poor harvest year all over Europe. For the 2d year in a row, the [potato](#) crop failed in [Ireland](#). There was meanwhile [famine](#) in Russia and France, with the people reduced to eating the roots of grass. There was a prison riot in [Paris](#) in protest of a cut in the bread ration, and in the putting down of this riot 50 prisoners were killed. Proportionate to the population levels of that era, it is possible that this famine was in Ireland even worse than what has become known to us as the "Great Famine," of 1845-1852. Nearly 400,000 [Irish Catholics](#) were dying — which would have been approximately one out of every five. Some parents were blinding their children in order to make them more suitable objects for charity, it being considerably more difficult to ignore, and to allow to slowly starve, psychologically, a blind child than a sighted child.

The famine in northern [Ireland](#) was instituting a 3d wave of emigration from Ulster, one made up of one quarter of the population. These Scotch-Irish settlers began moving into the western part of Pennsylvania, Virginia, and [North Carolina](#).

1741

Fall: For the 3d year in a row, the [potato](#) crop failed in [Ireland](#).

FAMINE



IRELAND

IRELAND

October 29: There was a report in the Boston Weekly News-Journal that a shipload of Irish immigrants had arrived in port, who having eaten all their candles had been reduced to consuming the bodies of passengers who had died.

FAMINE

1742

Fall: An adequate potato crop was obtained in Ireland for the 1st time since the crop of 1738. There had been no general famine because the peasantry had not yet become totally dependent on this one crop.

1760

In Ireland in about this period was initiated a mitigation of the Penal Law system of religio-racial oppression of the local Catholics by the Protestant English.

1765

Some Ulster Scots, ancestors of Andrew Jackson, in this year emigrated to the North American continent, bringing with them their Ulster Scot Protestant notions of the nature of “democracy.” Here we may consider the words of William W. Freehling, who in his ROAD TO DISUNION has characterized this peculiar mind-set in the following manner:



Jackson, race-obsessed authoritarian ... aimed at institutionalizing classic *herrenvolk* democracy: both the complete equality of white men and the absolute superiority of whites over non-whites.

IRELAND
SCOTLAND
DISUNION

1775

Henry Grattan became the leader of the [Irish](#) Patriot Party. The American War of Independence formented unrest in [Ireland](#).

[Thomas Bewick](#) was awarded seven guineas by the Royal Society for the Encouragement of Arts, Manufactures and Commerce for a wood engraving of a noble fox hunter who is angrily applying the whip to a tired old hound — under a blasted tree on which a carrion bird waits patiently to feast upon the remains of the fox that is being ripped apart by the younger hounds in the background.



(No wonder we were declaring our independence from these people!)

HIS AUTOBIOGRAPHY

1776

Britain’s House of Commons heard the first motion to outlaw [slavery](#) in Britain and her colonies. David Hartley proclaimed human enslavement to be “contrary to the laws of God and the rights of man” but his motion did not carry. “How is it,” asked [Dr. Samuel Johnson](#), “that we hear the loudest yelps for liberty among the drivers of Negroes?” The British author was only one of many Europeans who thought it strange that a nation run by slavemasters should be so noisily demanding its own freedom.

In a fresco by Brumidi on a wall of our federal capitol, a group of white slavemasters are caught in the act of demanding their own freedom:



Many Scots-[Irish](#) emigrants were becoming involved in the American War of Independence.

1778

The [Irish](#) Volunteers was formed.

1782

Bishop [Thomas Percy](#) was made bishop of Dromore, in County Down in [Ireland](#).

This was the period of the Anglo-Irish Protestant independence movement (until 1798). The “United Irishmen” rebellion suffered defeat. The English Penal Laws were relaxed. Poyning’s Law was revoked. Legislative independence was granted. Grattan’s Parliament persuaded the British to declare Irish independence, but in name only.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1783

[Irish](#) Volunteers (all Protestant) forced repeal of Poyning's Law and gained a free Irish Parliament in Dublin. The English make other concessions.

1784

Carl Peter Thunberg had been allowed to travel from the foreign trader's concession on an artificial island in the bay of [Nagasaki](#) to Edo ([Tokyo](#)), and the result was his *FLORA JAPONICA*.

In [Japan](#), some 300,000 had died of starvation and associated disease, and corpses were being consumed (the Irish [potato](#) crop failed and there was famine in [Ireland](#) as well).

1786

January 30, Monday: In Mountmellick in county Laois in [Ireland](#), which had been the home of Friend [William Edmundson](#), Friends John Pim, John Heiton, Jack Gatchell, and Mungo Bewley opened a boarding school intended for girls from poor [Quaker](#) families.

1790

Armagh Observatory was built.

IRELAND
ASTRONOMY

1791

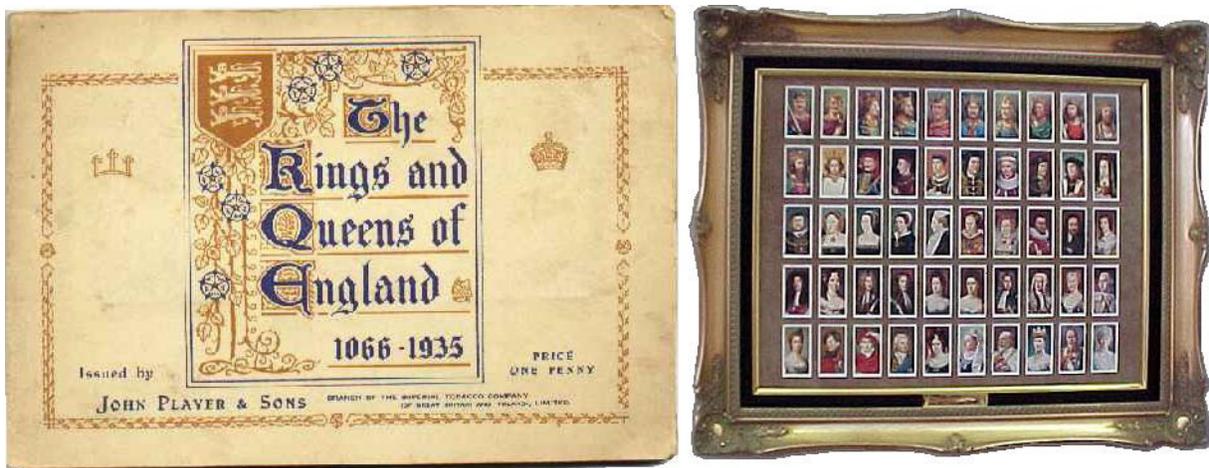
United Irishmen founded in Belfast by Theobald Wolfe Tone.

IRELAND

July 14, day: Demonstrations and commemorations take place in Dublin, Belfast and elsewhere in [Ireland](#) on the second anniversary of the fall of the Bastille.

With no prospect of any income, Niccolo Piccinni departed from Paris with his wife and daughters, for their home in Naples (in an age of revolution, his operas had become passe).

Hostility toward the [Reverend Joseph Priestley](#) had increased when he wrote a pamphlet defending the French Revolution, that was expanded into A POLITICAL DIALOGUE ON THE GENERAL PRINCIPLES OF GOVERNMENT. In the book he had expressed political ideas similar to those of Tom Paine in RIGHTS OF MAN. He had expressed a hope the events in France might increase the chances of “universal peace and goodwill among all nations,” by making possible what he termed an “empire of reason.” His prediction that the French Revolution heralded a change in the role of the monarchy had badly upset King George III. The powers that be in England knew very well that there was only appropriate topic of conversation on their tight little island, that topic being how to marry up into greater wealth and standing, all other chitchat being in the category of useless, or in the category of dangerous, or in the category of both useless and dangerous. The monarch and his satraps were particularly offended by Priestley’s view that in the future monarchs were to be merely the “first servants of the people and accountable to them.”



THE SERVANTS

When he commented about the need to put kegs of gunpowder “under the old building of error and superstition,” he was assigned the nickname “Gunpowder”:

We are, as it were, laying gunpowder, grain by grain, under the old building of error and superstition, which a single spark may hereafter inflame, so as to produce an instantaneous explosion; in consequence of which that edifice, the erection of which has been the work of ages, may be overturned in a moment, and so effectually as that the same foundation can never be built upon again.

He took part in forming a Constitutional Society in Birmingham. (What was a “Constitutional Society”? — Well, for starters, the English government ought to be more similar to the federal government of the USA!)

I consider my settlement at Birmingham as the happiest event of my life.

Tories in the city made inflammatory speeches attacking Priestley's political ideas. Slogans such as NO PHILOSOPHERS adorned Birmingham's walls. When a dinner was held at Dudley's Hotel in Temple Row to celebrate the 2nd anniversary of the storming of the Bastille, the opportunity arose. The impoverished of the city had already been carefully primed and inflamed by the inherited-old-money richies there, for a sponsored riot against its earned-new-money richies. The Reverend Priestley, who had not even attended this the dinner, was quoted in the streets as having offered a toast "The King's Head — On A Plate!" Defend your Monarch against this philosophical insolence! On this day he was hosting a party to honor Bastille Day at his home, and the inflamed mob broke into the home and destroyed most of his papers, books, and scientific equipment. The mob of religious people also burned the homes and laboratories of other Birmingham dissenters and philosophers (scientists), such as William Withering, John Ryland, John Taylor, and George Humphry. The



father of [William Hazlitt](#) would be one of those who protested this persecution of the [Reverend Priestley](#). The Reverend would need to abandon Birmingham for London, and would teach history and science at the New Unitarian College at Hackney near London. James Watt would comment, "The Hellish miscreants who committed so many outrages here, by banishing Dr Priestley have almost broke up our Lunar Society."

THE LUNAR SOCIETY OF BIRMINGHAM

December 14, day: [Charles Wolfe](#) was born in Dublin, [Ireland](#).

1792

In [Ireland](#) during this period, in an effort to counter Anglo-Irish radicals, the British Protestant overlords were attempting to form alliances with Irish [Catholic](#) leaders.

December 16, day: The Dublin Society of United Ireland called on volunteers to take up arms in the defense of [Ireland](#).



IRELAND

IRELAND

1793

In [Ireland](#), the Protestants granted the [Catholics](#) the right to vote.

14th of the 11th month: [Friend Job Scott](#), in Ballitore, [Ireland](#), indicated in a dictated letter that he was in the throes of the [small-pox](#). After providing some advice for his children as to their education, etc., he asked that if he should succumb, he be granted a “plain and simple” interment.

22d of the 11th month: [Job Scott](#) died of the [small-pox](#) at the home of Elizabeth Shackleton in Ballitore, [Ireland](#) in the 43d year of his age. (His children would become Swedenborgians and when one of them would get married with a [Quaker](#), that Quaker would be disowned.)

1795

February 23, day: Only a month after his appointment, Earl Fitzwilliam is recalled as Lord Lieutenant of [Ireland](#) by the British government for allowing the introduction of a Catholic Reform bill. This is seen by most Catholics as a retrenchment away from emancipation.

September 21, day: When [Catholics](#) and Protestants clashed in County Armagh, [Ireland](#) in the Battle of the Diamond, some 20-30 people were sent to meet their Savior. As a result of this the Orange Order would be established to protect Protestant interests.

1796

December 15, day: 43 French ships carrying 15,000 fighting men departed from Brest for an invasion of [Ireland](#). To avoid the British blockade, they would sail south that night. At the Pointe du Raz one of the ships of the line would founder on rocks, with the loss of almost all aboard. The ships would become scattered and by the morning light, only 17 of the 43 would remain together.

In a letter to [Ludwig van Beethoven](#), Johann Georg Albrechtsberger mentioned a conversation on the previous day with Joseph Haydn, about a big oratorio that the composer was going to call “The Creation” — Haydn had even played a little of it for him.



IRELAND

IRELAND

December 29, day: In a diary we find the earliest instance, as yet known to our historians, of a commercially procured [Christmas](#)-season present: “Daniel Livermore made a present of an [Almanack](#) to my son Cyrus.”⁴¹

During the 2d half of December a French fleet of 43 sails conveying a fighting force of 14,450 had arrived in Bantry Bay with the [Irish](#) politician Theobald Wolfe Tone (only bad weather had prevented them from coming ashore to invade the island).

1798

[Stephen Burroughs](#), the rogue plagiarist and counterfeiter, authored an initial volume of a MEMOIR OF MY OWN LIFE and it was printed in Hanover, New Hampshire.

MUMPERY

He included a truly offensive poem similar to the broadside THE INDIAN PEDIGREE, *SUI CAPET ILLE FACIT* which had appeared in 1794.  This effort at nastiness, published as a hymn, depicted not native Americans but the [Irish](#) as the litter of a sow that had been impregnated by Satan.

Note that this little poem is not a simple boundary transgression. A simple boundary transgression would be like the Holy Spirit descending upon the Virgin Mary. What is being described in the hymn is a boundary transgression, yes, but it is a boundary transgression described as being between the epitome of evil, Satan, and the epitome of filthiness, an old sow. The nice story being told about the Irish, therefore, is that they are a not a mere boundary transgression — they are the ultimate in evilness conjoined with the ultimate in filthiness.

(We can see readily infer the conclusion of this line of reasoning: Anything that an Englishman might do to destroy an Irishman, literally anything, will be found pleasing in the eye of God.)

February-October: The United Irishmen Rebellion, “The Rising of 98.” The rebels of [Ireland](#) were aided and abetted by a small French fleet.

June 21, day: The [Irish](#) Rebellion was fatally wounded when Wolfe Tone’s insurgents were defeated at Vinegar Hill.

1799

By the end of the 18th Century, the few potato plants fetched from the Andes had created not only a major [Irish](#) dependency upon one crop, but a major dependency in the western regions of England, and a major dependency in the regions of Central Europe which would become Germany. The months of June, July, and August were becoming known as “the meal months,” during which folks needed to eat “stirabout” instead of the usual [potatoes](#) and buttermilk because the old stores of potatoes had been exhausted while the new crop was not yet ready to be dug from the ground.⁴²

FAMINE

41. Until the 1830s, gifts would be typically given at the new year rather than on [Christmas Day](#). After that decade gifts would begin to be given during the entire holiday period, and then gift-giving would refocus itself upon our newly reconfigured family-oriented and food-oriented, no longer downtown riot-oriented and drink-oriented, Christmas holiday to the exclusion of the New Year’s holiday. Refer to Stephen Nissenbaum’s THE BATTLE FOR CHRISTMAS.



19TH CENTURY

1800

➡ At age 15, [Thomas De Quincey](#)'s translation from [Horace](#)'s TWENTY-SECOND ODE won 3d prize in a contest and was published in [The Monthly Preceptor](#). Accidentally, he encountered [King George III](#) in the Frogmore gardens near Windsor Castle. During his summer holiday he went to [Ireland](#). He was sent to the Manchester Grammar School because in that establishment he might after studying for 36 months qualify for a scholarship to Brasenose College, Oxford (he would not, however, complete this agenda, for after 19 months he would run away in an attempt to make contact with [William Wordsworth](#)).

➡ In this and the following year, there would be another severe food crisis in [Ireland](#). The “meal months” during which the old stores of [potatoes](#) had become exhausted while the new crop was not yet ready to be dug from the ground would be extended far beyond the usual June, July, and August.⁴³

FAMINE

➡ From the inscription on a gravestone at St. Bernard's Cemetery out Bedford Road about a mile or so past Sleepy Hollow Cemetery we derive the information that, in [Ireland](#), [Concord](#)'s [Michael Flannery](#) had been born in this year, and that he would live approximately one full century:

MICHAEL FLANNERY
1800, 1900.

➡ Spring: The British Parliament passed an Act of Union of Great Britain and [Ireland](#) which took away all Irish independence. The Irish Parliament was dissolved and the island placed under the sovereignty of Great Britain.

42. [Potatoes](#) are generally not fully mature in Ireland until October.
43. [Potatoes](#) are generally not fully mature in Ireland until October.



1801

 January 1, Thursday: In his Palermo observatory, Giuseppe Piazzi became the 1st person to discover an [asteroid](#). He would name this object Ceres (Ceres had been the Roman goddess associated with Sicily).

The Act of Union of Great Britain (England + Scotland) and [Ireland](#) came into force, with the Union Jack hoisted on the Tower of London to the firing of guns as the official flag of that United Kingdom. George III assumed the title King of Great Britain and Ireland. The [Irish](#) Parliament was abolished — theoretically, but of course only theoretically, two islands were to form one nation. For instance, due to this union, it began to be a flaming question in British politics whether any Catholic would ever be allowed to hold any government office.

The 1st census put the population of England and Wales at 9,168,000, of Britain at nearly 11,000,000 (75% rural) — the Irish population meanwhile was at 5,000,000.

London, population 864,000.
Paris, population 547,000.

 March 14, day: Because King George III was refusing to assent to any emancipation of the [Catholics](#) in his realm, William Pitt resigned after 17 years as Prime Minister. (This issue would not be resolved until 1828, when the Tory prime minister, the Duke of Wellington, would sponsor the passage of an act which allowed a Catholic, even an [Irish](#) one, to serve his government.)

1803

 May 2, Monday: The first stockholders meeting of the Chesapeake and Delaware [Canal](#) Company was held.

France sold its rights to Louisiana (the western drainage basin of the Mississippi River) to the United States of America for a price of \$11,250,000 in bonds, and \$3,750,000 in indemnities to American citizens with claims against France. The Louisiana Purchase Treaty was antedated to April 30th.

READ THE FULL TEXT

An [Irish](#) servant in the household of Judge Dana in Cambridge, named Samuel (family name not indicated on the record), of about 83 years, succumbed to “old age.”⁴⁴



 September 20, day: In [Ireland](#), Robert Emmett was executed for organizing another Rising.

[John Brown](#) died. Charles Rappleye, in his *SONS OF PROVIDENCE: THE BROWN BROTHERS, THE SLAVE TRADE, AND THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION* (NY: Simon & Schuster, 2006, page 336), on the one hand suggests –and on the other hand carefully refrains from suggesting– that John’s death was the reason that his brother [Friend Moses Brown](#) withdrew in approximately this timeframe from active participation in the abolitionist cause (we may remember that Rappleye’s major thesis in this recent trade press book shot through with factual errors is that all the [Rhode Island](#) hoopla had amounted to a mere case of “sibling rivalry”):

It may presume too much to say that John’s death spelled the end of Moses Brown’s campaign against slavery, but it’s hard not to see a connection. Moses remained invested in the cause of Africans in America, and continued his personal engagement in attending to their welfare. But after 1803, he did not author another piece of legislation relating to slavery or the slave trade, nor did he take any steps to orchestrate lobbying efforts by the abolition society.

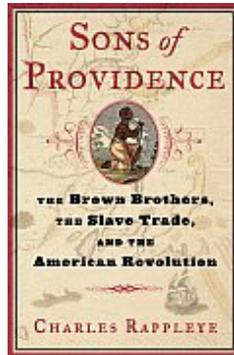
It may be that Moses was simply exhausted by twenty-five years of politics, advocacy, and agitation. It’s possible that, according to some unspoken calculus, Moses decided he had paid off the debt he incurred by his role in the voyage of the *Sally*. And it is true that the abolition movement as a whole lost momentum around the turn of the century, having achieved much of its agenda in the North and seeing little prospect of success in the South. But in Moses’ case, it appears there was something else at work. It was not like him to leave off a pursuit he cared about so deeply as slavery simply because the political winds had shifted. And though he was growing old, he remained active

44. Here is something that will remind us of Noel Ignatiev’s *HOW THE IRISH BECAME WHITE*: the death of this Irishman with no family name on record would be recorded by the town of Cambridge under the end/other category they had entitled “NEGROES”:

NEGROES

- , negro child of Jethro Gardner, July —, 1798.
- , Mary, bur. Feb. 23, 1843, a. 60 y. [Consumption](#).
- Anningdine, negro of Mr. Stedman’s, Aug. —, 1798, a. 70 y. Fever. CR1.
- Belinda, negro of T. Mason, May 13, 1799. (a. 40 y., CR1).
- Catro, formerly servant of Bosinger Foster, Aug. 10, 1815, a. 51 y. Elopepsy. CR1.
- Cesar, negro man servant of Pres. Willard, —, 1789, a. abt. 40 y. CR1.
- Cissley, negro serv. of Rev. William Brattle, Apr. 8, 1714 (a. 15 y., GR1).
- Dinah, negro servant of Thomas Brattle, Esq., Jan. 8, 1798, "at a very advanced age."
- Dinah, Oct. 24, 1802, a. 56 y. Cancer. Negro at Judge Dana’s, CR1.
- Emerson, an apprentice, May —, 1788, a. 20 y. CR1.
- Jack, Mar. 17, 1807. Negro.
- Jane, servant to Andrew Bordman, Mar. 11, 1740, a. 22 y. 7 m. GR1.
- Mark, negro man of Judge Lee, Oct. — 1789, a. 22 y. CR1.
- Mark, Aug. —, 1798, a. 20 y. [Consumption](#). Negro. A stanger. CR1.
- Peter, July 13, 1798, a. 25 y. [Consumption](#). Negro. CR1.
- Prudence, a negro, Nov. 9, 1797, a. 23 y. CR1.
- Samuel, negro, ch. of J. Gardner, July 21, 1798, a. 2 y. [Consumption](#). CR1.
- Samuel, an Irish domestic in Judge Dana’s family, May 2, 1803, a. 83 y. Old age. CR1.
- Scipio, Sept. 15, 1802, a. abt. 80 y. Negro. CR1.
- Sylvia, Oct. 23, 1798, a. 33 y. Scirrous liver, Negro. Lived with Mrs. Lee. CR1.
- Tobe, negro servant of Spencer Phipps, Oct. 8, 1714.

in several fields, realizing some of his greatest successes late in his long life. His abrupt retreat on the question of slavery suggests that in this most personal and most heartfelt quest, the looming presence of his brother was a more powerful factor than Moses ever acknowledged, even to himself... With John gone, Moses had lost his personal stake in the contest.⁴⁵



1806

➡ After a special Mass at the 1st Church in [Northampton](#), celebrated by Cardinal Cheverus, two [Irish](#) immigrants, a Dailey and a Haligan, were [hanged](#) by the neck until they were dead.



Then they were found to have been innocent — having come here for refuge, they had in effect been murdered in cold blood by local authority.⁴⁶

45. Those of you who want to know the real reason why Moses discontinued his abolitionist activities should consult Rosalind Cobb Wiggins’s article “Paul and Stephen, Unlikely Friends” in [Quaker History](#), Volume 90 Number 1 (Spring 2001). The real reason will surprise you.

46. Hey, this wouldn’t be the last time!



1811

→ circa 1811-1829: This was the period in [Ireland](#) of Catholic struggle for emancipation.

→ A baby girl named Ann was born, who would grow up to marry [Michael Flannery](#) and be brought from [Ireland](#) to [Concord](#).

→ February 5, Tuesday: [William Henry Harvey](#) was born at Summerville near Limerick, [Ireland](#), the youngest of 11 children of Friend Joseph Massey Harvey and Friend Rebecca Mark Harvey. His father, Friend Joseph Massey Harvey, was a prominent merchant. He would start his education at Ballitore School in County Kildare (a [Quaker](#) institution, emphasizing science). Upon leaving school he would join the family business.

In person I am tall, and in a good degree awkward. I am silent, and when I do speak say little, particularly to people of whom I am afraid, or with whom I am not intimate. I care not for city sports, or for the diversions of the country. I am equally unknown to any healthful amusement of boys. I cannot swim nor skate. I know nothing of the delight of these, and yet I can amuse myself and be quite happy, seemingly without any one to share my happiness. My botanical knowledge extends to about thirty of the commonest plants. I am very fond of botany, but I have not much opportunity of learning anything, because I have only to show the plant to James White, who tells me all about it, which I forget the next minute. My mineralogy embraces about twelve minerals, of which I know only the names. I am totally unacquainted with foreign shells, and know only about two hundred and fifty native ones. As to ornithology, I have stuffed about thirteen birds. In chemistry I read a few books, and tried some experiments. In lithography I broke a stone and a printing press. These are my pretensions to science.

King George III of England having been legally declared to have become in some unknown manner incapacitated –insane– George, Prince of Wales set his signature to documents making him regent for his father. He was 48 years old while his whacko daddy was 72. (Although by strict interpretation the Regency Era begins in this year and ends in 1820 with the death of George III and the crowning of the Prince Regent as King George IV, in common use the term often describes a broader era, to wit the period between the end of the Georgian age and the beginning of the Victorian age, many of what we term “Regency” romances actually being set during the previous decade.)

In America, Friend [Stephen Wanton Gould](#) wrote in his journal:

3rd day 5 of 2 M My mind has been refreshed this Afternoon with the precious savor of the spirit of life, it is as food to an hungry Man - Set the eveng at home except a short call at Neighbor Towles

September 30, day: [Thomas Percy](#) died in Dromore, in County Down in [Ireland](#).

1812

Early February: The Shelleys traveled to Dublin. In [Ireland](#), [Percy Bysshe Shelley](#) would be publishing two pamphlets, ADDRESS TO THE IRISH PEOPLE and PROPOSALS FOR AN ASSOCIATION OF ... PHILANTHROPISTS.

[Samuel Taylor Coleridge](#) was in the Lake District of England for his final time, until a point during March.

April 6, Monday: After British and Portuguese troops captured, from a combined garrison of French, Spanish, and Hessians, the fortress and city of Badajoz in Extremadura, what followed was a plunder, rape, and murder of local citizens.

The [Shelleys](#) returned from [Ireland](#) to Wales.

Friend [Stephen Wanton Gould](#) wrote in his journal:

2nd day 6 of 4 M // Oh! that I was what I ought to be. Altho' I do try to maintain the conflict yet such is the stroving between flesh & spirit that in consequence of the predominance of the former the latter is often but very lean & barren. -

RELIGIOUS SOCIETY OF FRIENDS

1813

July 12, day: First recorded "12th of July" sectarian riots in Belfast, [Ireland](#).

1814

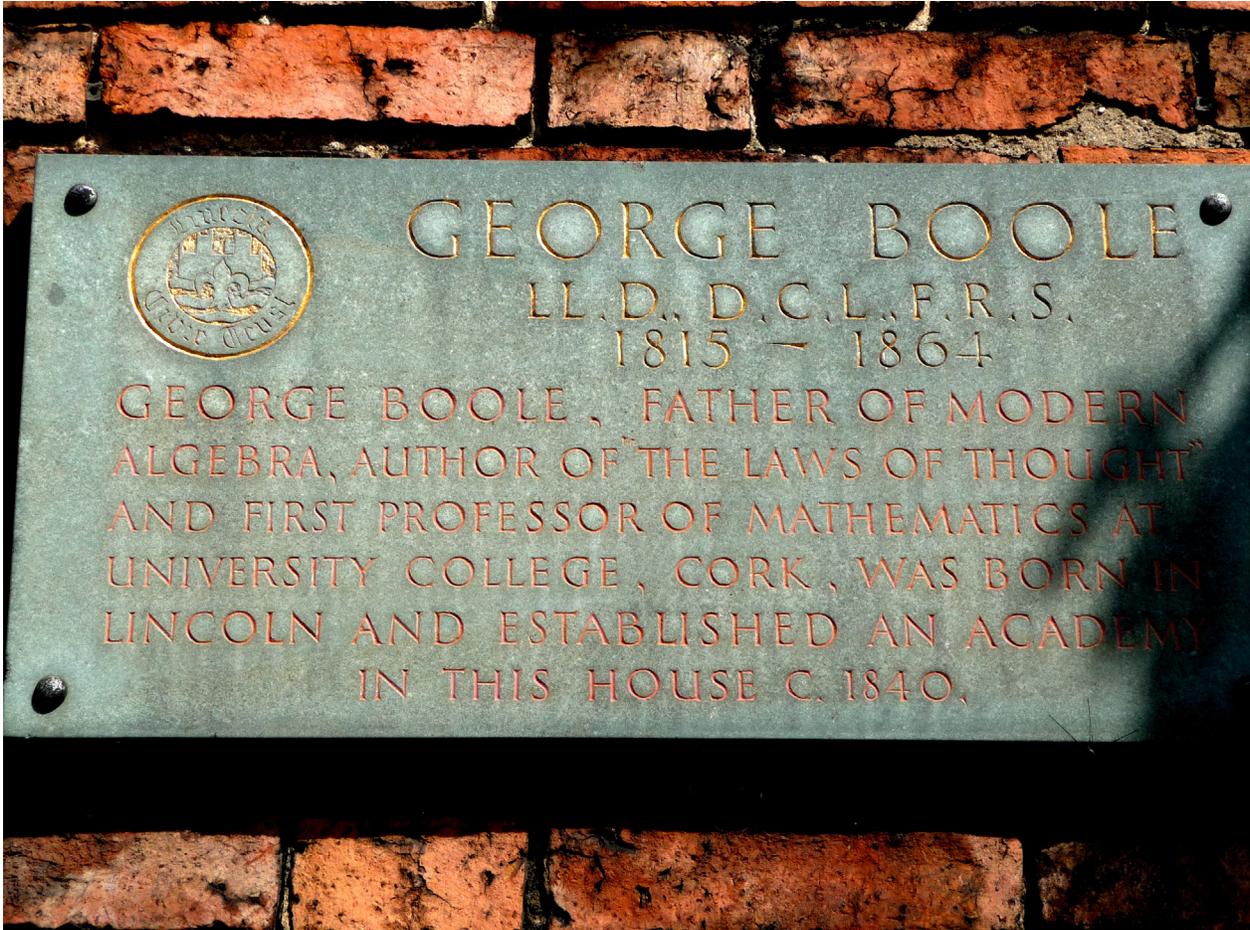
Daniel O'Connell opinioned that the group which he was seeking to represent, the [Catholic Irish](#), "had ceased to be whitewashed negroes, and had thrown off ...[as far as the Whigs were concerned] all traces of the colour of servitude."

SLAVERY

1815



November 2, Thursday: George Boole, who would create Boolean logic, was born.



Friend [Stephen Wanton Gould](#) wrote in his journal:

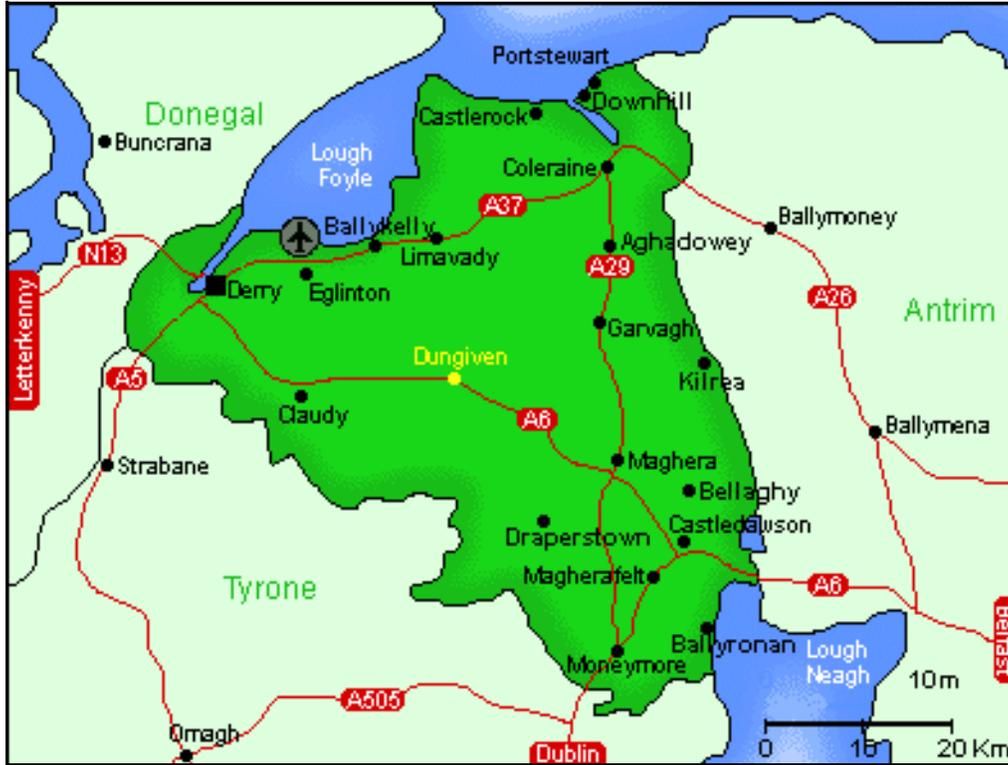
5th day 2nd of 11th M 1815 / A considerable number of friends being absent at the Quarterly Meeting now sitting at Swansea - Our meeting was quite small, but I trust there were minds present who were favor'd with devotion

RELIGIOUS SOCIETY OF FRIENDS

IRELAND

IRELAND

➡ November 3, Friday: John Mitchel was born at Camnish near Dungiven, County Londonderry, [Ireland](#), the son of a nonconformist (Presbyterian) minister.



A setting of the *Salve regina* in D by Antonio Salieri was performed for the initial time, in Nikolsburg.

1816

➡ August: After a rainy summer, the [potato](#) crop in [Ireland](#) failed. (West Ireland potato famines: 1739, 1816, 1821, 1822, 1831, 1835, 1836, mid-1840s.) In this and the following three years, there would be another severe food crisis in Ireland. The “meal months” during which the old stores of potatoes had become exhausted while the new crop was not yet ready to be dug from the ground would be extended far beyond the usual June, July, and August.⁴⁷

FAMINE

1817

➡ After attending private schools in [Ireland](#), [Thomas Davis](#) immigrated to the United States and settled in [Providence, Rhode Island](#). He would engage in the manufacture of jewelry.

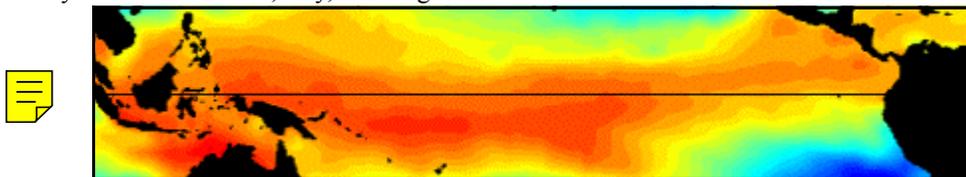
47. [Potatoes](#) are generally not fully mature in [Ireland](#) until October.

Largest Scale Global Weather Oscillations around 1817

	Southern Oscillation	South Pacific current reversal
1814	strong	warm El Niño strong
1815	absent	cold La Niña
1816	absent	cold La Niña
1817	moderate +	warm El Niño moderate +
1818	absent	cold La Niña
1819	moderate +	warm El Niño moderate +
1820	absent	cold La Niña
1821	moderate	warm El Niño moderate
1822	absent	cold La Niña
1823	absent	cold La Niña

The southern ocean / atmosphere “seesaw” links to periodic Indonesian east monsoon droughts, Australian droughts, deficient Indian summer monsoons, and deficient Ethiopian monsoon rainfall causing weak annual Nile floods. This data is presented from Tables 6.2-6.3 of Quinn, William H. “A study of Southern Oscillation-related climatic activity for AD 622-1900 incorporating Nile River flood data,” pages 119-49 in Diaz, Henry F. and Vera Markgraf, eds. EL NIÑO: HISTORICAL AND PALEOCLIMATIC ASPECTS OF THE SOUTHERN OSCILLATION. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 1992.

The weather in [India](#) this year would be even worse than the extremely heavy rains and flooding of the year 1815, and the food situation there worsened radically. In the Western world, the food crisis in [Ireland](#) also worsened radically during this year. The “meal months” during which the old stores of [potatoes](#) had become exhausted while the new crop was not yet ready to be dug from the ground on that island would be extended far beyond the usual June, July, and August.⁴⁸



FAMINE

There would be a population migration during the traveling season of this year, but this migration, known as “[Ohio](#) fever,” was due rather to the failed crops of the previous growing season during the cold summer of 1816, rather than to the weather during this summer of 1817.

48. [Potatoes](#) are generally not fully mature in Ireland until October.



IRELAND

IRELAND

 July 12, Saturday: At Dannybrook in County Cork, [Ireland](#), the world's 1st flower show was held.

On the continent of Europe, Karl Drais von Sauerbronn demonstrated a bicycle course.

The Boston newspaper Columbian Centinel coined the phrase “Era of Good Feelings” to characterize the climate of the administration of President James Monroe.



IRELAND

IRELAND

There is an electronic service out of Majordomo@angus.mystery.com that delivers information about specific days of the year. Here is what it presently has to offer anent historic Birthdays on our famous July 12th:

- In 0000 100 B.C. — [Julius Caesar](#), Roman emperor
- In 1730 [Josiah Wedgwood](#), English pottery designer, manufacturer
- In 1817 [Henry Thoreau](#) (at Concord MA), naturalist, author, always had [Ralph Waldo Emerson](#) around to bail him out of trouble
- In 1849 [Sir William Osler](#), Canadian physician, teacher, author
- In 1854 [George Eastman](#) (at Waterville NY), inventor of the Kodak camera
- In 1868 [Stefan George](#), German lyric poet
- In 1895 [Oscar Hammerstein II](#), lyricist who worked with Richard Rodgers
- In 1895 [R. Buckminster Fuller](#), architect, inventor, philosopher, inventor of the geodesic dome
- In 1904 [Pablo Neruda](#), Chilean poet (Residence on Earth) (Nobel 1971)
- In 1908 [Milton Berle](#), comedian, “Uncle Miltie,” “Mr. Television”
- In 1917 [Andrew Wyeth](#), American painter
- In 1922 [Mark Hatfield](#) (R), Oregon Senator
- In 1934 [Van Cliburn](#), pianist
- In 1937 [Dr. William Cosby](#), comedian, actor
- In 1944 [Denise Nichols](#) (in Detroit MI)
- In 1957 [Mel Harris](#)

This service also characterizes events worth noting which occurred on a specific day of the year, in this case July 12th ...

- In 1543 England’s [King Henry VIII](#) wed [Catherine Parr](#) (6th and last wife).
- In 1689 [Orangeman’s Day](#) — Battle of the Boyne, Protestant victory in Ireland.
- In 1812 US forces led by Gen. William Hull invaded Canada during the [War of 1812](#).
- In 1817 [First flower show](#) was held, at Donnybrook, County Cork, Ireland.
- In 1862 Congress authorized the [Medal of Honor](#).
- In 1927 [Babe Ruth](#) hit 30th of 60 homers.
- In 1928 [First televised tennis match](#).
- In 1933 Congress passed first [minimum wage law](#) (\$0.33 per hour, which in constant dollars amounts to approximately half what the minimum wage law now requires).
- In 1934 US Disciplinary Barracks on [Alcatraz Island](#) abandoned.
- In 1951 Yankee [Allie Reynolds](#) no-hit the Indians, final score 1-0.
- In 1957 [Dwight Eisenhower](#) was the 1st President to board a helicopter (fortunately, not the last).
- In 1960 [Echo I](#), first passive satellite launched. USSR’s [Sputnik 5](#) launched with 2 dogs.
- In 1962 [Cosmonaut Popovich](#) in space first time 2, manned craft in space.
- In 1967 [5th Mayor’s Trophy Game](#), Mets beat Yanks 4-0.
- In 1975 [São Tomé](#) and [Príncipe](#) off the coast of Africa gained their independence from Portugal.
- In 1977 First free flight test of [Enterprise](#).
- In 1978 [Sun Bank Building](#) opened.
- In 1979 [Gilbert and Ellice Islands](#) gained independence from Britain.
- In 1979 [Minnie Ripperton](#) died of cancer at 30.
- In 1984 [Geraldine Ferraro](#) became first woman major-party VP candidate.
- In 1985 Doctors discovered a cancerous growth in [President Reagan](#)’s large intestine.



The 1st Stanza in the Life of Henry Thoreau

FALL 1817	JULY 1817	AUGUST	SEPTEMBER
WINTER 1817-1818	OCTOBER	NOVEMBER	DECEMBER 1817
SPRING 1818	JANUARY 1818	FEBRUARY	MARCH
SUMMER 1818	APRIL	MAY	JUNE 1818

1818

➡ The food crisis in [Ireland](#) continued in all its severity. The “meal months” during which the old stores of [potatoes](#) had become exhausted while the new crop was not yet ready to be dug from the ground would be extended far beyond the usual June, July, and August.⁴⁹

FAMINE

1819

➡ The food crisis in [Ireland](#) was continuing in all its severity. The “meal months” during which the old stores of [potatoes](#) had become exhausted while the new crop was not yet ready to be dug from the ground would be extended far beyond the usual June, July, and August.⁵⁰

IRISH POTATO FAMINE

49. [Potatoes](#) are generally not fully mature in [Ireland](#) until October.

50. [Potatoes](#) are generally not fully mature in [Ireland](#) until October.



1820

 [Zachariah Allen](#) began, on a worn-out plot of 40 acres in [Smithfield, Rhode Island](#) which he was unable to lease any longer even as pasture, an experiment in silviculture that now seems to us to have been the first such attempt in New England and perhaps in the entire United States (this woodlot has become part of the present-day Lincoln Woods State Park). He planted trees and began a 67-year period of keeping careful track of expenses. The cost of planting these trees was \$45 and the plot had been appraised to have a value of \$600.

At about this time, the American potato and eggplant members of the nightshade family (*Solanacea*) already having gained a widespread acceptance, the [tomato](#) (*Lycopersicon esculentum*) member of that family was also beginning to gain acceptability in the USA as a food for civilized people. In [Newport, Rhode Island](#) Michel Felice Corne again attempted to grow the tomato in his garden – and this time, unlike in his Salem MA garden in 1802, the plant would grow very well and produce a succulent harvest. Soon his neighbors would be planting tomatoes as well! During this decade, several cookbooks would be including tomatoes in recipes. William Cobbett, your ordinary journalist with a penchant for fighting lost battles, having lost the bones of Tom Paine (!), decided to warn against the influence of the [potato](#). Nobody, of course, paid the slightest attention, not because he had lost his hero's bones, nor because over-reliance on a single staple crop can't be an exceedingly risky business proposition — but because you've got to join them you simply can't fight them.

FAMINE
THOMAS PAINE

THE NIGHTSHADES (SOLANACEAE)

- — [Solanum tuberosum](#)
- — [Tomato Lycopersicon esculentum](#)
- — chili peppers
- — eggplant
- — deadly nightshade
- — [Nicotiana tabacum](#)
- — henbane
- — Jimson weed
- — petunia
- — plus some 2,000 other species grouped into 75 genera



IRELAND

IRELAND

 July 12, Wednesday: Pope Pius VII pronounced the separation of the Count and Countess Guiccioli. The wife Teresa would go to live with her father Count Gamba while the husband [George Gordon, Lord Byron](#) would continue for 15 months to reside at the Palazzo Guiccioli.

Mass had been first performed in the port city of Charleston on the eastern coast of the American colonies in 1786 by an [Italian](#) priest on his way to South America, for a congregation of merely a dozen persons. By a year or two later the local congregation had risen to several hundred and was being tended to by an Irish priest in an abandoned Methodist meetinghouse (in 1789 this property was purchased by the Reverend Thomas Keating and the building repurposed as “St. Mary’s”). In 1791 the [Roman Catholic Church](#) of Charleston had been incorporated by Act of the Legislature. The Diocese of Charleston was established on this day to include both what is now Georgia and what is now [North Carolina](#). The first Bishop of Charleston, the Right Reverend John England, would be consecrated in Cork, [Ireland](#) on September 21, 1820 and would arrive on this coast during December (Georgia would in 1850 be separated off as the territory of the new Diocese of Savannah, and [North Carolina](#) would in 1868 become a vicariate Apostolic).

 December 30, Saturday: Bishop John England arrived in Charleston from [Ireland](#). His diocese would consist of small groups of [Catholics](#) scattered across North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, and a portion of Florida. In the South he would, of course, offer separate Mass and Vesper services for persons of color.

Friend [Stephen Wanton Gould](#) wrote in his journal:

*7th day 30th of 12th M / I am this day 39 Years of Age,
& am sensible of it, & feel the necessity of greater dedication
of heart, yet am in hopes my Spiritual account is no worse than
last Year
This Afternoon recd a pleasant letter from Uncle Stanton. –
Took tea with my H & John at Br John Rodmans. –*

RELIGIOUS SOCIETY OF FRIENDS

1821



When the potato crop again failed in Ireland as it had in 1800-1801 and in 1816-1819, the nature of Irish emigration began to change drastically. Previously the immigrants to America had come from families of Protestants in the North who could afford the transatlantic fare. Suddenly the British government was organizing mass emigration from the South in order to avert famine in the counties of Mayo, Clare, Kerry, and Cork. Some 50,000 would starve or die of starvation-related diseases from Donegal to Youghal (the years of the West Ireland potato famines: 1739, 1816, 1821, 1822, 1831, 1835, 1836, mid-1840s). The goal of the Colonial Office was to provide 2,000 “assisted places” per year. At first the poor Irish Catholics assumed that the grim ships were “transportation”, taking their friends and relatives to what would amount to penal servitude in Australia — which, given the climate of British opinion in regard to the Irish as would be witnessed for instance soon in the early published attitudes of Thomas Carlyle, would not in those times one would have to acknowledge have been an altogether unrealistic suspicion.



According to Simon Heffer's MORAL DESPERADO: A LIFE OF THOMAS CARLYLE (London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1995), page 42:

In the ten years between the 1811 and 1821 censuses the population of Britain rose by 17%, from 12,000,000 to 14,000,000. Wages, which had risen steadily in real terms since the start of the Napoleonic Wars, were now beginning a downward progress that would not be stopped until after the repeal of the Corn Laws in 1846 – three years after Thomas Carlyle had railed against the economic and social conditions in England in PAST AND PRESENT. The political establishment was unsteady, the King mad, his son the Prince Regent dissolute and disliked. High stamp duties, of 4d on a newspaper, limited the circulation of opinions hostile to the Tory government or Lord Liverpool. A rash of prosecutions for seditious libel, and for the defamation of the King and his ministers, also occurred in 1817, as another means of encouraging conformity. A fall in demand immediately after the war led to a great rise in unemployment, exacerbated by the reduction in manpower of the army and navy. Sporadic rioting, and disturbances even among the middle classes, fed the Tory establishment's fear

Soon, however, letters would begin to arrive from the new continent, explaining that in fact they had not been taken around the world to Australia, that there were not very many anti-Catholic riots or lynchings going on in America, or at least not at that moment, that it was relatively easy to slip across the border from the United States of America to freedom in Canada, that it was relatively easy and risk-free for white people to walk away from the indenture systems then in effect in the USA and assume new identities, etc.

Population Trends

	England / Wales	Ireland
1821	12,000,000	6,800,000
1831	13,900,000	7,770,000
1841	15,920,000	8,180,000
1845	about 16,700,000	about 8,300,000 (the year of the blight, to be followed by famine and then by fever and emigration)
1851	17,930,000	6,550,000
1861	20,070,000	5,800,000
1871	31,629,299	5,410,000
1881	35,026,108	5,170,000

January 8, Monday: King Ferdinando arrived from [Naples](#) at Laibach (Ljubljana), where he was to meet with other crowned heads of Europe.

KENILWORTH by [Sir Walter Scott](#) was published by Constable & Co.

In the 97th year of his age a Mr. Huddy, on a wager, made his way the 15 miles from Lismore in [Ireland](#) (“A”), where he was postmaster, to Fermoy (“B”) with a large red night-cap on his head, in a Dungarvan oyster-tub, drawn by a pig, a badger, two cats, a goose, and a hedgehog, by the application of a pig-driver’s whip and a common cow’s horn. The newspapers recorded that as “one fool makes many,” the penalty of this wager was well observed along the way.⁵¹



51. This was “Plough Monday,” marking the end of the Christmas holidays and the need for husbandmen to return to their labors. In some regions, especially the north counties, a plough would be pulled on long ropes by teams of men in their shirtsleeves decorated with gay ribbons, to the doors of the villagers and townspeople. There would be music and morris-dancers, a youth would dress up as an old woman and be addressed as “Bessy,” and money would be collected which was usually spent on a supper.

➡ Summer: Properly preparation for the tour of a museum during the summer of 1821:



The [Irish](#) countryside was consumed in a lower-class [Catholic](#) millennialism that was anticipating that all Protestantism would be destroyed by 1825 (this was founded on a 1771 prophesy based upon the interpretation of the Apocalypse of St. John, by [Bishop Charles Walmsley Pastorino](#)). On the estates, in fear of these “Rockites,” as they were called because of their tendency to express their outraged righteousness through the throwing of stones, a Protestant family would fortify itself in its main house every evening among its Protestant attendants — dispatching its Catholic servants to spend the night isolated in an outbuilding.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1822

 In [Ireland](#) the “White-boys,” who had been active in 1761 until suppressed, were again committing outrages (they got this name from wearing their shirts over rather than under their coats, Madonna-style). A Constabulary Act established county police forces and a salaried Magistracy.

 July 12: The food crisis in [Ireland](#) was continuing, although this [famine](#) was not turning out to be so severe as the ones of 1800/1801 and of 1816/1819. In Dublin, “Orangemen” (supporters of English rule) were as usual peaceably decorating the statue of their King William on College Green when the [Catholic](#) population began to riot against them.

POTATO

The Sydney, Australia [Gazette](#) posted an alert that Thomas Brooks off the transport *Grenada*, John Heyburn off the transport *Minerva*, and John Creardon off the transport *Lord Sidmouth* were unaccountably absent from their posts of obligation and presumably at large among the public using false documents.

Gullah Jack and others were [hanged](#) in Charleston, South Carolina for having assisted Denmark Vesey in his ill-fated conspiracy to create a servile insurrection (the total of those hanged was rising to 34).

It had come to be reward-yourself time. The economist David Ricardo, accompanied by his wife, two younger daughters, a couple of maidservants and a courier, departed from London on a 5-month broadening “Grand Tour of the Continent.” They would pass through Calais and Brussels into Holland, stay at the Hague and Amsterdam, journey up the Rhine River to Bâle and tour Switzerland, cross from Geneva into Italy for excursions to the Mer de Glace and the Great St Bernard, and go over the Simplon pass to the Italian Lakes, Milan, Venice, and Florence. On their return they would pass through Pisa, Genoa, and Turin on their way to Paris. The trip would be memorialized and it is clear that a good time had been had by all.

WALDEN: If I wished a boy to know something about the arts and sciences, for instance, I would not pursue the common course, which is merely to send him into the neighborhood of some professor, where any thing is professed and practised but the art of life; -to survey the world through a telescope or a microscope, and never with his natural eye; to study chemistry, and not learn how his bread is made, or mechanics, and not learn how it is earned; to discover new satellites to Neptune, and not detect the motes in his eyes, or to what vagabond he is a satellite himself; or to be devoured by the monsters that swarm all around him, while contemplating the monsters in a drop of vinegar. Which would have advanced the most at the end of a month, -the boy who had made his own jack-knife from the ore which he had dug and smelted, reading as much as would be necessary for this, -or the boy who had attended the lectures on metallurgy at the Institute in the mean while, and had received a Rodgers' penknife from his father? Which would be most likely to cut his fingers? -To my astonishment I was informed on leaving college that I had studied navigation! -why, if I had taken one turn down the harbor I should have known more about it. Even the **poor** student studies and is taught only **political** economy, while that economy of living which is synonymous with philosophy is not even sincerely professed in our colleges. The consequence is, that while he is reading Adam Smith, Ricardo, and Say, he runs his father in debt irretrievably.

PEOPLE OF WALDEN

ADAM SMITH

DAVID RICARDO

JEAN-BAPTISTE SAY

1823

➡ In [Ireland](#), the foundation of the [Catholic](#) Association by Daniel O'Connell (this would be dissolved and then reconstituted in 1825).

A [Catholic](#) parish, St. Mary's in Charlestown, Massachusetts, was created for those worshipers who lived north of the Charles River.

➡ February 21, Friday: After holding curacies in County Tyrone, [Charles Wolfe](#) died in Queenstown, County Cork, [Ireland](#).

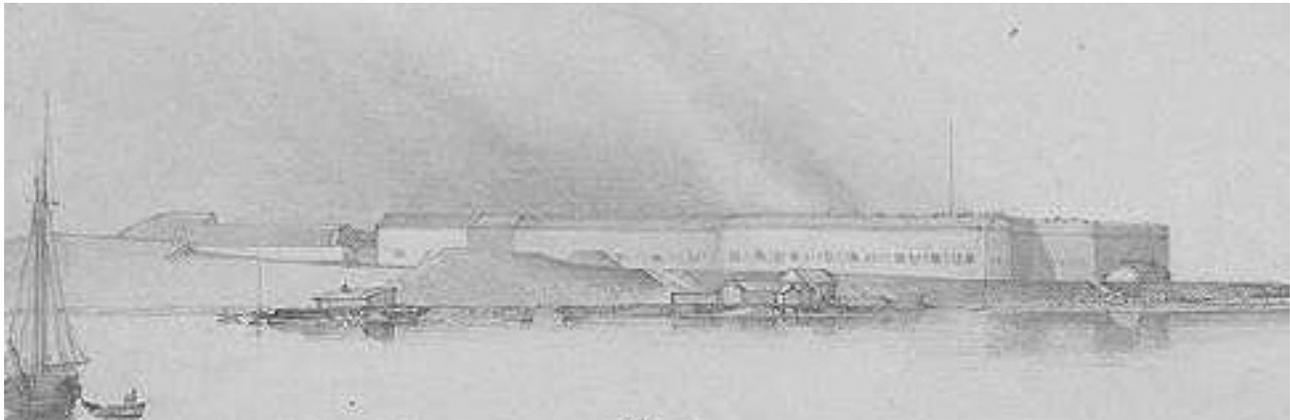
➡ Fall: [Horatio Wood](#) matriculated at [Harvard College](#).

Looking for a good location in which to set up their winter camp, fur trappers Jedediah Smith and Thomas Fitzpatrick led their crew south from the Yellowstone River to the Sweetwater River (they were guessing that this eastward-flowing river would in the following spring convey them to the Missouri River).

A pair of [slave-catchers](#) attired in Kentucky’s characteristic green leggings arrived in Lockport, New York. At that time Darius Comstock, a [Quaker](#), was employing a large crew of [Irish](#) laborers to dig a section of the [Erie Canal](#) he had under contract, and they were making their way slowly though a local rocky ridge. Friend Darius and his brother Joseph were known to be sympathizers with the fugitive slave. Under a warrant issued by Hiram Gardner, Justice of the Peace, the Kentuckians seized Joseph Pickard, a local black barber. Friend Darius rushed to the office of the Justice, which was on the 2d floor of a wooden building near Brown’s hat store and was entered by a flight of stairs on the outside. A large crowd of his canal workmen packed the street in front of the office. With the examination in progress, the barber sprang though an open window and landed in the street below, but the slave-catchers rushed down the stairs with drawn pistols and again collared him. G.W. Rogers and others surrounded the Kentuckians, defying them to shoot, and an agreement was reached to take the barber back upstairs to allow Justice of the Peace Gardner to hear the case. When the Justice discharged Pickard for want of proof that he was the property of the persons claiming him, this pair of Kentuckian slave-catchers departed the area.

1824

➡ Beginning of construction of Fort Adams guarding [Newport Harbor](#), at 60 acres the 2nd largest along our nation’s coastline. Of course, cheap desperate [Irish](#) immigrant labor would be utilized to cut and move and position all the stone required.



What's not to like about this [Rhode Island](#) fortress? It might as well be a 60-acre goat pasture with a great stone wall around it to make sure goats don't get out. None of its 468 cannon would ever be fired in anger — they might as well be sticks of wood, "Quaker Cannon":



(Meanwhile a whole bunch of [Irish famine](#) kiddies would be getting food shoved into their mouths! —As I commented, what's not to like about this?)

 March 19, Friday: [William Allingham](#) was born near Ballyshannon, County Donegal, [Ireland](#), as a son of a bank manager.

Jose Antonio de Oliveira Leite de Barros, conde de Basto replaced Joaquim Pedro Gomes de Oliveira as Secretary of State (prime minister) of Portugal.

In New York, David How, a white farmer, was [hanged](#) for murder.

1825



The millennialism of the [Irish](#) “Rockites” would be absorbed because the 1771 prophesy based upon the interpretation of the Apocalypse of St. John by [Bishop Charles Walmsley Pastorino](#), that God would destroy all Protestantism by this year 1825 –a prophesy that had been credited by these lower-class [Catholic](#) rock throwers since 1821– had become no longer functional.

In England, the [Catholic](#) Relief Bill was defeated in the House of Lords.

The [Catholic](#) pro-cathedral was opened in Marlborough Street, Dublin. Some 50,000 [Irish](#) were applying for some 2,000 assisted places on shipping to America, in a British Colonial Office scheme to depopulate the southern counties.⁵²



More than a hundred periodicals had appeared by this point in the United States, three out of every four religious in nature. Of these roughly 75 American religious periodicals, fully half were [anti-Catholic](#). During the first half of the 19th Century, American [Know-Nothing](#) nativists would produce a vast amount of propaganda against the Roman Catholic Church, propaganda which focused on the same core reason why the [Nazis](#) would be so hostile to Jews. Just as the Nazis would consider themselves to be inherently nationalistic and patriotic and Jews to be essentially internationalists and therefore implicitly disloyal and the most deadly enemy of the Fatherland, so also these [American nativists](#) were considering themselves to be patriotic nationalists and considering Roman Catholics to constitute our most mortal threat, any Catholic being essentially internationalistic, and merely another sworn servant of a foreign potentate — the Pope in Rome. The great number of Catholic immigrants, mostly German and Irish, who were finding new homes in what we now refer to as “the Midwest,” caused the Know-Nothings and other nativists to fear that the power of the Pope might be able to find a new homeland there.

52. By the end of the potato [famine](#), 1/3rd of the surviving Irish population would be in the USA.

1826

➡ At this time about 97,000 people lived in [Rhode Island](#), about 600 of them Roman Catholics, but by 1865 after the Irish Famine and emigration, there would be 50,000 [Catholics](#) (by 1885 the population of the state would have risen to 304,000 of whom at least 92,000 had an [Irish](#) parent).

RHODE ISLAND RELIGION

1827

➡ Henry Hallam (1777-1859) pointed up, in his CONSTITUTIONAL HISTORY OF ENGLAND FROM HENRY VII TO GEORGE II, the obvious similarities between the past Spanish genocide against the Christian Moors, and the ongoing English oppression of the [Irish](#). It is clear that an “othering” quite homologous or isomorphic with color racism most definitely can exist between one fundamentally European ethnicity and another fundamentally European ethnicity. It is clear that racism does not have anything essentially to do with skin color, it being far deeper than such superficialities.

1828

➡ Daniel O’Connell was elected for Clare to the British Parliament, but of course could not be seated as he was [Catholic](#) and therefore could not be trusted.

IRELAND

1829

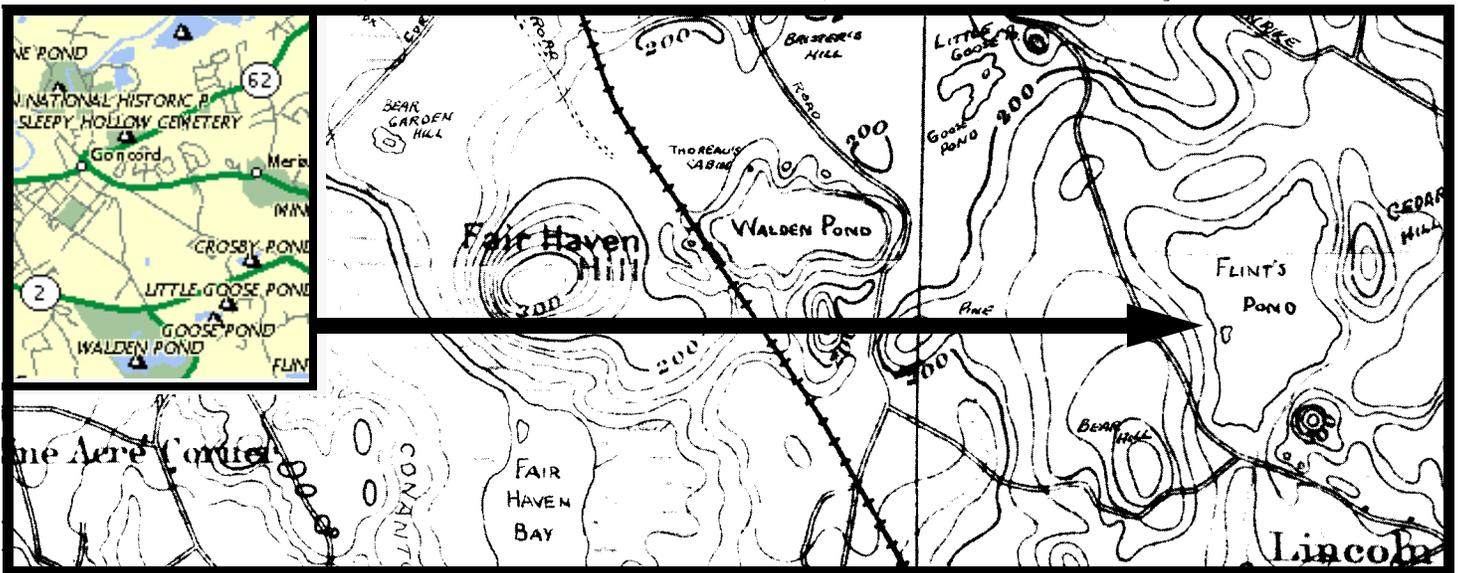
➡ By this point mass meetings in Ireland organized by Daniel “The Liberator” O’Connell’s Catholic Association, and O’Connell’s election as a MP, had frightened the British overlords to the point at which they passed an Emancipation Act, rescinding the prohibition of Catholics in Parliament and in other governmental offices, and Catholic Relief Act, to remove remaining effects of the Penal laws for upper and middle class [Irish](#).

The act of Catholic Emancipation began to allow Catholics to be elected to, and to serve in, the British Parliament. Suffrage was, however, restricted. During this period in [Ireland](#), lasting until 1845, with the exception of Ulster, the previous system of racial or ethnic oppression was being superseded and renewed by a system of national oppression.

Lace manufacturing began in Limerick, [Ireland](#).

In New Hampshire, Derry Bank was incorporated.

➡ Summer: [I’ll insert the following item from [Henry Thoreau](#)’s journal as of the summer of 1829, almost arbitrarily, since here Thoreau was going on 12 years old and would have been helping in the family business. It is a journal entry in which Thoreau as an adult is recollecting that while still a child he had collected sand as a raw material for the family’s sandpaper business, and is recollecting that it was from Flint’s Pond or Sandy Pond in Lincoln, rather than from Walden Pond in [Concord](#), that he had collected this sand:]



BAKER FARM

After September 11: –We have a saying an East quarter bargain i.e. a secret one– The Copper mines –the old silver mine now deserted –the holt –the great meadows– The Baker Farm –Conantum –Beck-Stows swamp –the Great Fields –Poland –The Dam Meadows –The Eastabrooks place –Jenny Dugan’s – The Ministerial Lot –Fairy land –Sleepy Hollow –Laurel glen Talls Island The bog-iron mines –The old lime-kiln –the place where the cinnamon stone was found –Hayne’s Island– I usually went across lots & some times I swam the river holding my clothes up in one hand to keep them dry. & at last crawling out the other side like an otter or I forded broad deep & rapid streams on temporary Peruvian bridges which I constructed, by letting



IRELAND

IRELAND

fall a rider across & using a steady pole— The Gulf meadows Caesar’s—the Caedar Swamp—Paul Dudleys—
John Le Gross’ Country—The Price place—Capt Bate’s The Fort of the rocks—’s Folly the Old Marlboro
road. The Bridle road the 2nd Division

Between Anurnuck & strawberry hills in Mr Hapgood’s pasture I have measured a chestnut 23 feet in
circumference at a foot from the ground. Well meadow— For brooks we have Cold brook—Pantry Brook—
Well meadow brook—Nut meadow Brook Wrights brook—Nagog—brook—Nashoba brook—Fort Pond brook—
Saw Mill brook—Mill brook—Spencer brook. &c &c.

For hills—Nagog famous for huckleberries where I have seen hundreds of bushels at once—Nashoba—of Indian
memory—from which you see Uncanunuc Mt well—Strawberry hill—from which you glimpse Nagod Pond—
Annurnuck—Ponkawtasset—Balls hill Fair Haven—Round—Goodman’s—Willis’s Nobscot—where old Gen
Nixon lived—by the Sudbury inn v poetry Turnpike hill—Lincoln Hill—Bare hill Mt Tabor, Pine hill, Prospect
hill Nawshawtuct. Wind mill Hill. &c

IRISH

For ponds Walden—Flints or Sandys White Now, since the railroad & the Irish have prophaned Walden—
the most beautiful of all our lakes—a gem of crystal—(v tree story) It deserves a better name— One has suggested
God’s drop—another Yellow pine lake another Hygae’s Water, and another To be sure its shores are white
& I used to gather its sand in my youth to make sand paper with.

1830



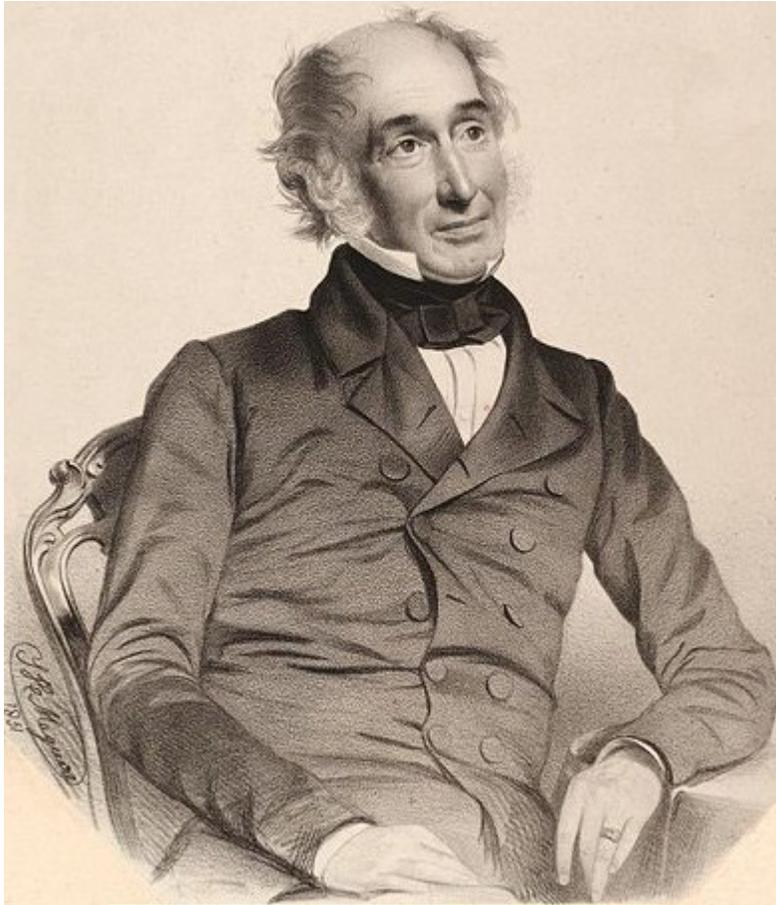
There was another food crisis in [Ireland](#). The “meal months” during which the old stores of [potatoes](#) had
become exhausted while the new crop was not yet ready to be dug from the ground would be extended beyond
the usual June, July, and August.⁵³

FAMINE

53. [Potatoes](#) are generally not fully mature in [Ireland](#) until October.

1831

➔ [Professor William Jackson Hooker](#)'s BRITISH FLORA CRYPTOGAMIA.



SIR WM. JACKSON HOOKER

Discovering a moss new to [Ireland](#), *Hookeria laetevirens*, at Killarney, led [William Henry Harvey](#) to a lifelong friendship with [Professor Hooker](#). It also led to an opportunity for him to devote his life to something other than, as he would delicately put the matter, “buying cheap and selling dear.”

 The potato crisis continued in Ireland, but this famine was not turning out to be so severe as the ones of 1800-1801 and of 1816-1819.

Population Trends

	England / Wales	Ireland
1821	12,000,000	6,800,000
1831	13,900,000	7,770,000
1841	15,920,000	8,180,000
1845	about 16,700,000	about 8,300,000 (the year of the blight, to be followed by famine and then by fever and emigration)
1851	17,930,000	6,550,000
1861	20,070,000	5,800,000
1871	31,629,299	5,410,000
1881	35,026,108	5,170,000



 August 23, Tuesday: The growing of [tobacco](#) in [Ireland](#), permitted since an act of King George III in 1779, was at this point under King William I again prohibited.

1833

→ The British government advanced to [Harriet Martineau](#) the sum of £600 and opened its records to her so that she could create a series of stories depicting the corruptness of the system of poor relief. The moral of these just-so stories was to be that the deserving poor rapidly became, when helped in any way in their helplessness, hopelessly shiftless, hopelessly indolent, hopelessly depraved — they became transformed into the undeserving poor. What data served this cynical political agenda was to be utilized, what did not serve it was to be ignored. This would prepare the way, it was hoped, for a new Poor Law for 1834, one with a wise Malthusian agenda and flashes of Benthamite inspiration. The 1st of the 10 volumes of the author's POOR LAWS AND PAUPERS ILLUSTRATED appeared.

FAMINE

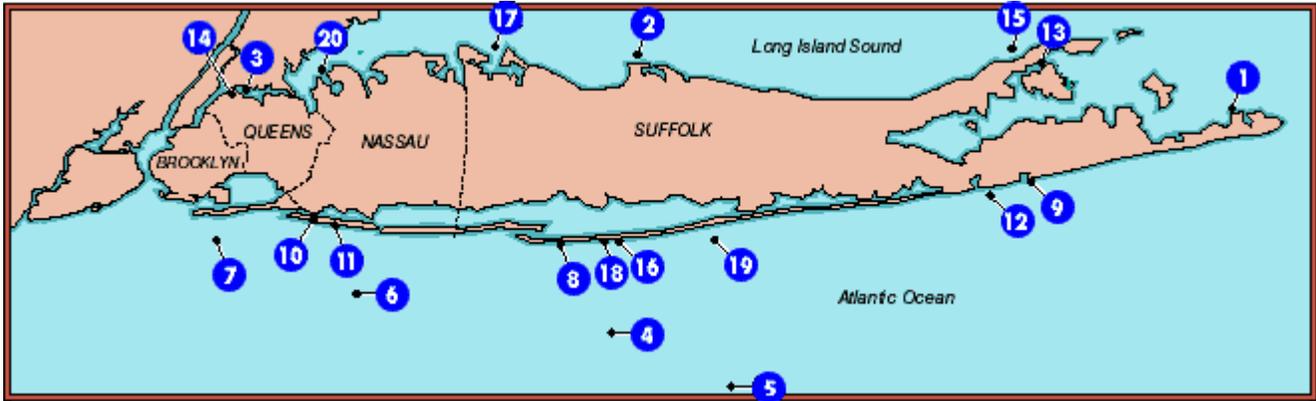


1835

→ September: Daniel O'Connell, apologizing for his conceit, took the occasion of a speech before the Glasgow Emancipation Society to express hope that in the United States of America "some Black O'Connell might arise among his fellow [slaves](#), who would cry, 'Agitate, Agitate' till the two millions and a half of his fellow-sufferers learned the secret of their strength." O'Connell's attitude was that while any person of color was unfree, the [Irish](#) would not be free, an attitude which flows directly out of the religious injunction "What ye do unto the least of these my brethren, ye do unto Me." This speech would of course be reported in Garrison's Liberator.

1837

January 2, day: When the bark *Mexico*, carrying 112 Irish immigrants and 16 crewmen, grounded at position #11 on Long Island and broke up, only 8 people managed to make it to shore.



June 11, Sunday afternoon: On Broad Street, a brigade of Boston’s volunteer firefighters afflicted with “rowdyism and bumptiousness” were cutting a wide swath, drinking and so forth as was their wont, as they were returning from a structure fire in Roxbury, when they found themselves somehow “mixing it up” with the young mourners at a funeral procession for an Irish man. Ethnic fighting began on Broad and on Summer Streets and –of course– the firebells were rung to summon more (non-Irish, of course) volunteers. The tenements of Irish which lined these streets began to shower objects onto the heads of the firefighters, and so the battle in the streets spread to the sacking of apartments. Featherbeds were being ripped open and shaken out windows by the firefighters in the search for the hidden pennies of the immigrants in these apartments, so the battle in the streets became rather picturesque, as if conducted during an artificial snowstorm. The blood however was not catsup — not even the immigrant blood. After some 15,000 citizens had become involved, a flying wedge of 800 troops led by Mayor Samuel Eliot managed to clear the streets, of these ethnic warriors if not of down. An unusually sad day for decency, even for Boston.

June 20, Tuesday: When King William IV of the house of Hanover died of pneumonia in his palace, his niece [Victoria](#)



acceded to the throne of England. The Archbishop of Canterbury, William Howley, tried to shove the ring on a finger that was too big for it, which was, shall we say, not good, and embarrassing all around. The monarch would banish Sir John Conroy, her ambitious [Irish](#) counselor, from the royal court in order not to be in any





IRELAND

IRELAND

way under his influence. Soon she would be receiving a couple of death threats:

George III	1760	1820
The Prince Regency	1811	1820
George IV	1820	1830
William IV	1830	1837
Victoria	1837	1901

Speaking of thrones, at this point, although there was a water closet of the Harington design in Richmond Palace, there wasn't a single such device in Buckingham Palace, the nobles there being in the habit of using servants with chamber pots. A throne, a throne, my queendom for a throne!⁵⁴

GOD IN THE JAKES

WATER SUPPLY

September 12, Tuesday: In [Boston](#) during this month a mob of [Irish](#)-haters had attacked a military formation of the Irish-dominated Montgomery Guards. There was such animosity within the militia in regard to its [Irish](#) units, that a military review scheduled for this day on Boston Common had to be suspended.

1838

Thousands of people were starving in the north of [Ireland](#) as crops there failed. The English deliberately began a policy of making the work available in poorhouses even more unpleasant than any lowest-grade work available outside these establishments — in order to discourage access by the poor to this assistance and encourage, instead, emigration.⁵⁵

54. Henry Wadsworth Longfellow is credited with the 1st water closet in the USA, within a private home. This does not, however, explain anything about his poetry. Nowadays, when the Queen of England travels, she takes along a special toilet that blends and cooks her excreta into an homogenous and sterile and entirely anonymous fluid — in order to prevent the more imaginative of her loyal subjects from getting bold ideas about the money to be made in the retailing of personal mementos of her majesty. This, and the events of a very recent year in Canada, of course bring special meaning to the common phrase “when the royal shit hit the fan.”

55. The Poor Law enacted by Britain's Parliament in 1834 was applied to Ireland at a time when famine was already killing thousands. In the USA in 1998, we are embarking upon precisely the same Draconian policy, by requiring work of all able-bodied Welfare recipients (termed “Workfare”) while classifying such recipients as non-employees, thus rendering it unnecessary to pay such workers the federally mandated minimum wage for employees and rendering it unnecessary to provide such workers with nonsalary benefits.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1839

Distress in [Ireland](#), particularly in the south.

FAMINE

January 6, Sunday: January 6, Sunday, 1839 [Robert Schumann](#) wrote to Raimund Hartel from Vienna, informing him that he had several meetings with Ferdinand Schubert and found many unpublished or unknown works of Franz Schubert “operas, four grand Masses, four or five symphonies, and much else.”

A massive wind and rain storm struck [Ireland](#) that night killing 250-300. Structures were demolished, floods occurred, and £500,000 in shipping was lost.

December: [Thomas Mayne Reid, Jr.](#) sailed from [Ireland](#) for New Orleans aboard the *Dumfriesshire*: “Like other striplings escaped from college, I was no longer happy at home. The yearning for travel was upon me, and without a sigh I beheld the hills of my native land sink behind the black waves, not much caring whether I should ever see them again.”

1840

July 9, Thursday: Steerage conditions on a ship escaping the famine in [Ireland](#), per [The London Illustrated Weekly](#):

The coward would reduce this thrilling sphere music to a universal wail, –this melodious chant to a nasal cant. He thinks to conciliate all hostile influences by compelling his neighborhood into a partial concord with himself, but his music is no better than a jingle, which is akin to a jar, –jars regularly recurring. He blows a feeble blast of slender melody, because nature can have no more sympathy with such a soul, than it has of cheerful melody in itself. Hence hears he no accordant note in the universe, and is a coward, or consciously outcast and deserted man. But the brave man, without drum or trumpet, compels concord everywhere by the universality and tunefulness of his soul.



FAMINE

Some Irish escape the famine in [The London Illustrated Weekly](#) of July 9, 1840



IRELAND

IRELAND

1841

Wiley & Putnam of New-York issued William Leete Stone's LIFE AND TIMES OF RED-JACKET, OR *SA-GO-YE-WAT-HA* OR RED JACKET. The Robert Weir primitive portrait of the Seneca headman *Sagoyewatha* "Red Jacket" became the frontispiece for this book.

American publisher George Putnam, on a visit to London, asked the English to pay no attention to Americans who were petitioning for the freedom of the [Irish](#). Since true Americans "from Washington to the present time [have] been opposed to all interference with the affairs of foreign states," such attitudes were confined to Americans who, as former residents of Ireland, he implied, were unworthy to be considered Americans at all.

1842

March 25, Friday: [Frederick Douglass](#) spoke in South Scituate (later Norwell), Massachusetts at the Quarterly Meeting of the Plymouth County Anti-Slavery Society.



The following antislavery news from Dublin, [Ireland](#) appeared in William Lloyd Garrison's The Liberator:

From the Dublin Morning Register.
 Negro Freedom--the Repeal Association.
 31, Eccles-street, 26th Jan. 1842.
 My Dear Sir—The Committee of the Hibernian Anti-Slavery Society met this morning, and I am rejoiced to beg you will have the kindness to send us a reply to our letter of this day week. We believe it would be useful to publish such a correspondence at the present time. I send you an extract of a letter from Mr. George Bradburn, whom your father may remember as one of the American delegates to the Anti-Slavery Convention. From it you will see the necessity of keeping the true principles of Liberty before the view of our people; for it is a reproachable as it is disgraceful to us, that individuals in America are cold in their advocacy of the rights of the enslaved; and so long as this is the case, we retard the progress of real freedom at home—in fact, we deserve to be oppressed, if our own liberty be a mere selfish affair. It is a plant which will never flourish in such an atmosphere.
 Faithfully yours,
 JAMES HAUGHTON,
 Jas O'CONNELL, Esq., M. P.

Daniel O'Connell, apologizing for his conceit, had in September 1835 in a speech before the Glasgow Emancipation Society expressed a hope that at some point in the future, in the United States of America, "some Black O'Connell might arise among his fellow [slaves](#), who would cry, 'Agitate, Agitate' till the two millions and a half of his fellow-sufferers learned the secret of their strength." At this point this old speech was excerpted in William Lloyd Garrison's The Liberator. (Would [Frederick Douglass](#) be able to step into the boots of this "Black O'Connell"?)



March 25, Friday: Great persons are not soon learned nor even their outlines — but they change like the mountains in the horizon as we ride along.

A mans life should be as fresh as a river — it should be the same channel but a new water every instant. Some men have no inclination —they have no rapids nor cascades —but marshes, and aligators and miasma instead.

How insufficient is all wisdom without love- ...



IRELAND

IRELAND

Spring: It became possible for American Irish families to visit the offices of Thayer and Warren in Boston, and purchase prepaid passages for their relatives also to come over from [Ireland](#).

FAMINE



We don't know precisely how many people have starved to death or, weakened by starvation, succumbed to diarrhea and fever or to [cholera](#) in [Ireland](#) during the ensuing period, but we do know that the first great die-off would occur during the winter of 1846-1847. A table prepared after the fact by Census Commissioners, presented here, in all probability under-estimates the mortality because of the manner in which they collected data: for a family all of whose members succumbed zero deaths would be tabulated. Of the total number of deaths, which would be between 500,000 and 1,500,000, the percentage of that total which would occur in each



IRELAND

IRELAND

year probably worked out to something like this:

Mortality, expressed as %ages of the 1841 Population

Year	%
1842	5.1%
1843	5.2%
1844	5.6%
1845	6.4%
1846	9.1%
1847	18.5%
1848	15.4%
1849	17.9%
1850	12.2%

The figures shown for 1849 are the result of a [cholera](#) epidemic in Connacht, Leinster, and Munster, as well as of the general starvation.

July: In “Rogue Island,” as their payoff for supporting the Law and Order party and helping to deny the right to vote to adult white males (mostly [Irish](#) machine tenders) without \$134.⁰⁰ in property during the unrest of October 1841, the black adult males of [Rhode Island](#) (well, any of them who could show they held property worth \$134.⁰⁰, which would be, today, say, roughly the value of a two-year-old Toyota) were granted the right to vote, a right which they still could not exercise in Connecticut, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, or Ohio, and which they had only to a limited degree in the state of New York. See, it sometimes does pay off to cut a deal with the powers that be! This event is known in our history books as the “[Dorr War](#)” and what is being said of it is that it “forced the state’s conservatives to abolish the Charter of 1663 and expand suffrage.”⁵⁶

READ EDWARD FIELD TEXT

During this month Daniel O’Connell spoke on the issue of race slavery at a meeting of the Irish Repeal Association in reply to some remarks made by a Mr. Garahan of Mobile, Alabama. This is the manner in which O’Connell’s speech would appear in the pages of William Lloyd Garrison’s [The Liberator](#) on October 7th:

Extract from a Speech of Daniel O’Connell,
At a meeting of the Irish Repeal Association, July, 1842, in reply to Mr. M’Garahan, of Mobile, Alabama.

The Lord Mayor said he felt it to be an imperative duty to arise, after the speech of the highly respectable and reverend gentleman who had just concluded. He was sorry that it was his duty to comment in any terms, except of praise, on anything falling from that Rev. gentleman, but he would be untrue to the sacred cause of freedom, with which he was identified, if he were to sit silent and hear any apology for slavery, even from the best of motives, offered in his presence. He was glad that the meeting had heard the Reverend gentleman with

ican, was kept three years only among them in a state of slavery, and such were the dreadful effects of it, that he lost the use of the English language altogether, and spoke a sort of jibbering tongue, half English, half Arabic; nay, he was six months in England before he was restored to his full faculties, or the possession of the English language. Such was the effect of slavery; and yet although 800,000 negroes were emancipated by England, not one of them was found applying for relief under a poor law, or for charity of any kind, but supported themselves by their own industry. (Hear, hear.) They were, he admitted, a little too fantastic in their dress, they were fond of gay and lively colors; but they bought their own cotton, with which they clothed themselves,

56. My own attitude is that this ludicrous episode of [Rhode Island](#) history ought to be referred to as “Douglass’s Triumph” rather than as “Dorr’s War,” because I suspect that although local historians have always treated [Frederick Douglass](#)’s black presence in the state during this period as if he had been merely some sort of naive “native informant,” going around telling white people how bad slavery was (in this sort of historical writing blacks only react, they only display affect, they never take action or exercise control, because they are, of course, merely black, and everybody knows that it is the white man who makes history), actually he was operating as a skilled politician and organizing the entire sweet package deal by which local black men gained the franchise in return for helping to prevent the immigrant Irish laboring men from exercising the franchise. I suspect that while he remained under cover and in all appearance innocuous, the whole thing was Douglass’s scheme and his great accomplishment.



IRELAND

IRELAND

IRELAND

IRELAND

meeting had heard the Reverend gentleman with such attention and patience, for both as a stranger and as a clergyman, he was entitled to every possible indulgence at their hands. (Hear, hear.)

He came there as a friend of the cause in which they were engaged, to offer them the sympathy and support of his fellow-countrymen, and in doing so he had felt it his duty to offer some remarks in favor of the system of slavery as carried on in America.— He had stated that the slaves were well fed, well taken care of, and sleek in their appearance, and there could be no doubt that such was the fact; but if the Reverend gentleman went to the house of the greatest tyrant in the country, he would find his horses plump and well taken care of, and for precisely the same reason as that which the Rev. gentleman had assigned for the good condition of the slaves, because it was the interest of the owner to have them so. (Loud cries of hear, hear.) But let passion burst forth—let violence disturb him, and the master of that horse, notwithstanding that it is his own interest to use the animal gently and kindly, will treat it brutally and cruelly. (Hear, hear.) Although the general rule was in favor of the slave, yet, he was liable to suffer from the effects of intoxication and ill temper; he was liable to be separated from the wife of his bosom, and the children of his tender affection. They may be sold as slaves, and sent to one quarter of the globe, while he himself was sent to the other; and while that state of things existed, he would be its most determined enemy, whatever was the consequence—whether he got the sympathy or support of their American friends, or continued to be subjected to the gross guilt inflicted on his country by a continuance of the Union.— (Cheers.) He could not hear slavery praised or palliated. *Every nerve within him trembled at the idea of one man being the property of his fellow-man—of a human being treated as so much chattels, or that a being with an immortal soul should be bound to the will of any master, be he a tyrant or otherwise in the exercise of his authority.* (Cheers.) He could not bring himself to the very idea of such a state of things, and as much as he valued the sympathy and support of America in the present constitutional struggle, if it be the slightest apology for slavery, he at once abandoned it. (Cheers.) The Rev. gentleman has eloquently expressed his fears for what the result of freedom to the slaves in America might be, and the danger which existed if it should take place, of what he (the Lord Mayor) abhorred, for he never would sanction the shedding of one drop of human blood. He talked of violence, of the ven-

their own cotton, with which they clothed themselves, and if there was found a glitter around them, it was the produce of their own industry. (Hear, hear, and a laugh.) Not one of them could be found who was not perfectly able to take care of himself.— (Hear, hear.) Then as to the question of blood, if a revolution took place among the negroes, produced by their emancipation, he would give up the case if ~~it could be shown him that one drop had been shed~~ by those who had already admitted to their freedom. Not one had been shed—not a single case of violence had occurred, or of retaliation on their masters. O yes, they refused to take off their hats for those who were cruel to them. (A laugh.) But he stood there a historian of severity, and the assertor of that fact in the presence of Europe and of America. (Cheers.) He proclaimed that instance of peace and good order among the negro population who were set free, and he defied any one to contradict him, or to show the least particle of violence. No assault or outrage had been committed, or a single drop of blood shed. (Cheers.) Were not the negroes in America the same race—were they not of the same class? And what fears could be entertained of them? Let it be recollected that when the experiment of emancipating the slaves in the British colonies was made, it was made under unfavorable auspices, because purchased by twenty millions of the public money, one farthing of which was not given to the negro but to his masters. They were insulted by the manner in which they received their freedom, because it was not given them as a right to which they were entitled, but purchased for them from their masters. Yet no crime was committed—no violence was resorted to—no blood was shed; and oh! may the happy day arrive when America shall be convinced of these truths, and be induced to follow the example of England. (Hear, hear, and loud cheers.) She followed her 'bitter bad' example in the introduction of slavery in the first instance, (and England could not but blush at its continuance in that land)—nay, the Americans were almost coerced to introduce it; and that England should have to answer for it was just before man and Divine Providence. But Ireland was free from the foul stain—for no one slave ship ever sailed from any port in Ireland, except one which carried Irishmen themselves. (Cheers and laughter.)

He (the Lord Mayor) sincerely hoped the Rev. gentleman was convinced he spoke to him with the utmost respect—that he was not the less grateful for his coming amongst them with the happy communication of which he had been the bearer—that he was not the less grateful for the support of the



IRELAND

IRELAND

IRELAND

IRELAND

geance which the slaves would take upon their masters if they were liberated, and of their incapacity to attend to their own affairs, or to take care of themselves. If he (the Lord Mayor) had heard that doctrine propounded for the first time, coming as it did from the revered lips and the sacred character of him who put it forward—if he had, he repeated, heard it for the first time, it might, perhaps, have staggered his judgment; he might have thought that he knew more of the matter, and that his evidence was that of description which was derived by personal knowledge and actual judgment. But he had the pleasure to tell him that he had heard that argument before—that it was brought forward in the English Parliament previous to the passing of the bill for the emancipation of the slaves in the British colonies; and blessed be God, he raised his humble voice to turn eight hundred thousand slaves into eight hundred thousand freemen—to give the mother the happiness of blessing her little one in her arms instead of trembling for its future state—to give her an assurance that, instead of its being separated from her pressing heart, he was a little freeman, and that she could say to him, 'You will yet be my protector.' (Loud cheers.) He heard it said before, 'beware of what you do; if you emancipate them it will create bloodshed; they are utterly unfit to take care of themselves, and there will be nothing but confusion throughout the length and breadth of our multitudinous islands. All this will end in blood.' And though the parties did not openly say the abolitionists in Parliament sought for blood, yet they insinuated that such was their intention. The experiment was, however, tried, and what was the consequence? (Hear, hear.) In Demerara alone, the emancipated negroes purchased three estates for which they gave ninety thousand pounds, and in Jamaica they were buying up property from day to day. 'Take care of yourselves!' Let them only try the experiment, instead of having human nature degraded by the fact of a man being held in slavery. It was as old as the days of Homer, who said that when a man was a slave, half his worth was taken from him. It was then at least three fourths, and the evil was not confined to that, for they had it on record that when the English and French governments remonstrated with the Arabs on the coast of Africa, and called on them to give up the traffic, and discontinue the practice of seizing Europeans, their answer was, that these Europeans were so degraded as scarcely to resemble man, and that they were a kind of monkey race.—There they are, exclaimed the Arabs, for the last eight or ten years, and did you ever see so stupid a race? (A laugh.) A man named Adams, an Amer-

American friend of Ireland, if he kept back the expression of his feelings on the subject. (Hear, hear.) He perceived that the Rev. gentleman had alluded to a circumstance which was also reiterated in the American papers—that they, in their address for the abolition of slavery, called on the American people to join the abolitionists. Then the ill conduct of the abolitionists is set forth, and the enemies of slavery in this country were censured for the part they had just taken. When he (the Lord Mayor) signed that address, he did not mean any particular party, much less one who would act improperly or insultingly, for it was quite against the interests of those whom they called their clients to have recourse to so improper a proceeding. They did not mean to say by that phrase that the Americans ought to become what was termed 'abolitionists' in their land—they did not mean to say that they should join in any combination that would injure the property of man, but a combination which should have liberty for its object, and morality, truth, and purity of motives as its aim. (Loud cries of hear, hear.) *Man ought not to be a slave!* God had mixed and implanted in his soul, equality at his birth. All were born in the same nakedness and subject to the same infirmities—no distinction existed at that moment between the peer and the peasant, and both would descend with the same inanity to the grave. He would struggle there against every description of tyranny and despotism wherever he found it to exist; he would struggle to bring men to a constitutional equality, not to that equality which did not recognize rank or station, but to that place and equity known to the law, and to which he was entitled. (Cheers.) That equity which entitled a servant to hire with a master, and go away at the expiration of his period of service, if he chose to do so—that equity which enabled the laborer to receive the wages he was justly entitled to for his labor, and to discharge himself if that were not paid, or if he could improve his condition. But the slave gave up his labor to others—he was the property of others; and come what would, *he hated slavery in all its forms*—he would never truckle to others, or yield up the detestation in which he held it. (Cheers.) He would insult no man, but his heart was devoted to liberty, and so long as slavery existed in any quarter of the globe, he would be found among the ranks of its bitterest and most decided enemies. (Loud cheers.)

1843

In [Ireland](#), Daniel O’Connell was staging Monster Meetings (he would be imprisoned on account of his patriotism).

The black smut of the late blight fungus was observed on potato leaves near Philadelphia. For a long time we had presumed that this must have originated in the central highlands of Mexico, in the vicinity of the Toluca Valley where it has always afflicted a number of Mexican plants of the same genus and where even today it is quite impossible to grow potatoes. (We now know, based on genetic markers, that it is more likely to have originated in Peru.) It is probable that this fungus had made its way to Europe from the New World by way of a plant collector, perhaps one like the Poinsett who would bring back the poinsettia from the war against Mexico, a collector who lived in the northeastern United States. At this time the government of the province of West Flanders began to import fresh varieties of potatoes from both North and South America, and to make field trials of these novel cultivars. These field trials would continue during the growing seasons of 1844 and 1845, up to the point at which all such crops were being destroyed by the “late blight” fungus which had been introduced from the Americas.



Human selection of [potato](#) and [tomato](#) cultivars for lessened bitterness may have resulted in greater vulnerability to [infection](#) by *Phytophthora*. Native potatoes and wild tomatoes possess much higher levels of the phytoalexin alkaloid and tend to be much more resistant to infection. However, among the infection organisms, *Phytophthora* in particular seems to have evolved a way in which to slip past the poisonous potato and tomato steroidal alkaloids which are effective in protecting these plants against many other varieties of microorganisms. We should beware of the scare stories which have it that Europeans were simply being foolish in the 16th Century, when they resisted the introduction of potatoes and tomatoes to their diet — as the potatoes then and the tomatoes then may have been substantially more bitter and substantially more poisonous and allergenic than the potatoes and tomatoes being grown nowadays. One of our attempts to breed a less vulnerable potato, the Lenape, has had to be withdrawn from the market because it proved to be far too toxic to humans. There is a substantial correlation between the very serious *spina bifida* and *anencephaly* birth defects and years in which potato blight has been widespread in the British Isles. Were potatoes to be introduced today as a new and novel food crop, they would have to be subjected to a long and careful period



of evaluation by our Food and Drug Administration. After a year in which people have been reduced to eating deteriorated potatoes, there is ordinarily a year in which significant numbers of human infants are stillborn or born deformed. The suspicion is that this is caused by an accumulation of the chemical *solanidine* in the mother's liver, and its liberation and transfer to her fetus during the 3d or 4th week of gestation while the fetus's neural tube is closing. The concentrations of this dangerous alkaloid are highest in the spring after winter storage of the potato crop, and highest in the vicinity of the potato's eyes while it is sprouting. It has been noticed that stored potatoes which have been infected by *Phytophthora infestans* begin to sprout earlier in the spring than uninfected potatoes. After a blight year, in the late spring just at the point at which the food need is highest and the last of the old stored potatoes are about to be replaced by the first of the new potatoes, the risk of generating deformed babies reaches its peak.

THE NIGHTSHADES (SOLANACEAE)

- — [*Solanum tuberosum*](#)
- — [*Tomato Lycopersicon esculentum*](#)
- — chili peppers
- — eggplant
- — deadly nightshade
- — [*Nicotiana tabacum*](#)
- — henbane
- — Jimson weed
- — petunia
- — plus some 2,000 other species grouped into 75 genera



IRELAND

IRELAND

Therefore it is strongly recommended that girls, and women who are not yet out of their reproductive years, should never nowadays (except of course under conditions of absolute starvation) consume potatoes from which they have had to rub off the sprouts with their hands (as a Thoreau uncle was described, in Walden, as having done):

WALDEN: Breed's hut was standing only a dozen years ago, though it had long been unoccupied. It was about the size of mine. It was set on fire by mischievous boys, one Election night, if I do not mistake. I lived on the edge of the village then, and had just lost myself over Davenant's Gondibert, that winter that I labored with a lethargy, -which, by the way, I never knew whether to regard as a family complaint, having an uncle who goes to sleep shaving himself, and is obliged to sprout potatoes in a cellar Sundays, in order to keep awake and keep the Sabbath, or as the consequence of my attempt to read Chalmers' collection of English poetry without skipping. It fairly overcame my Nervii. I had just sunk my head on this when the bells rung fire, and in hot haste the engines rolled that way, led by a straggling troop of men and boys, and I among the foremost, for I had leaped the brook. We thought it was far south over the woods, -we who had run to fires before,- barn, shop, or dwelling-house, or all together. "It's Baker's barn," cried one. "It is the Codman Place," affirmed another. And then fresh sparks went up above the wood, as if the roof fell in, and we all shouted "Concord to the rescue!" Wagons shot past with furious speed and crushing loads, bearing, perchance, among the rest, the agent of the Insurance Company, who was bound to go however far; and ever and anon the engine bell tinkled behind, more slow and sure, and rearmost of all, as it was afterward whispered, came they who set the fire and gave the alarm. Thus we kept on like true idealists, rejecting the evidence of our senses, until at a turn in the road we heard crackling and actually felt the heat of the fire from over the wall, and realized, alas! that we were there. The very nearness of the fire but cooled our ardor. At first we thought to throw a frog-pond on to it; but concluded to let it burn, it was so far gone and so worthless. So we stood round our engine, jostled one another, expressed our sentiments through speaking trumpets, or in lower tone referred to the great conflagrations which the world has witness, including Bascom's shop, and, between ourselves we thought that, were we there in season with our "tub", and a full frog-pond by, we could turn that threatened last and universal one into another flood. We finally retreated without doing any mischief, -returned to sleep and Gondibert. But as for Gondibert, I would except that passage in the preface about wit being the soul's powder, -"but most of mankind are strangers to wit, as Indians are to powder."



FIRE

PEOPLE OF
WALDEN

INSURANCE

ALEXANDER CHALMERS

BASCOM & COLE



IRELAND

IRELAND

These toxic compounds are not removed by boiling, and in fact seem to be concentrated by the process of frying in oil. Also, therefore, they should never ingest such foods as “fish and chips” and “french fries,” for such commercially prepared potatoes may have been purchased for bulk processing because they were cheap, low-grade “old crop” potatoes which had begun to sprout: their sprouts would be automatically knocked off by peeling machinery. Tests using golden hamsters suggest that infant deformation may be minimized by ensuring that every woman or girl who might become pregnant receives constant elevated levels of vitamin C — perhaps because the C vitamin has a tendency to clear these toxic accumulations of solanidine from the liver.⁵⁷

57. For more on this challenging topic, consult J.H. Renwick’s “Our Ascorbate Defense Against the *Solanaceae*,” pages 567-76 in D’Arcy, William G. (ed.), *SOLANACEAE: BIOLOGY AND SYSTEMATICS* (NY: Columbia UP, 1986).



IRELAND

IRELAND

June 16, day: As of the middle of June, [Henry Thoreau](#) had completed “PARADISE (TO BE) REGAINED” and “A WINTER WALK”.

The warden of the Charlestown State Prison, Charles N. Lincoln, was killed by Abner Rogers.

The account from [Ireland](#) that appears on a following screen was reprinted in William Lloyd Garrison’s [The Liberator](#) out of the [Herald of Freedom](#).

From the Herald of Freedom.

O'Connell and Slavery.

Let the Boston Pildt and the other pro-slavery friends of reposal in this country, read the following glorious speech of the great Irish Repealer, on American slavery—and on slaveholding aid and sympathy from this quarter, put forth in behalf of down-trodden Ireland. It has been denied that O'Connell was party to the great Irish Address sent over here a year ago. See if the deniers will say he is no party to *this speech*. He is said in the papers to have counselled his son, about to visit this country in behalf of Repeal, to abstain, while here, from intermeddling with slavery, and to maintain entire silence with regard to it. I trust the reported counsel was never given by O'Connell, and that it will prove a forgery, like his letter about Charles Dickens. This speech does not look like such counsel. If O'Connell, in a moment of weakness, ever gave such counsel to his son, I trust he will distinctly confess and retract it. If he never did give it, I trust he will disown it before the world. Although I should not call on the young O'Connell, were he to come here, to attack slavery in his repeal addresses—yet I would have him, not only as the son of his great father, and an Irishman, but as a member of the human family, that knows no geographical distinctions, not to keep silence on the subject of our slaveholding. Silence in a son of O'Connell would be taken for consent. He should hazard the very Repeal itself, rather than be silent on such a theme. For which is most important to mankind, the restoration of a Parliament to Ireland, or the liberation of two millions and a half of slaves? It is more important to Ireland herself, that American slavery be abolished, by our movement, and *that she join in it*, than that the union with Britain should be repealed. The union would lay lightly on Ireland, were her people all active abolitionists. Of what avail would repeal have been to her people, but for her teetotal reform? Whiskey was a greater curse to her, than any union with Britain; and teetotalism a vastly greater blessing than political repeal. The severance of the union of Ireland with King Whiskey, or King Alcohol, was a far more important movement to her, than the repeal of her union with England's King or people.

The anti-slavery movement is of kindred importance to her with teetotalism. Let Ireland, now she is sober, enlist in it, and she will have political liberty, or something more, without the trouble of even petitioning for it. England could not oppress eight millions of *sober abolitionists*, any more than her Board of Admiralty could restrain the Atlantic ocean. The Irish people would be incapable of oppression, and England would cower down before the majesty of their moral character. Let all Ireland be such abolitionists as James Haughton and Richard Webb, and the glorious little band of their associates, and England would quail before their almighty character. They would abolitionize England, and abolish the throne of England itself, if they chose to, and instead of asking the restoration



IRELAND

IRELAND

October 6, Friday: [Nathaniel Hawthorne](#) went for a hike in the bucolic Concord countryside:

I took a solitary walk to Walden Pond. It was a cool, north-west windy day, with heavy clouds rolling and tumbling about the sky, but still a prevalence of genial autumn sunshine. The fields are still green, and the great masses of the woods have not yet assumed their many-colored garments; but here and there, are solitary oaks of a deep, substantial red, or maples of a more brilliant hue, or chestnuts, either yellow or of a tenderer green than in summer. Some trees seem to return to their hue of May or early July, before they put on their brighter autumnal tints. In some places, along the borders of low and moist land, a whole range of trees were clothed in the perfect gorgeousness of autumn, of all shades of brilliant color, looking like the palette on which Nature was arranging the tints wherewith to paint a picture. These hues appeared to be thrown together without a design; and yet there was perfect harmony among them, and a softness and delicacy made up of a thousand different brightnesses.

Walden Pond was clear and beautiful, as usual.

(Did he see what Cindy Kassab saw, that is depicted in her painting?)



In the course of his excursion the author discovered something of great interest and relevance, that even some [Irish](#) day-laborers have a life and loved ones and need to have somewhere for their families to lay their heads (**see next page**). According to the author's AMERICAN NOTEBOOKS, he got lost on his way home to the Old Manse:

According to my invariable custom, I mistook my way, and emerging upon a road, I turned my back, instead of my face, toward Concord, and walked on very diligently, till a guide-board informed me of my mistake. I then turned about, and was shortly overtaken by an old yeoman in a chaise, who kindly offered me a ride, and shortly set me down in the village.

This has now all been replayed for us, on the last page of Part II: TRAVELING IN STYLE of the [Los Angeles Times Magazine](#) for October 16, 1994. The anonymous article, allegedly or ostensibly dealing with early literary appreciation of the aesthetics of hiking through the woods to “**Walden Pond**,” is facing an advertisement of a cruise from La-La Land to Puerto Vallarta, Mazatlán⁵⁸, and Cabo San Lucas on the good ship *Nordic Prince*, and a cruise to Catalina and then Ensenada on its sister ship *Viking Serenade*, and headlines the idea that

58. Minus, of course, the Spanish acute accent in the [Times](#) newspaper, which does not truck with foreigners or their languages.

In a small and secluded dell, that opens upon the most beautiful cove of the whole lake, there is a little hamlet of huts or shanties, inhabited by the Irish people who are at work upon the rail-road. There are three or four of these habitations, the very rudest, I should imagine, that civilized men ever made for themselves, constructed of rough boards, with protruding ends. Against some of them the earth is heaped up to the roof, or nearly so; and when the grass has had time to sprout upon them, they will look like small natural hillocks, or a species of ant-hill, or something in which Nature has a larger share than man. These huts are placed beneath the trees, (oaks, walnuts, and white pines) wherever the trunks give them space to stand; and by thus adapting themselves to natural interstices instead of making new ones, they do not break or disturb the solitude and seclusion of the place. Voices are heard, and the shouts and laughter of the children, who play about like the sunbeams that come down through the branches. Women are washing beneath the trees, and long lines of whitened clothes are extended from tree to tree, fluttering and gambolling in the breeze. A pig, in a sty even more extemporary than the shanties, is grunting, and poking his snout through the clefts of his habitation. The household pots and kettles are seen at the doors, and a glance within shows the rough benches that serve for chairs, and the bed upon the floor. The visiter's nose takes note of the fragrance of a pipe. And yet, with all these homely items, the repose and sanctity of the old wood do not seem to be destroyed or prophaned; she overshadows these poor people, and assimilates them, somehow or other, to the character of her natural inhabitants. Their presence did not shock me, any more than if I had merely discovered a squirrel's nest in a tree. To be sure, it is a torment to see the great, high, ugly embankment of the railroad, which is here protruding itself into the lake, or along its margin, in close vicinity to this picturesque little hamlet. I have seldom seen anything more beautiful than the cove, on the border of which the huts are situated; and the more I looked, the lovelier it grew. The trees overshadowed it deeply; but on the one side there was some brilliant shrubbery which seemed to light up the whole picture with the effect of a sweet and melancholy smile. I felt as if spirits were there -or as if these shrubs had a spiritual life- in short, the impression was undefinable; and after gazing and musing a good while, I retraced my steps through the Irish hamlet, and plodded on along a wood-path.



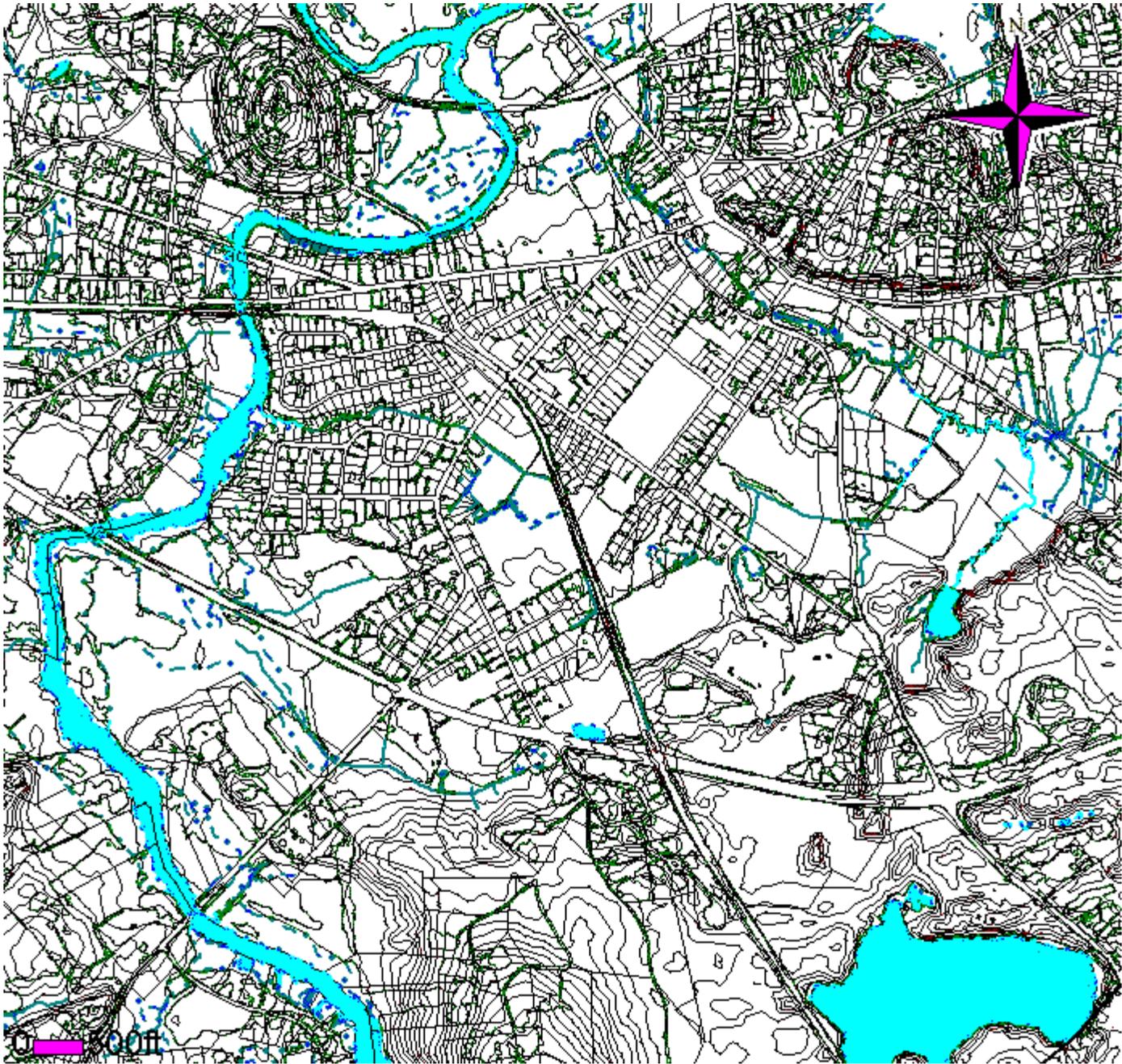
**Thoreau Didn't Invent
This Celebrated Body of Water.
Years Before He Moved There,
Another Noted Writer Enjoyed Its Charms.**

Following such an egregious headline, the article in the [L.A. Times](#) inserts anonymous remarks in italic type:



Sometimes the footsteps of the famous overlap. When Henry David Thoreau built his cabin in 1845 at Walden Pond, near Concord, Mass., the pond itself and the surrounding woods were already well-known to his contemporaries. Ralph Waldo Emerson owned the land on which the pond stood, and Emerson, Nathaniel Hawthorne, the writer and editor Margaret Fuller and other literary lights of the time frequented the area. In the edited excerpt below, Hawthorne (1804-1864) -who had not yet written THE SCARLET LETTER, THE HOUSE OF SEVEN GABLES, THE MARBLE FAUN and the other books by which he is remembered- describes a stroll through the autumn-bright woods and a visit to the pond in the early 1840s. The most surprising aspect of the account, which was written in 1843, is the author's discovery of a small settlement of environmentally sensitive Irish railroad workers living at the edge of the pond.

Well, one shouldn't come down too hard on the efforts of some newspaper peckerwood, who is obviously merely attempting to draw a paycheck by devising some sort of "news-hook" for a freebie citation from public-domain 19th Century sources, intended merely as another page-filler between the pretty travel ads. –But who, in the first place, is it, specifically, by name, who has had this idea that is here headlined, that Thoreau did "**Invent**" Walden Pond, that "**Celebrated Body of Water**"? And why precisely is it, that we should now be temporizing about the First Literary Appreciation of a body of water that has existed in that precise spot since the melting of the buried blocks of ice left behind by the latest glacial era, something like 10,000 years ago? And how is it that this news maven has created the perception that before Thoreau went out to Walden Pond to build his shanty in late March of the following spring season, it was "*literary lights of the time*" such as [Waldo Emerson](#), [Nathaniel Hawthorne](#), and [Margaret Fuller](#) who had "*frequented the area*"? Presumably this newsie is unaware that [Henry Thoreau](#) was "frequencing" that pond and those woods as a little



child as much as two decades before Hawthorne had ever even visited Concord:

WALDEN: When I was four years old, as I well remember, I was brought from Boston to this my native town, through these very woods and this field, to the pond. It is one of the oldest scenes stamped on my memory. And now to-night my flute has waked the echoes over that very water. The pines still stand here older than I; or, if some have fallen, I have cooked my supper with their stumps, and a new growth is rising all around, preparing another aspect for new infant eyes. Almost the same johnswort springs from the same perennial root in this pasture, and even I have at length helped to clothe that fabulous landscape of my infant dreams, and one of the results of my presence and influence is seen in these bean leaves, corn blades, and potato vines.



and presumably this newsie is likewise unaware that it was the adult surveyor of woodlots Thoreau who had in fact recommended to Emerson that he purchase these several woodlots with some frontage on Walden Pond,⁵⁹ and is likewise unaware that Thoreau had had his little homemade boat *Red Jacket* on Walden Pond for some years and had, long before, taken literary light Fuller for a row on this pond in this boat, and is likewise oblivious to the fact that Thoreau had written about his experiences at Walden Pond many, many times in his journal before the Hawthornes ever considered moving to Concord for the cheap rent at the vacant Old Manse,⁶⁰ and writing about his daily experiences in his own unpublished journal, not to speak of the fact that at the juncture at which Hawthorne witnessed these oh-so-picturesque shacks for the first time, these families of “railroad workers” which they had sheltered from the elements were needing –quite unbeknownst to the self-centered Hawthorne– to abandon their habitations and shoulder what of their scant possessions they could carry upon their backs, and trudge on down the American tracks which they had helped to construct and beneath which some of them in fact lay buried — because the heavy work in this area had been completed and they were all by that time without steady work and, if they had elected to remain there in bucolic Walden Woods next to bucolic Walden Pond, beyond the Concord Alms House and Poor Farm to which they were of course not eligible to have recourse, they would have eventually starved or frozen (whichever came first). Perhaps the newshawks are also innocent of an understanding that, as Thoreau most carefully described in *WALDEN; OR, LIFE IN THE WOODS*, one of these shanties Hawthorne saw, the one pertaining to the departing James Collins family, would be purchased by Thoreau for its construction materials to use in the creation of

59. Not, incidentally, “*the land on which the pond stood*,” a phrase which is quite remarkable not only as an impoverished simplification but also as an impoverished metaphor. And anyway, Emerson did not begin to purchase these woodlots with money from his dead wife’s estate until about a year after this initial visit by [Nathaniel Hawthorne](#), so here again our hapless news flack has gotten his or her chronology back-assward.

60. Not all of which he bothered to pay, by the way.

his own anti-desperation shanty, on the hill-edge down on Bay Henry, etc., etc.

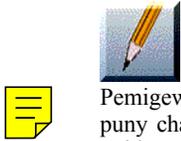


A 19th-Century Irish shanty in the Merrimack Valley

Such analyses seem entirely to avoid the fact that one object of Thoreau’s constructing this shanty was to demonstrate that it was possible, with care, to construct a healthful and clean and comfortable abode at an expense that anyone might afford, **and thus to furnish these impoverished refugees of the potato famine with an inspirational model for imitation.**⁶¹ And if “*the surrounding woods were already well-known to his [Henry Thoreau’s] contemporaries*” then we are left with an interesting “how-cum” about Hawthorne getting himself so turned around and lost in these surrounding woods at the end of this quoted piece from his AMERICAN NOTEBOOKS that, as the newspaper confesses, he had to ask for directions and had to be offered a lift back home to civilization! Just precisely how compatible is that with such terminology as “*already well-known*”?—Face it, most members of the Brahmin overcaste of “*literary lights of the time*,” with which Thoreau the offspring of a peasant or tradesfamily had to deal, wouldn’t have been able to find their own asses had they been privileged to hunt for them with both hands. Over and above all that, we may marvel at the casualness of the newspaper’s characterization of these desperately poor families of refugees of a foreign famine, forced to attempt to live on this sandy, virtually barren soil among the pines in dark Walden Woods where they could not conceivably have created productive cottage gardens, while their men had labored for like \$0.⁷³ the day for 18 hours of exhausting and quite dangerous rude labor, as, now get this, “*environmentally sensitive*.” Come on, newspaper people, “*environmentally sensitive*,” that’s for proper WASPs whose lives are not at constant risk, people who suppose that they can save the planet by sorting out their green empties from their clear empties — people like the ones who purchase your cruise tickets on the *Viking Serenade* and the *Nordic Prince* and the *Love Boat*! While one is at this sort of historical redactionism one might as well characterize the nigger-hating, nigger-baiting “Plug Ugly” *Irish* mob actions of the Boston urban hub of this period as having been, in actuality, mere prototype protests against the wickedness of chattel slavery! As a retort to this sort of newspaper-PC rewriting of history, a retort which might also be able to pass muster as an attempt at good humor, we might mention that among these “*environmentally sensitive*” Irishmen it was little Johnny Riordan of Concord’s Riordan Family who was the most environmentally sensitive of all — because in the New England turn of seasons it was getting cold and his little toes were turning blue.⁶² If one perceives anything at all about “sensitivity” in the quoted passage from Hawthorne’s literary notebook, it is not sensitivity but insensitivity which one perceives — originally, we can

61. In fact *Waldo Emerson* eventually sold Thoreau’s empty shanty to one of them, his drunken *Irish* gardener Hugh Whelan, to shelter this man’s family.

here perceive very starkly that author's notorious insensitivity to the problems of others, and, now, we are given an opportunity to perceive this news person's utter insensitivity to Hawthorne's having chosen to depict the plight of these refugees as merely picturesque.⁶³



And in fair days as well as foul we walked up the country — until from Merrimack it became the Pemigewasset that leaped by our side — and when we had passed its fountain-head the wild Amonoosuck whose puny channel we crossed at a stride guiding us to its distant source among the mountains until without its guidance we reached the summit of agiocochook. But why should we take the reader who may have been tenderly nurtured — through that rude country — where the crags are steep and the inns none of the best, and many a rude blast would have to be encountered on the mountain side. (*FD* 82-83)

We don't know precisely how many people have starved to death or, weakened by starvation, succumbed to diarrhea and fever or to [cholera](#) in [Ireland](#) during the ensuing period, but we do know that the first great die-

62. Refer to Thoreau's poem about Johnny's plight during the early winter of 1850 and to his carrying a cloak to Johnny in the late winter of 1851-1852: "I found that the shanty was warmed by the simple social relations of the Irish." Thoreau's good attitude of compassion and involvement contrasts sufficiently with [Nathaniel Hawthorne](#)'s attitude of aestheticism and disengagement to remind one of the following distinction which Simone Weil drew during WWII in her New York notebook:

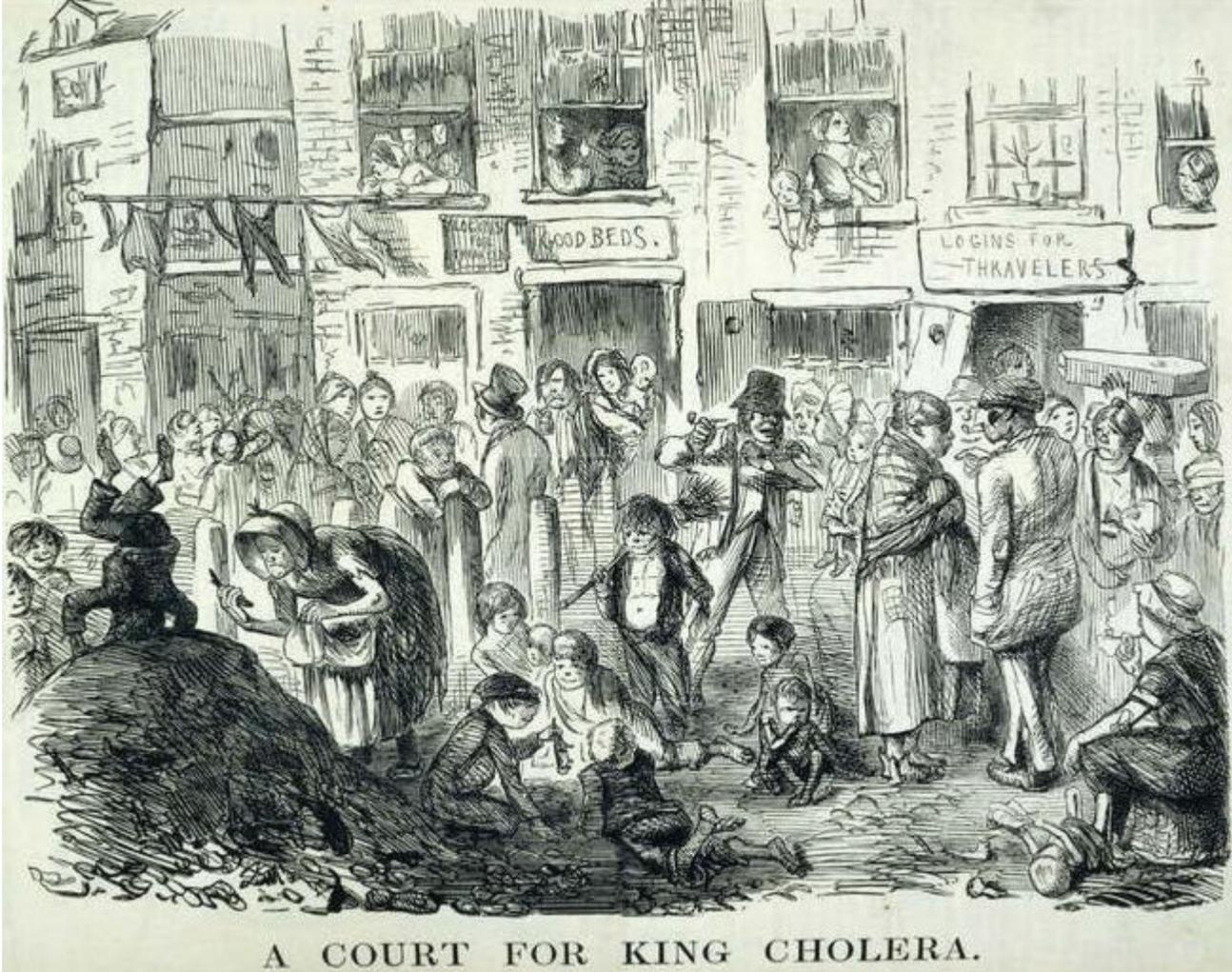
Natural piety consists in helping someone in misfortune so as not to be obliged to think about him any more, or for the pleasure of feeling the distance between him and oneself. It is a form of cruelty which is contrary only in its outward effects to cruelty in the ordinary sense. Such, no doubt, was the clemency of Caesar. Compassion consists in paying attention to an afflicted man and identifying oneself with him in thought. It then follows that one feeds him automatically if he is hungry, just as one feeds oneself. Bread given in this way is the effect and the sign of compassion.

63. Professor Walter Roy Harding considered that [Thoreau](#), in [WALDEN](#); OR, LIFE IN THE WOODS, wrote disparagingly of the [Irish](#), although, as he got to know them personally, he changed his mind about them and became their defender. He commented that why Thoreau did not then excise his disparaging remarks is not known. So the question would be, **did** Thoreau in fact write disparagingly of the fugitives from this ecological disaster, the [Irish Potato Famine](#)? Or was Harding quite mistaken here, misconstruing for derogation what in fact was mere frank description? And, was the impact of this episode in our human history the direct result of the ecological disaster, the late blight, or was it instead the direct result of a mean and contemptible English social policy — and was Thoreau aware of and contemptuous of this political causation?

IRELAND

IRELAND

off would occur during the winter of 1846-1847. A table prepared after the fact by Census Commissioners,



presented here, in all probability under-estimates the mortality because of the manner in which they collected data: for a family all of whose members succumbed zero deaths would be tabulated. Of the total number of deaths, which would be between 500,000 and 1,500,000, the percentage of that total which would occur in each year probably worked out to something like this (the figures shown for 1849 are the result of a [cholera](#)

epidemic in Connacht, Leinster, and Munster, as well as of the general starvation):

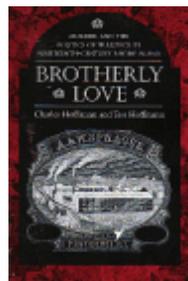
Mortality, expressed as %ages of the 1841 Population

Year	%
1842	5.1%
1843	5.2%
1844	5.6%
1845	6.4%
1846	9.1%
1847	18.5%
1848	15.4%
1849	17.9%
1850	12.2%

December 31, day: Many of the devotees of the Reverend [William Miller](#) expected Jesus to return at the end of 1843 (Festinger, Leon et al. WHEN PROPHECY FAILS. Minneapolis MN: U of Minnesota P, 1956, page 16).

MILLENNIALISM

The wealthiest citizen of [Cranston, Rhode Island](#), Amasa Sprague of the A&W Sprague textile empire, was murdered. Refer to Charles and Tess Hoffmann's BROTHERLY LOVE: MURDER AND THE POLITICS OF PREJUDICE IN NINETEENTH-CENTURY RHODE ISLAND (Amherst MA: U of Massachusetts P, 1993).



You can read this book online at <<http://www.questia.com/library/book/brotherly-love-murder-and-the-politics-of-prejudice-in-nineteenth-century-rhode-island-by-charles-tess-hoffmann.jsp>>.

Three brothers who had emigrated there from [Ireland](#), Nicholas, John, and William Gordon, would be charged with this murder, although there was precious little evidence against them other than the fact that they were [Catholics](#). Of the three, Nicholas and William had the most airtight alibis, whereas John would be unable to



produce evidence as to his whereabouts on the afternoon in question. It would be John, therefore, who would hang for the crime, on February 14, 1844. The authors of this study attempt to make a case that the actual murderer was Mr. Sprague's brother and business partner, William Sprague II, who had served as the governor of the state, and was currently one of its US senators, although actually there is less evidence against Senator Sprague than there is against one "Big Peter," a mill laborer who had disappeared from the vicinity shortly after the afternoon of the crime.



At the trial the judge ruled that the testimony of recent immigrants from Ireland was inherently of less credibility than the testimony of native-born American citizens. Later there would be sufficient doubt, that this conviction and [hanging](#) had been anything more than a rush to judgment, that this would be the last hanging permitted to take place on the soil of Rhode Island.

1844

[William Henry Harvey](#)'s "Description of a minute alga from the coast of [Ireland](#)," in [Annals and Magazine of Natural History](#) (14: 27-28). Also, his "Description of a new British species of Callithamnion (*C. pollexfenii*)," in [Annals and Magazine of Natural History](#) (14:109-131), and his "Algae of Tasmania," in [Journal of Botany](#), London (3:428-454). Friend William was awarded an honorary MD by Trinity College, Dublin.

IRELAND

IRELAND

A number of reports appeared in [Irish](#) newspapers, of a blight (now known as *Phytophthora infestans*) which had attacked the potato crops in America for the 2d consecutive growing season. This was not a known disease



such as “the curl” or “the dry rot,” but something new. We don’t know precisely how many people have starved to death or, weakened by starvation, succumbed to diarrhea and fever or to [cholera](#) in Ireland during the ensuing period, but we do know that the first great die-off would occur during the winter of 1846-1847. A table



prepared after the fact by Census Commissioners, presented here, in all probability under-estimates the mortality because of the manner in which they collected data: for a family all of whose members succumbed zero deaths would be tabulated. Of the total number of deaths, which would be between 500,000 and 1,500,000, the percentage of that total which would occur in each year probably worked out to something like



this:

IRISH POTATO FAMINE

Mortality, expressed as %ages of the 1841 Population

Year	%
1842	5.1%
1843	5.2%
1844	5.6%
1845	6.4%
1846	9.1%
1847	18.5%
1848	15.4%
1849	17.9%
1850	12.2%

February 14, Wednesday: In [Providence](#), John Gordon was hanged for the unexplained murder of Amasa Sprague. Because it was so entirely doubtful that John was guilty of anything at all (other than being a [Catholic](#), and a recent immigrant from impoverished [Ireland](#)), this would become hopefully the very last [hanging](#) ever to take place above the soil of [Rhode Island](#).

June 28, day: [John Boyle O'Reilly](#) was born into a well-to-do [Irish](#) family at what once had been Dowth Castle, a 12th-Century fortress near Drogheda. His mother was a close relative of the John Allen who had been a key participant in an 1803 Irish uprising.

[Frederick Douglass](#)'s schedule called for him to speak in Methuen before the Essex County Anti-Slavery Society — but his actual whereabouts and activities on this day remain a mystery:

Lampe, Gregory P. FREDERICK DOUGLASS: FREEDOM'S VOICE, 1818-1845. East Lansing MI: Michigan State UP, 1998, page 251: Douglass' activities from mid-June to the end of July are difficult to determine. Neither the [Liberator](#) nor the [National Anti-Slavery Standard](#) advertised any of his lectures or documented his participation in any antislavery meetings during this period. According to Blassingame, ed. DOUGLASS PAPERS, SERIES ONE, 1:xciii, on 28 June Douglass attended the Essex County Anti-Slavery Society meeting in Methuen, Massachusetts. However, Douglass' name does not appear in the minutes of the meeting, published in the [Liberator](#), 12 July 1844, 111, and it is probable that he was not in attendance. Douglass was invited to attend an antislavery meeting in Nashua, New Hampshire, from 26 to 29 July, but there is no indication of his presence in the accounts of the proceedings published in the [Liberator](#), 27 September



IRELAND

IRELAND

1844, 153.

1845

Queen's Colleges were founded in Belfast, Cork, and Galway, [Ireland](#).

The attorney John Mitchel had begun writing for [The Nation](#), so when Thomas Davis died, Charles Gavan Duffy invited Mitchel to join the newspaper as an assistant editor. This publication was in favor of the power of “moral force” over violence. He would author masterly descriptions of the [Irish Potato Famine](#), add a life of Hugh O'Neill to THE LIBRARY OF [IRELAND](#), and edit the poems of Davis and James Clarence Mangan — up to the point at which this insistence upon the power of “moral force” over violence would become just unbearably offensive to him.

The Young [Ireland](#) movement was founded.

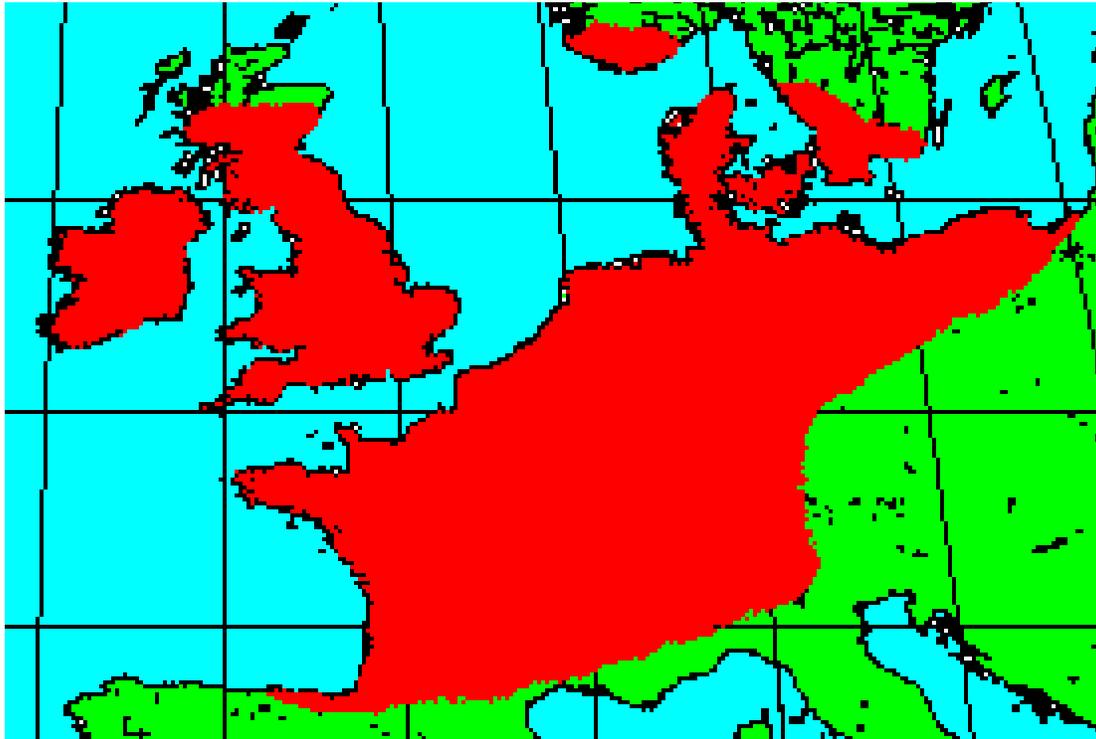
IRELAND

IRELAND

From this year into 1850, in the [Irish Potato Famine](#), the problem presented to the English overlords of [Ireland](#) by the intransigent native Irish [Catholics](#) would be being in part resolved, unfortunately by means of starvation, by means of disease, and by means of mass emigration, with the assistance of a “late blight” of



Phytophthora infestans which would be causing apparently sound and meaty white [potato](#) tubers to suddenly disintegrate into black slime just as they were becoming ready to harvest. A million of these Irish people who were in the way of the English would die and eight million more of these Irish people who were in the way would be forced from their homeland.





We know that, largely because of this famine, in 1845 a domestic servant could be hired for \$1.²⁵ per week in New England, because [Sophia Peabody Hawthorne](#) was able to retain a woman for this wage. (Her sister Mary was able to rent a house in Hingham MA for \$75.⁰⁰ annually.

Population Trends

	England / Wales	Ireland
1821	12,000,000	6,800,000
1831	13,900,000	7,770,000
1841	15,920,000	8,180,000
1845	about 16,700,000	about 8,300,000 (the year of the blight, to be followed by famine and then by fever and emigration)
1851	17,930,000	6,550,000
1861	20,070,000	5,800,000
1871	31,629,299	5,410,000
1881	35,026,108	5,170,000

During a period in which the population of virtually every other country in Europe was Dublin, the population of Ireland would lose 3.1 million people. This was a trauma with which it was most difficult to deal. For instance, we all know that Australia was settled largely by “British criminals” who had been “transported” during this period, but few of us are aware that a very significant percentage of these “British criminals” actually were mere Irish men and women who had become concerned, and who had thus made themselves politically suspect. A special prayer was promulgated and was being read in all the churches of the Anglican communion, to entreat the Almighty God to spare the Irish people from the ravages of the famine. The term “[Potato](#)” not being grand enough for an occasion of speaking directly to Almighty God, for verbiage for herbage this recitation substituted the euphemism “Succulent Tuber.”

William Henry Lane, whose minstrel-show name was “Juba,” began dancing the [Irish](#) jig in a new way which, eventually, would lead us into the craze known as tap dancing.

April 29, Tuesday: [John Leonard Knapp](#) died near Bristol, England. He would be buried at St. Helen, Alveston. Five volumes of unpublished drawings of British fungi are in the Natural History Museum. His herbaria is at Edinburgh and at the Bristol City Museum and Art Gallery. Some of his letters are in the Smith correspondence at the Linnaean Society. There is a wax bust by Parker at Kew and a portrait in the Hunt Library. Three manuscript notebooks toward a possible revised edition of JOURNAL OF A NATURALIST and other papers are in the Buckinghamshire Record Office.

[Saunders's News-Letter](#) for County Armagh, [Ireland](#) reported that after a warning had been passed to John O'Brien, Esq., of Hogan's-pass in County Armagh, or some of his workmen, not to attempt to till certain fields near Rallyvillane about a mile from Nenagh, on Thursday night last a number of ploughs that had been brought



IRELAND

IRELAND

there were destroyed by persons unknown. The Monaghan Standard of County Monaghan, Ireland reported that a few nights since, a gang of ruffians, calling themselves Molly Maguire's chickens, went to the house of Abraham Sloan, a farmer near Scotstown in County Monaghan, and having broken the door, their leader, who called himself Captain Steelribs, ordered his "chickens" to drag the man of the house out of bed. This man was put upon his knees with a cocked pistol at to his breast, and presented with "a Romish Catechism." He swore an oath that he would on the following morning give up possession of a farm that he held in dispute. "After threatening the most dreadful vengeance in the event of a non-compliance with this mandate, and after firing some shots about the premises, the miscreants decamped, by word of command, in military array." The Enniskillen Correspondent for the Armagh Guardian reported that Mr. Arthur Leonard of Callowhill has been again served with a threatening notice by the "Molly Maguires," and that there had been another murder, on Wednesday night last, the victim being a man named Ferguson who resided at Drumkeerin in County Leitrim. "While employed in his own house at some domestic business, he was shot at, and melancholy to relate it proved fatal. The cause assigned for this bloody deed is that the unfortunate man had a small plot of land let to some tenants, and was about taking it from them to occupy it himself. The 'Molly Maguires' it is said are the party accused of the murder." This correspondent noted that since Thursday evening last there had been some refreshing showers which were tending greatly to improve the early-set [potatoes](#): "The healthy appearance of the crops in the neighbourhood promise an abundant harvest." Nevertheless, he wrote, the annual tide of emigration to America had just commenced in this county, and every week large numbers of the peasantry of our country were passing through Enniskillen on their way to the ports of Donegal, Derry, Sligo, &c. "The majority of those emigrating are Protestants."

FAMINE

In the Huron Reflector of Norwalk, Ohio the term "top notch" was deployed apparently for the first recorded time, as a description for items of the highest quality. The citation offers no clue as to the manner in which this usage had originated:

J. WHYLER Has just arrived from the Great Emporium, with a Tremendous Cargo of Spring and Summer Goods, Which he is now unloading at his Old Stand in Norwalk – consisting of the choicest selections he ever made – the top notch of Fashions and Patterns – and an extensive variety of DRY GOODS, to suit his Old Customers and every other person who will give him a call.

August 23, Saturday: In England, John Lindley reported that "A fatal malady has broken out amongst the [potato](#) crop. On all sides we hear of the destruction."

FAMINE

There had since Wednesday been showers and thunderstorms from Maine to New-York, breaking what had been in eastern Massachusetts a severe drought. The lightning strikes on this day in the vicinity of Littleton, ten miles to the northwest of Walden Pond, both in the morning storm and in the afternoon storm, were particularly devastating, initiating several woodlot fires and several structure fires (such as the Tremont Hotel), stunning cattle in the fields, killing a couple of people, etc. On this afternoon [Henry Thoreau](#) got caught in a rainshower and thunderstorm, as he would report in [WALDEN: OR, LIFE IN THE WOODS](#), and sought refuge in the isolated shanty of a local [Irish](#) immigrant family. The infant of the family would be described in [WALDEN](#) as still "cone-headed" by recent passage through the birth canal, and that girl baby had been born in May of this year.⁶⁴

64. Note that "cone-headed," an accurate medical description of a neonate condition, is not an epithet of derision.

WALDEN: I set out one afternoon to go a-fishing to Fair-Haven, through the woods, to eke out my scanty fare of vegetables. My way led through Pleasant Meadow, an adjunct of the Baker Farm, that retreat of which a poet has since sung, beginning,-

“Thy entry is a pleasant field,
 Which some mossy fruit trees yield
 Partly to a ruddy brook,
 By gliding musquash undertook,
 And mercurial trout,
 Darting about.”

I thought of living there before I went to Walden. I “hooked” the apples, leaped the brook, and scared the musquash and the trout. It was one of those afternoons which seem indefinitely long before one, in which many events may happen, a large portion of our natural life, though it was already half spent when I started. By the way there came up a shower, which compelled me to stand half an hour under a pine, piling boughs over my head, and wearing my handkerchief for a shed; and when at length I had made one cast over the pickerel-weed, standing up to my middle in water I found myself suddenly in the shadow of a cloud, and the thunder began to rumble with such emphasis that I could do no more than listen to it. The gods must be proud, thought I, with such forked flashes to rout a poor unarmed fisherman.



Sat Aug 23d I set out this afternoon to go a fishing –for pickerel to eke out my scanty fare of vegetables– From Walden I went through the woods to Fair Haven –but by the way the rain came on again and my fates compelled me to stand a half hour under a pine –piling boughs over my head, and wearing my pocket handkerchief for an umbrella –and when at length I made one cast over the pickerel weed, the thonder gan romblen in the Heven with that gristly steven, that Chaucer tells of –(the gods must be proud with such forked flashes and such artillery to rout a poor unarmed fisherman) I made haste to the nearest hut for a shelter. This stood a half a mile off the road and so much the nearer to the pond– There dwelt a shiftless Irishman John Field & his wife –and many children from the broad faced boy that ran by his father’s side to escape the rain to the wrinkled & Sybil like –crone-like infant, not knowing whether to take the part of age or infancy that sat upon its father’s knee as in the palaces of nobles and looked out from its home in the midst of wet and hunger inquisitively upon the stranger with the privilege of infancy The young creature not knowing but it might be the last of a line of kings instead of John Fields poor starveling brat –or I should rather say still knowing that it was the last of a noble line and the hope and cynosure of the world. An Honest hard working –but shiftless man plainly was John Field. And his wife she too was brave to cook so many succeeding dinners in the recesses of that lofty stove –with round greasy face and bare breast –still thinking to improve her condition one day –with the never absent mop in hand –and yet no effects of it visible anywhere– The chickens like members of the family stalked about the room –too much humanized to roast well– They stood and looked in my eye or pecked at my shoe– He told me his story –how hard he worked bogging for a neighbor –ten dollars an acre –and the use of the land with manure for one year– And the little broad faced son worked cheerfully at his fathers side the while not knowing alas how poor a bargain he had made. Living –John Field –alas –without arithmetic.– Failing to live– Do you ever fish said I– Oh yes– I catch a mess when I am lying by –good perch I catch– what your bait– I catch shiners with fish worms & bait the perch with them. You’d better go now John, said his wife with with glistening hopeful face– But poor John Field disturbed but a couple of fins while I was catching a fair string –& he said it was his luck –and when he changed seats –luck changed seats too. Thinking to live by some derivative old country mode in this primitive new country e.g. to catch perch –with



shiner.

I find an instinct in me conducting to a mystic spiritual life –and also another –to a primitive savage life– Toward evening — as the world waxes darker I am permitted to see the woodchuck stealing across my path, and tempted to seize and devour it. The wildest most desolate scenes are strangely familiar to me

Why not live a hard and emphatic life? not to be avoided –full of adventures and work! Learn much –in it. travel much though it be only in these woods I some-times walk across a field with unexpected expansion and long-missed content –as if there were a field worthy of me. The usual daily boundaries of life are dispersed and I see in what field I stand.

When on my way this after noon shall I go down this long hill in the rain to fish in the pond “I ask myself”– and I say to my-self yet roam far –grasp life & conquer it– learn much –& live– Your fetters are knocked off –you are really free. Stay till late in the night –be unwise and daring– See many men far and near –in their fields and cottages before the sun set –though as if many more were to be seen– And yet much rencontre shall be so satisfactory and simple that no other shall seem possible Do not repose every night as villagers do– The noble life is continuous and unintermitting At least, live with a longer radius– Men come home at night only for the next field or street –where their house hold echoes haunt –and their life pines and is sickly because it breathes its own breath. Their shadows morning & evening reach farther than their daily steps. But come home from far –from ventures & perils –from enterprise and discovery –& crusading –with faith and experience and character. Do not rest much. Dismiss prudence –fear –conformity – Remember only –what is promised. Make the day light you and the night hold a candle –though you be falling from heaven to earth –“from morn to dewy eve a summer’s day.”

for Vulcan’s fall occupied a day but our highest aspirations and performances fill but the interstices of time.

Are we not reminded in our better moments that we have been needlessly husbanding somewhat –perchance – our little God-derived capital –or title to capital guarding it by methods we know? but the most diffuse prodigality a better wisdom teaches –that we *hold* nothing –we are not what we were–

By usurers craft –by Jewish methods –we strive to retain and increase the divinity in us –when the greater part of divinity is out of us.

Most men have forgotten that it was ever morning– But a few serene memories –healthy & wakeful natures there are who assure us that the Sun rose clear, heralded by the singing of birds

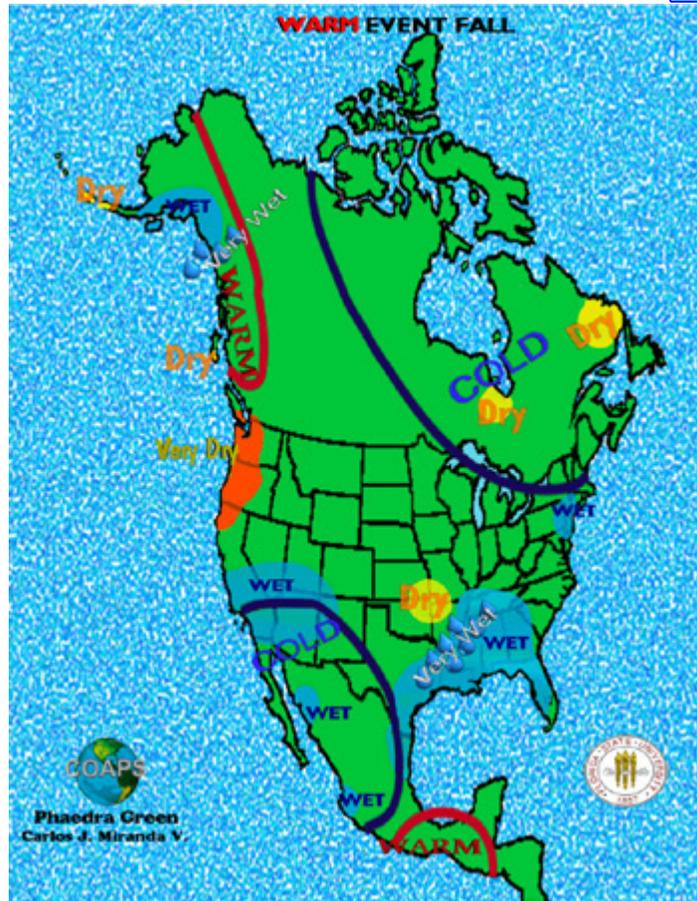
This very day’s sun which rose before memnon was ready to greet it.

In all the dissertations –on language –men forget the language that is –that is really universal –the inexpressible meaning that is in all things & every where with which the morning & evening teem. As if language were especially of the tongue. Of course with a more copious hearing or understanding –of what is published the present *languages* will be forgotten.

MEMNON

The rays which streamed through the crevices will be forgotten when the shadow is wholly removed.

TIMELINE OF WALDEN



➡ Beginning of September: At the end of the usual “meal months” during which the old stores of potatoes had become exhausted while the new crop was not yet ready to be dug from the ground, the months of June, July, and August, the American potato blight *Phytophthora infestans* was reported as having spread to Ireland, but the plants were lush and green despite the summer having been unusually wet and cool, and an exceptionally abundant October crop was being anticipated.⁶⁵

FAMINE

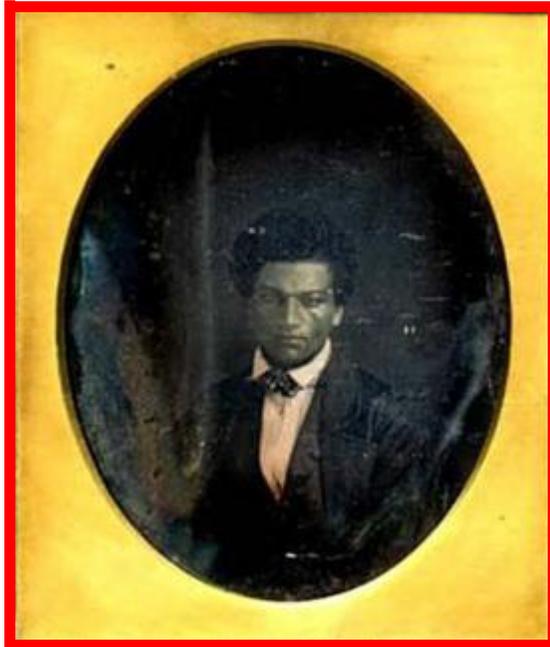
65. Potatoes are generally not fully mature in Ireland until October.

November: In the Scientific American magazine there appeared a note that “The accounts of the general failure of the potato crops by the rot, especially in Ireland, are of a very serious and alarming character.”

William Lloyd Garrison returned from England to the United States. In Ireland, Frederick Douglass traveled from Cork to Limerick, along the way noting the condition of the Irish rural poor due to rotting potato crops. Although he reported back to Garrison that

I see much here to remind me of my former condition and I confess I should be ashamed to lift my voice against American slavery, but that I know the cause of humanity is one the world over.

he did not mix this issue that his audiences did not want to hear about into his anti-slavery talks. English sales of his NARRATIVE meanwhile reached 500 copies.⁶⁶



NARRATIVE of the LIFE of FREDERICK DOUGLAS, an AMERICAN SLAVE, now in Great Britain, written by himself, Price 2s. 6d. Published and Sold by Webb & Chapman, Great Brunswick Street, Dublin.
 Previous to F. D.'s departure from America, in 9th Month, 1845, 4,500 copies of this Narrative had been sold. An Edition of 2000, printed in Dublin, since his arrival, is nearly exhausted; and another Edition, with some few corrections, is in the press. The total number of Copies of the Narrative which have been Published, amounts, therefore, to 8,500.

66. I do not know the date on which this occurred, but it would have needed to have occurred before Garrison embarked in November 1845 to return to America. From William Lovett's THE LIFE AND STRUGGLES OF WILLIAM LOVETT, IN HIS PURSUIT OF BREAD, KNOWLEDGE, AND FREEDOM (London: Trubner, 1876, page 321) we learn that on a particular evening in London, evidently at a private party in a home, not only did Henry Vincent perform "The Marseillaise," but also William Lloyd Garrison presented "several anti-slavery pieces," the "grave" Henry C. Wright "sang an old Indian war song," and Frederick Douglass, "who had a fine voice, sang a number of negro melodies."



IRELAND

IRELAND



1846

A pamphlet appeared in [Boston](#) summarizing the munificence and beneficence of the 1,496 men in the commonwealth who were worth at least \$50,000, each.

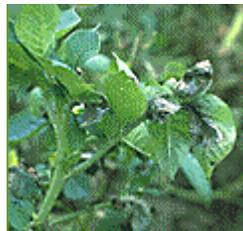
BOSTON'S FIRST MEN

Strict rules were utilized for the determination of benevolence. Since [Queen Victoria](#) had given \$900,000 for relief in the [Irish Potato Famine](#) out of her vast fortune, the size of which was approximately known — by computation a Boston laborer receiving an average wage would have needed to donate \$0.⁸⁰ in order “to be precisely as benevolent as Her Majesty.” Similarly, the editors knew of a Boston man with an annual income of \$20.⁰⁰ who annually gave \$0.⁵⁰ to charity. It was on the basis of this sort of “widow’s mite” high standard that only 375 of the 1,496 were being declared to be “more or less Benevolent”:

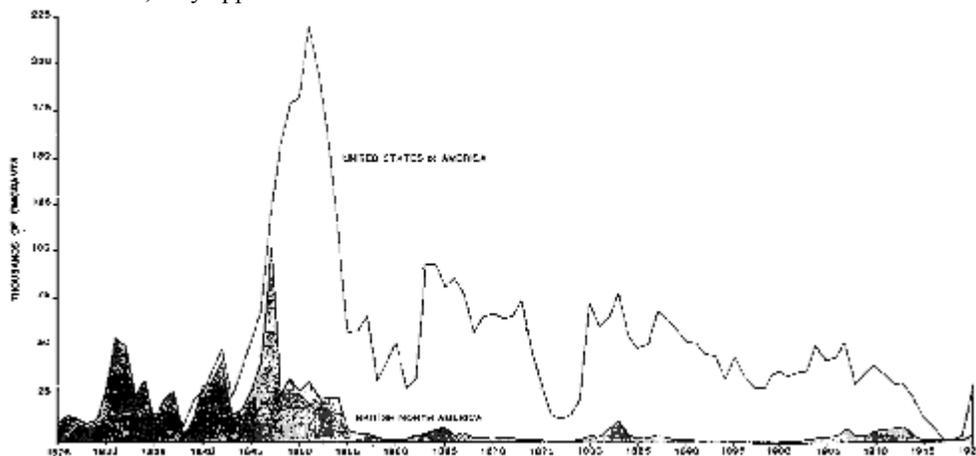
Amount of property owned	\$244,780,000
Number worth over one million dollars	18
Number worth just one million dollars	8
Number worth three fourths of a million dollars	10
Number worth half a million dollars	45
Number worth quarter of a million dollars	147
Number who began poor, or nearly so	705
Number who rec'd all, or the greater part, by inheritance or marriage	282
Number of rich Farmers	90
Number of rich Manufacturers (Cotton, Woolen, &c.)	53
Number of rich Merchants (and Various Traders)	463
Number of rich Lawyers (including Judges)	75
Number of rich Physicians	31
Number of rich Clergymen	12
Number of rich Brokers (including some speculators)	46
Number of rich Publishers	11
Number of rich Editors	4
Number of rich Shoe makers (and Dealers)	50
Number of rich Tailors (and Clothes-Dealers)	10
Number of rich Carpenters (and Ship-Builders)	15
Number of rich Masons	9

Number of rich Butchers (and Provision-Dealers)	13
Number of rich Distillers	14
Number ascertained to be more or less Benevolent	375
Number of rich Old Bachelors	68

While this benevolence was going on in [Boston](#) in the New World, in [Ireland](#) the apparently sound and meaty white tubers of the new [potato](#) crop, upon which so very much depended, suddenly again disintegrated into stinking black slime — just as they had in the previous harvest season. This episode of the “late blight” of *Phytophthora infestans* was merely as bad as before but the population was already in an emaciated condition.



Therefore a visit which had been planned for Queen Victoria would obviously need to be postponed. Of over 100,000 malnourished, [cholera](#)-ridden [Irish](#), off-loaded from the converted cargo holds of sailing ships into Canadian quarantine stations, one-third died within this year. Next to a wharf at Montréal, in a pit, 6,000 bodies were dumped and the cause of death was set down simply as “ship fever.” Spectators on the banks of the St. Lawrence noticed that, as survivors of the trans-Atlantic voyage were being barged upriver toward the Canadian interior, they appeared too weak to return the waves of children on shore.



We don't know precisely how many people have starved to death or, weakened by starvation, succumbed to diarrhea and fever or to [cholera](#) in [Ireland](#) during the ensuing period, but we do know that the first great die-off would occur during the winter of 1846-1847. A table prepared after the fact by Census Commissioners, presented here, in all probability under-estimates the mortality because of the manner in which they collected data: for a family all of whose members succumbed zero deaths would be tabulated. Of the total number of deaths, which would be between 500,000 and 1,500,000, the percentage of that total which would occur in each

year probably worked out to something like this:

Mortality, expressed as %ages of the 1841 Population

Year	%
1842	5.1%
1843	5.2%
1844	5.6%
1845	6.4%
1846	9.1%
1847	18.5%
1848	15.4%
1849	17.9%
1850	12.2%

Prior to 1845 the average intake of an [Irish](#) adult during a winter had consisted of ten to twelve pounds of potatoes, with buttermilk, daily. In the oncoming winter it would consist of one pound of Indian meal **or** one bowl of soup with one slice of bread — and to prove oneself worthy to receive such sustenance one would need to be doing daily hard labor.

In this year a painting was made of [Albert Edward, Prince of Wales](#). The 5-year-old appears well enough nourished.



A Mrs. Thynne brought some of the corals of Torquay to London “for the purpose of study and the entertainment of friends.” Each day, this lady’s housemaid⁶⁷ would need to spend thirty to forty-five minutes ⁶⁷. Possibly, but of course not necessarily, an [Irish](#) woman.

pouring the six gallons of salt water of the aquarium backward and forward before an open window, in order to keep it fresh. The “aquarium craze,” something that Brits would be referring to as “sea-gardening,” had fairly begun.

On a related note (?), the “Boston Museum” was constructed on Tremont Street in [Boston](#).⁶⁸ Many edifices of this type were in this period becoming economically possible, due in part to the wealth being generated by the sea trade and in part to of the eagerness of these [Irish](#) unfortunates to part with their labor for ridiculously low wages. —Hey, it’s an ill wind that blows **nobody** any good!

At this point John Mitchel and other Young Irelanders who had come to disdain the doctrine of “moral force” broke with Daniel O’Connell and founded the Irish Confederation, devoted to an agenda of the doing of harm so that good might result. —Hey, let’s give terrorism a chance!



[Thomas Carlyle](#) would be doing his part, from this year into 1851, by making a study of the situation in Ireland in order to inform curious Englishmen what they ought to make of it.

July: There were scattered reports of a reappearance of the blight in [Ireland](#), including some counties such as Wicklow which had been free of the soot on the leaves in the preceding [potato](#) season.



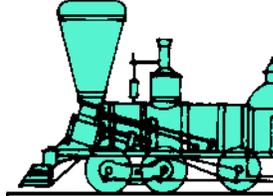
FAMINE

68. This structure is not to be confused with the “Boston Museum of Natural History” which was constructed in 1863 in the newly filled Back Bay and which eventually became the Museum of Science. This structure wasn’t a museum at all, it was a 1,200-seat auditorium at which plays were regularly performed. It was termed a “museum” in order to reassure blue-blooded [Boston](#) clients who might have been reluctant to visit anything so vulgar as a “theater.”



August 31, Monday-September 10: [Henry Thoreau](#) went on his 1st trip to the Maine wilderness, with his cousin-by-marriage [George Augustus Thatcher](#). If the locomotive that pulled Thoreau's train out of the railroad station in [Boston](#) that day was one of the newest ones manufactured by the company of Mathias W. Baldwin in Philadelphia in 1846, this may have been what it looked like:

HISTORY OF RR



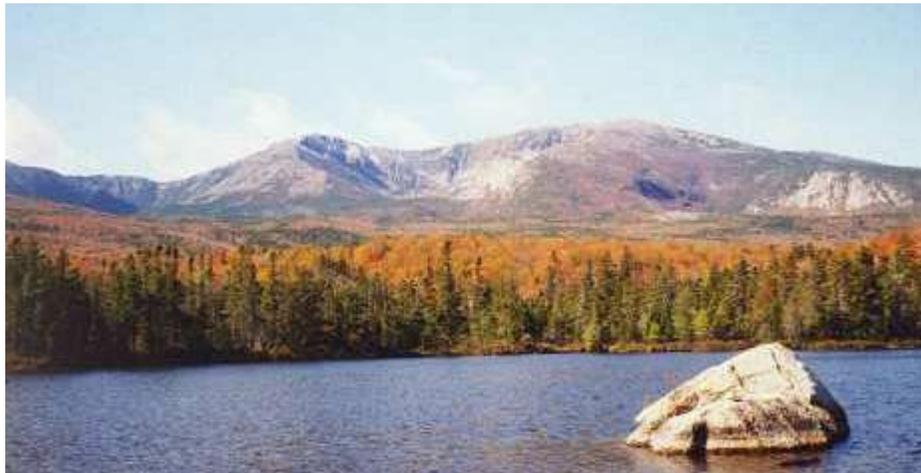
Or, this may have been what it looked like, since we know Baldwin's company had begun to manufacture such a model for the Madison & Indianapolis Railroad:

(Would it be wrong to suggest, Thoreau was being haunted by what that old Indian had said to him on the dock in Oldtown in 1838? )

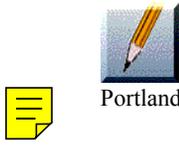
The cousin adventurers went by rail via Boston to Portland and then by night steamship to Bangor, by stagecoach to Mattawamkeag, by batteau up the Penobscot River into North Twin Lake and to Sowadahunk



deadwater, climbed Mount Ktaadn, and then Thoreau returned by ship. His notes of the climb at that point were no more than: “climb tree — torrent — camping ground — leave party — go up torrent — fir trees — lakes — rocks — camp — green fish — fire at night — wind up ravine.” He then wrote, but decided not to domesticate, a seven-page account of Agiocochook. (Instead, he expanded the Saddleback episode eventually for use in [A WEEK ON THE CONCORD AND MERRIMACK RIVERS.](#))

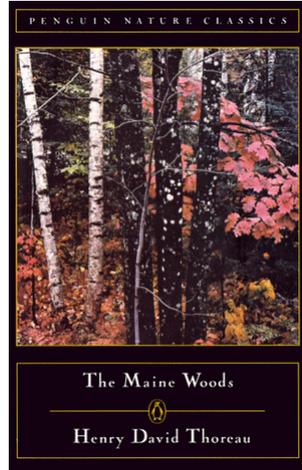


TIMELINE OF THE MAINE WOODS



Aug 31st 1846 Concord to Boston— Rail road Station —tall man —sailors short of money —cars to Portland Passenger to Umbagog. Sea shore —Salem tunnel no water hay cocks —Portsmouth North Berwick

–Saco –Portland –Capt’s office –White head light –sailor –owls head Thomaston –Camden –Belfast –Bangor–



(The map prepared by Tom Funk which shows the route of this journey, and the one Thoreau would make in 1857, can be viewed on the following screens.)

In the “[KTAADN](#)” essay that would be based primarily on this trip, Thoreau would comment that a local farmer who seemed by inference to have been attempting also to grow tomatoes had even in that remote area been infected by the potato rot though he had used seed of his own raising!

I think he said that he was the first to bring a plough and a cow so far; and he might have added the last, with only two exceptions. The potato-rot had found him out here, too, the previous year, and got half or two thirds of his crop, though the seed was of his own raising. Oats, grass, and [potatoes](#) were his staples; but he raised, also, a few carrots and turnips, and “a little corn for the hens,” for this was all that he dared risk, for fear that it would not ripen. Melons, squashes, sweet-corn, beans, [tomatoes](#), and many other vegetables, could not be ripened there.

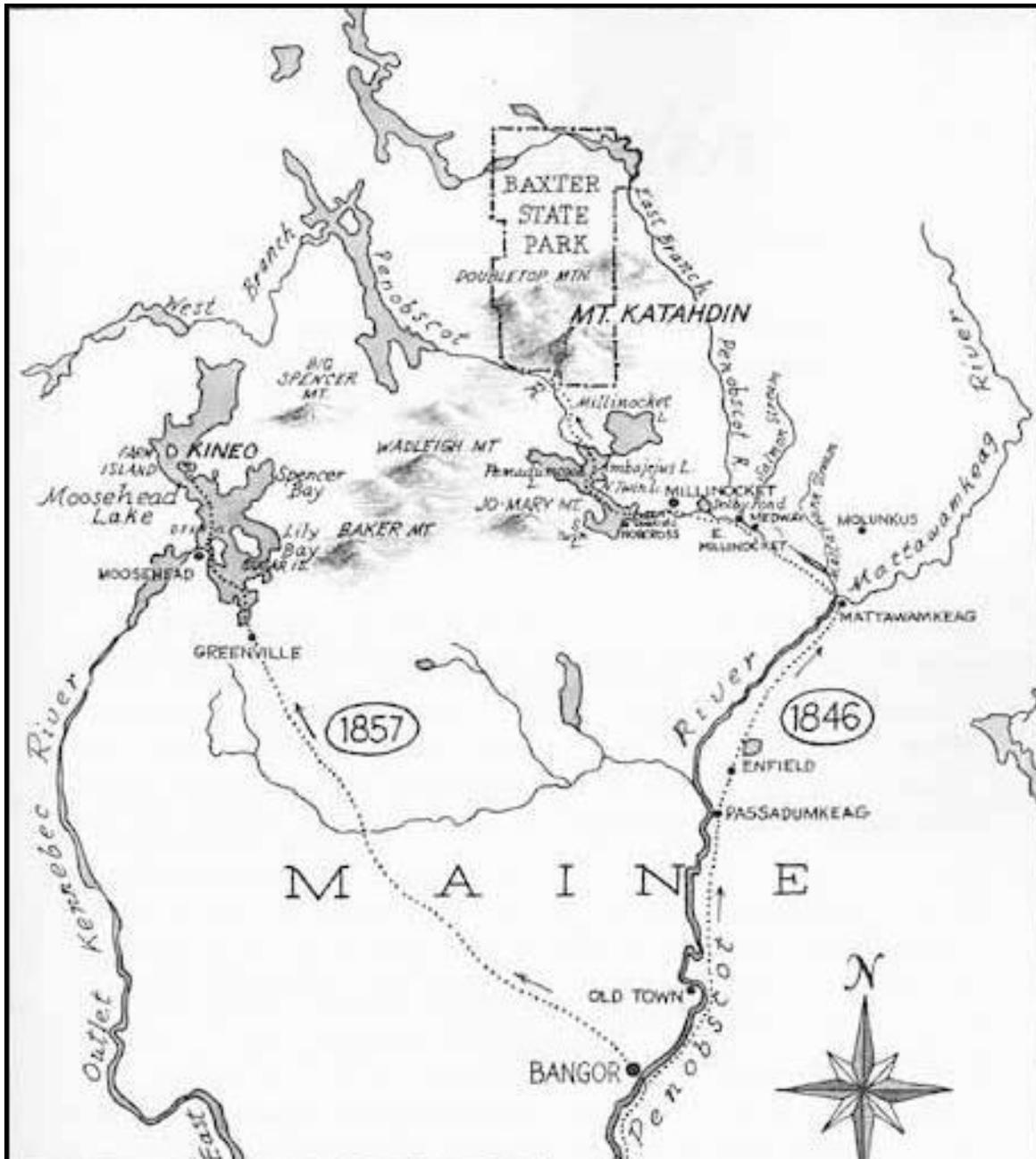
FAMINE

Since the late blight caused by *Phytophthora infestans* affects both [potato](#) and [tomato](#) plants, it would be possible that the source of this isolated farm’s potato rot occurring in potatoes grown from local seed would have been that the farmer had brought in tomato seedlings containing the fungus.⁶⁹

IRISH POTATO FAMINE

Irish Acreage in Potatoes

Year	Acres
1845	>2,000,000
1846	>1,000,000
1847	300,000
1848	700,000



69. The Irish [potato](#) famines of the mid-19th century were caused by a late blight disease which occurs in humid regions with temperature ranges of between 40 and 80 degrees Fahrenheit; hot, dry weather checks its spread. The *Phytophthora* fungus survives in stored tubers, in dump piles, in field plants, and in greenhouse tomatoes. The sporangia are airborne to nearby plants, in which infection may occur within a few hours. At temperatures below 59 degrees Fahrenheit the sporangia germinate by producing zoospores that encyst and later form a germ tube. Above that temperature most sporangia produce a germ tube directly. Foliage blighting and a new crop of sporangia are produced within four to six days after infection. The cycle is repeated as long as cool, moist weather prevails. Potato or tomato vines that are infected may rot within two weeks. The disease destroyed more than half of the [tomato](#) crop in the eastern United States in 1946, leading to the establishment of a blight-forecasting service in 1947. When plants have become infected, lesions (round or irregularly shaped areas that range in color from dark green to purplish black and resemble frost injury) appear on leaves, petioles, and stems. A whitish growth of spore-producing structures may appear at the margin of the lesions on the underleaf surfaces. Potato tubers develop rot up to 0.6 inch deep. Secondary fungi and bacteria (*Erwinia*) often invade potato tubers and produce rotting that results in great losses during storage, transit, and marketing.





HERE THEN IS MY NEW THEORY

Various scholars have alleged that in the [Irish Potato Famine](#), we have a case of genocide. Dr. Edward Brennan, Ireland's ambassador to Canada, has noted: "The Great Famine was Ireland's holocaust (which) condemned the Irish to be the first boat people of modern Europe."

Weary men, what reap ye? Golden corn for the Stranger.
What sow ye? Human corpses that await the Avenger.
Fainting forms, all hunger stricken, what see you in the offing?
Stately ships to bear our food away amid the stranger's scoffing.
There's a proud array of soldiers, what do they round your door?
They guard our masters' granaries from the hands of the poor.
Pale mothers, wherefore weeping? Would to God that we were dead.
Our children swoon before us, and we cannot give them bread!
We are wretches, famished, scorned, human tools to build your pride,
But God will yet take vengeance for the souls for whom Christ died.
Now is your hour of pleasure, bask ye in the world's caress;
But our whitening bones against ye will arise as witnesses,
>From the cabins and the ditches, in their charred, uncoffined masses,
For the Angel of the Trumpet will know them as he passes.
A ghastly spectral army before God we'll stand
And arraign ye as our murderers, O spoilers of our land!

The Irish labor leader James Connolly alleged that "The English administration of Ireland during the 'famine' was a colossal crime against the human race." The allegation has repeatedly been made by Irish patriots that their nation did not starve for want of potatoes, but because still-available foodstuffs, 30 to 40 shiploads per day, were being removed while this removal process was being guarded by 200,000 British soldiers organized as what amounted to Food Removal Regiments. Be that as it may, apologists for British conduct during this period of food scarcity would do well to ponder the characterization of British colonialism in Ireland by William Makepiece Thackeray:

It is a frightful document against ourselves ... one of the most melancholy stories in the whole world of insolence, rapine, brutal, endless slaughter and persecution on the part of the English master ... no crime ever invented by eastern or western barbarians, no torture or Roman persecution or Spanish Inquisition, no tyranny of Nero or Alva but can be matched in the history of England in Ireland.

In 1861 in THE LAST CONQUEST OF IRELAND, John Mitchel wrote:

The Almighty indeed sent the potato blight but the English created the famine.

Mitchel further observed that:

... a million and half men, women and children were carefully, prudently and peacefully slain by the English government. They died of hunger in the midst of abundance which their own hands created. There was no famine. There can be no famine in a country overflowing with food.



IRELAND

IRELAND

A London Times editorial of September 30, 1845, warned: “In England the two main meals of a working man’s day now consists of potatoes.” Grossly over-populated relative to its food supply, England’s overdependence on imported foodstuffs was similar to Ireland’s overdependence on the potato. In 1844 the European potato crop failed, causing food prices to rise, before in 1845 the blight hit the offshore potato crop. England was itself facing famine unless it could import vast amounts of alternative food but didn’t grab Irish food merely to save itself. It took this food in part in order to decimate the population of Ireland. Queen Victoria’s economist, Nassau Senior, would express a fear that the plan would “kill only one million Irish, and that will scarcely be enough to do much good.” Treasury Chief Charles Trevelyan refused entry to an American food ship and, when an eyewitness urged a stop, responded, “We must not complain of what we really want to obtain.” Thomas Carlyle exulted: “Ireland is like a half-starved rat that crosses the path of an elephant. What must the elephant do? Squelch it, by heavens, squelch it.” “TOTAL ANNIHILATION,” offered a London Times headline of September 2, 1846; and in 1848 an editorialist exulted that “A Celt will soon be as rare on the banks of the Shannon as a red man on the banks of Manhattan.”

Here, however, we have a new theory as to how the blight microorganism which caused the [Irish Potato Famine](#) originally made its way to [Ireland](#), and this new theory does not allege English purposefulness and therefore does not allege English genocide. It merely ascribes something to the English which we all know to be, anyway, utterly characteristic of them: unconsciousness.

We know that epidemiologically, the microorganism came from Mexico or Peru to the Eastern seaboard of the United States to the Low Countries to England and Ireland. That’s a given, extrapolated from the years in which the microorganism began to destroy [potato](#) crops in these various areas.

This is evidence that it seems unlikely, will ever be challengeable.

We believe we know, on the basis of the movement of infected potatoes, how the microorganism made its way from Mexico or Peru to the Eastern seaboard of the United States. We believe we know, likewise, on the basis of the movement of infected potatoes, how the microorganism made its way from the Eastern seaboard of the United States to the Low Countries of Europe. That historical research has been done. What we don’t have much evidence for, what to this point we have never bothered to research, is specifically how the blight microorganism then made its way across the English and Irish channels, to infect crops on these islands north of Europe.

The only existing theory is that the microorganism was wafted across these bodies of water on the cool winds. That is, the culprit was a cool season.

Nobody’s fault.

The only thing that this theory has had going for it, is that it has been the only theory in existence. This must have been what happened, we say, because there’s no other available explanation. The blight was blown by the wind. Nobody’s fault.

What has recently been noticed, however, is that the potato plant and the [tomato](#) plant, both *Solanaceas*, are both carriers of the microorganism. The microorganism blights potatoes but has no noticeable impact on tomatoes. Nevertheless, it is at least as easy for this particular microorganism to be carried from place to place, by the human transportation of tomatoes and of tomato plants, as it is for it to be carried from place to place, by the human transportation of potatoes and of potato plants. In fact, it is more likely that during the time period in question we would have indulged in the transportation of the blight microorganism by our relocation of healthy-seeming tomato materials, than that we would have indulged in the transportation of noticeably infected and inferior potato materials.

We have seen a situation in which there was an isolated potato farm in the backwoods of Maine, that for years during the potato blight was free of the microorganism. Then the farmer went to town and got some tomato plants and took them home in his wagon! The next year his potatoes turned to mush and he wondered why. (We know of this because Henry David Thoreau made a note of it in his journal of his trip to Maine, preparatory for his writing the series of articles we know as THE MAINE WOODS.)

During the period in question the potato was bulk food for the most vulnerable classes but the tomato was in an entirely different category of alimentation. The potato provided calories, vitamins, and minerals for the needy. The tomato was, however, a mere specialty food, a *salet* item relatively lacking in calories and in vitamins (yes, tomatoes are **low** in vitamins), a comestible for the delight of the well-to-do and easily bored. Roughly, that social



IRELAND

IRELAND

distinction between the needy and the bored correlates, in the context of Ireland, with the gross social distinction we think of as — the Irish versus the English.

If some well-to-do, easily bored English resident of Ireland had imported tomato plants to be grown in his or her garden on his or her estate in Ireland, either from the Eastern seaboard of the United States or from the Low Countries of Europe, during the period in question, that could have been an alternative vector for the transmission of the microorganism across the channels of water that isolate England and Ireland.

Therefore we now have two competing theories, not one unchallenged theory, for how the blight microorganism made its way to Ireland. The original theory, that the microorganism was wafted to Ireland on the cool winds of an unusual season, nobody's fault—a theory that has never had any real evidence to support it, a theory that has stood unchallenged because it has been the only theory available—no longer stands alone and unchallenged.

We badly need to do historical research into the movement of tomatoes and of tomato plants during the period in question. **Did** some English resident of Ireland import tomatoes or tomato plants into Ireland just prior to the Irish Potato Famine? **Was** the Irish Potato Famine induced among the poor Irish, unbenownst, merely in order to grace the tables of the English with a novelty *salet* item?

I myself take no position in this matter, other than to insist that further historical inquiry is now indicated. I make no accusation that, if tomato material was indeed the vector for the intrusion of this blight, and if English residents of Ireland brought this tomato material, that they did this **on purpose to destroy the improvident Irish** who, they were commenting at that time, were such a bother to them. (In such a case, the totality of the comment which I might personally make would be: “**How convenient it can be when we happen inadvertently to strike two birds with the same stone!**”)

August 7: “The [potatoes](#) all about [Kingstown](#) are rotting.”

[RHODE ISLAND](#)

In one area between Dublin and Cork in [Ireland](#), travelers could smell the rotting [potatoes](#) even from the public highway.

[IRISH POTATO FAMINE](#)

Mid-August: The new crop of [potatoes](#) was anticipated to be able to provide its first nourishment, and succor the [Irish](#) for the localized and variegated appearance of the blight in their previous year's crop. However, the “soot” was in this year **everywhere** apparent on the strong green leaves of the plant.

[IRISH POTATO FAMINE](#)

September: Late in this year Lola Montez danced in München, where King Ludwig I became infatuated with her. As his mistress and as countess of Landsfeld she would influence him toward liberal and anti-Jesuit policies. Both radical and clericalist factions would become incensed at the influence she would wield.

There was a report in a [Swiss](#) newspaper that the [German](#) Christian F. Schönbein had been able to degrade ordinary [cotton](#) into a substance more explosive than gunpowder.⁷⁰ Placing a “drachm” of this substance into a gun barrel, the good Professor was able to send a ball through three inches of deal plank some 600 feet away. The newspaper presented this under the headline “Explosive Cotton — Gunpowder Superseded.” In America, the [Scientific American](#) magazine referred to this as an “article of the humbugguous class.” The report had been, unfortunately, all too accurate: a quantity of cotton so degraded had already been presented to the Basle Society of Natural History and had already been tested as a propellant for deadly globules of lead. Soon the newspaper reports would be becoming slightly more accurate, as witness this report from [The Mystery](#).⁷¹



EXPLOSIVE COTTON

Two German Philosophers have discovered a mode of preparing Cotton so as to give it all the properties of Gunpowder. The mode of preparing it is thus explained:

“In order to obtain explosive cotton, I steep it for half a minute in strongly concentrated nitric acid, which I prepare by the distillation of ten parts of dry saltpetre and six parts of the oil of vitriol. I then wash it immediately in water, renewing the water so as to get rid entirely of the acid, taking care to separate the portions which adhere too closely together. It is then dried and the process is thus completed. The effects of this preparation have astonished all who have witnessed them. The smallest quantity of this cotton placed upon an anvil, and struck with a hammer, produces an explosion equal to that of fulminating mercury. When a light is set to it, it explodes like gunpowder, and

70. After several decades of experimentation to make it more stable, guncotton would supersede black powder in many of its applications.

71. Incidentally, cotton is the sort of stuff that can be degraded into carbohydrates and sugars as well. The English might find some use for this new lead-propellant on the island of [Ireland](#), where it seemed there was a local concentration of [Irish](#), more of them than anyone really had any use for — but in this universe so exquisitely designed by God, this popular surplus would prove to be the sort of problem that can solve itself merely through inattention!



IRELAND

IRELAND

in a gun produces all the effects of gunpowder in much smaller quantities. The explosive cotton is to be used precisely the same way as gunpowder. It is made into a kind of plug, after which a wadding is introduced, as with gunpowder, and over this the ball is placed, and all are rammed down with a ramrod. The explosion of the capsule produces that of cotton."

Experiments have been made with the prepared cotton by several European governments, all of which have tested the invention satisfactorily. Two ounces of the prepared cotton are found to have as much force as three ounces of gunpowder.

Mr. Von Schmidt, of New York, also claims to have made the same discovery, and the cotton prepared by his mode, has been tested by the War Department at Washington with complete success.

The advantages of this cotton over gunpowder are: 1st. It is cheaper. 2d. It is unattended with danger in its preparation. 3d. It can be transported with more ease and safety. 4th. It is cleaner when it explodes, it leaves neither smell nor dirt behind. 5th, It is not injured by wet, after being thoroughly soaked, and dried again, it explodes as well as ever.

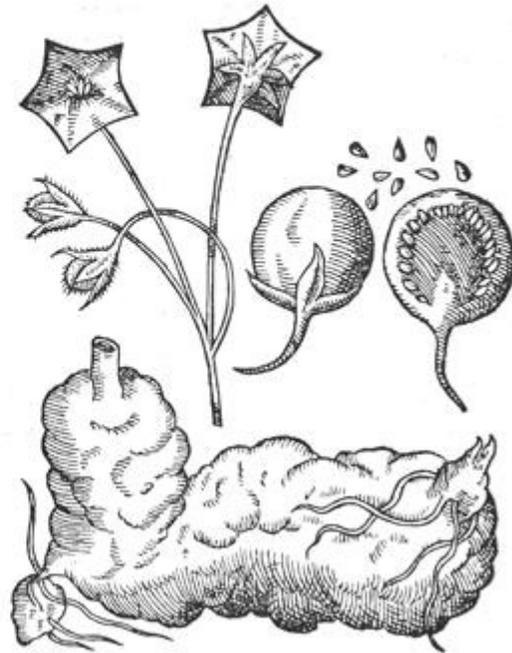
This invention will work an entire revolution in the shooting business, in a very short time.

IRELAND

IRELAND

Early October: With the [potato](#) harvesting season underway in [Ireland](#), Lord Lieutenant Lord Bessborough confessed to the Prime Minister of England

"I verily believe that by Christmas there will not be a sound potato in the country."

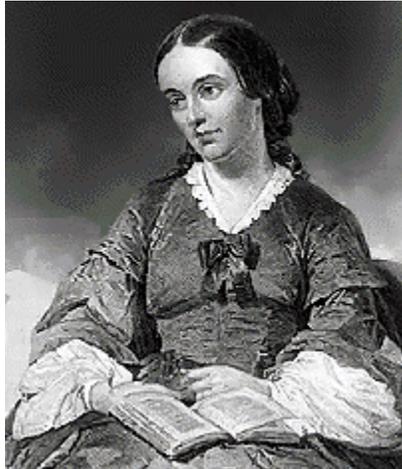


[Margaret Fuller](#) was visiting [Thomas Carlyle](#). During her stay in London she commented, evidently not at all anent the potatoes of Ireland, "I accept the universe." Carlyle made light of the comment, clearly not at all anent the potatoes of Ireland of the scarcity of which he would emphatically have approved — for it was considered bad form in the 19th Century for a **mere woman** to accept the universe, it was as distressing as the idea of a cheerleader taking on the football team since it was the masculine role to embrace, the feminine to

FEMINISM

renounce.⁷²

IRISH POTATO FAMINE



Fuller would come away from her encounter with this illuminated one with an understandable reaction: “the worst of hearing Carlyle is that you cannot interrupt him.” During her visit, the harangue which she had attempted to interrupt had been one in which [Carlyle](#) was carrying on about his pet idea that “if people would not behave well,” we ought simply to “put collars round their necks. Find a hero, and let them be his slaves.”⁷³

Public Works Enrollment

October 1846	114,000
January 1847	570,000
March 1847	750,000

Fall: The government of the United Kingdom engaged a Mr. Erichsen as its agent, to import Indian corn, Indian corn meal, Egyptian wheat, barley, and barley-meal into [Ireland](#) and Scotland. Would these food supplies prevent Irish starvation or would they prevent English guilt?

FAMINE

72. Carlyle seems to have overlooked, however, that Fuller was merely negating the thesis of Ivan in THE BROTHERS KARAMAZOV, “I do not accept the world.” Of course, it was unmanly for [Fyodor Mikhailovich Dostoevski](#) to have announced this through a male character, as unmanly as it would have been for him to have failed to have embraced a lady in distress, since it was the 19th Century gentleman’s role to seize every opportunity. We may also note that when, in Philadelphia PA in 1852 at the first Women’s Rights Convention, [Sarah Moore Grimké](#) proposed Fuller’s “Give me truth; cheat me by no illusion” as the motto of the movement,  she was proposing a motto very similar to this “I accept the universe” sentiment. Those who have incautiously repeated Carlyle’s defensive mutter seem to have neglected to notice that it is a very serious matter, in Christendom, for us to criticize an attitude of acceptance. And in particular we who are influenced by the life of Thoreau should be wary of criticizing an *amor fati*.

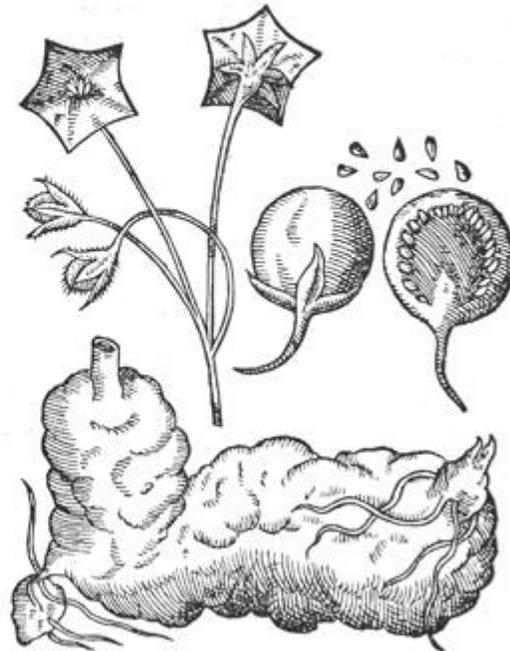
73. Compare this with the beloved “conservative” radio commentator Paul Harvey’s pet idea in our own time in our own nation, that what we ought to do with our criminals is get them off their asses and out of our prison systems by simply chaining them behind our garbage trucks.

IRELAND

IRELAND

Early October: With the [potato](#) harvesting season underway in [Ireland](#), Lord Lieutenant Lord Bessborough confessed to the Prime Minister of England

"I verily believe that by Christmas there will not be a sound potato in the country."

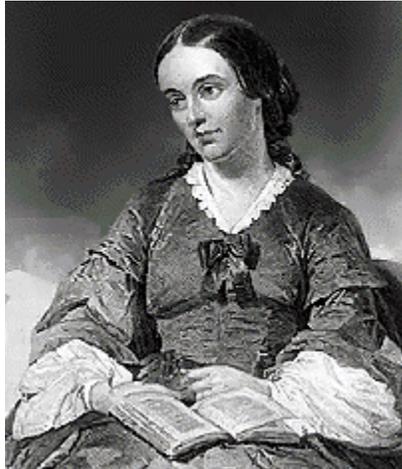


[Margaret Fuller](#) was visiting [Thomas Carlyle](#). During her stay in London she commented, evidently not at all anent the potatoes of Ireland, "I accept the universe." Carlyle made light of the comment, clearly not at all anent the potatoes of Ireland of the scarcity of which he would emphatically have approved — for it was considered bad form in the 19th Century for a **mere woman** to accept the universe, it was as distressing as the idea of a cheerleader taking on the football team since it was the masculine role to embrace, the feminine to

FEMINISM

renounce.⁷⁴

IRISH POTATO FAMINE



Fuller would come away from her encounter with this illuminated one with an understandable reaction: “the worst of hearing Carlyle is that you cannot interrupt him.” During her visit, the harangue which she had attempted to interrupt had been one in which [Carlyle](#) was carrying on about his pet idea that “if people would not behave well,” we ought simply to “put collars round their necks. Find a hero, and let them be his slaves.”⁷⁵

Public Works Enrollment

October 1846	114,000
January 1847	570,000
March 1847	750,000

November: The earliest deliveries of shiploads of Indian corn, Indian corn meal, Egyptian wheat, barley, and barley-meal were being anticipated along the coast of [Ireland](#).

FAMINE

74. Carlyle seems to have overlooked, however, that Fuller was merely negating the thesis of Ivan in THE BROTHERS KARAMAZOV, “I do not accept the world.” Of course, it was unmanly for [Fyodor Mikhailovich Dostoevski](#) to have announced this through a male character, as unmanly as it would have been for him to have failed to have embraced a lady in distress, since it was the 19th Century gentleman’s role to seize every opportunity. We may also note that when, in Philadelphia PA in 1852 at the first Women’s Rights Convention, [Sarah Moore Grimké](#) proposed Fuller’s “Give me truth; cheat me by no illusion” as the motto of the movement,  she was proposing a motto very similar to this “I accept the universe” sentiment. Those who have incautiously repeated Carlyle’s defensive mutter seem to have neglected to notice that it is a very serious matter, in Christendom, for us to criticize an attitude of acceptance. And in particular we who are influenced by the life of Thoreau should be wary of criticizing an *amor fati*.

75. Compare this with the beloved “conservative” radio commentator Paul Harvey’s pet idea in our own time in our own nation, that what we ought to do with our criminals is get them off their asses and out of our prison systems by simply chaining them behind our garbage trucks.

Winter: Prior to 1845 the average daily intake of an [Irish](#) adult during a winter had consisted of ten to twelve pounds of [potatoes](#), with buttermilk. This winter it consisted of one pound of Indian meal **or** one bowl of soup with one slice of bread — and to prove oneself worthy to receive such sustenance one needed to be performing daily hard labor.

IRISH POTATO FAMINE



Fall-Winter 1846/1847: ... The works of Landon –Coleridge –Wordsworth –contain quotable sentences –gems –in the midst of much that is dull and comparatively of little value– In Carlyle there is as little to quote as in the conversation of a vivacious and eloquent speaker– What you would quote is his vivacity.

THOMAS CARLYLE

1847

Daniel O’Connell died.

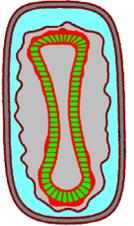
IRELAND

[William Henry Harvey](#)’s *PHYCOLOGIA BRITANNICA* (Plates 73-78) (London: Reeve & Banham). Also, his “Nereis Ausrtralis or Algae of the Southern Ocean:....” in Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy (Science) (22:525-566).

IRELAND

IRELAND

After the epidemic of the [small pox](#) in the previous year in [Boston](#) and [Concord](#), Boston took over control of Deer Island in Boston Harbor. In the early 19th Century the island had been a popular summer resort, but this episode of variola had suggested the city's need for an isolated quarantine station. Over the next three years almost 5,000 [Irish](#) ecological refugees, therefore, many of whom would have taken ill during their long voyage across the stormy Atlantic in jammed substandard vessels without adequate provisions, would be processed through this quarantine facility, and 750 of these immigrants to our land of promise who had made it this far, a full 15%, would die and be buried here on our threshold.



The reality of the famine in [Ireland](#) was described to US readers, as “The Starvation in Ireland” appeared in the New-York [Evening Post](#).



IRISH POTATO FAMINE

[William Dicks](#) began to provide illustrations for popular publications such as Henry Noel Humphreys's THE POET'S PLEASANCE and Simms & M'Intyre's PARLOUR LIBRARY (until 1862).



IRISH POTATO FAMINE



IRELAND

IRELAND

January 14, Wednesday: On the question of war taxes during the war on Mexico, William Wells Brown said that since the government would be taking the money by coercion, the individual taxpayer would not be blameworthy for the evil that would be done with the tax moneys. He would come to advocate that, if the government were to make a move to begin to conscript American blacks to fight in this war against Mexico, that seeing as how Mexico had outlawed [slavery](#) — that American blacks should, like the San Patricios, “fight against the United States.”

[WAR ON MEXICO](#)

Who were these “San Patricios”? — As Robert Ryal Miller’s *SWORD AND SHAMROCK* makes clear, many so-called San Patricios were [Irish](#) deserters from the US Army, most deserting because of ill treatment and from sympathy with the Mexicans as fellow [Catholics](#). This would lead to some problems after the war in punishing the men. Those who had deserted from the army after declaration of the war upon Mexico would be [hanged](#), but those who had deserted before the declaration of war would often merely be flogged and have their cheek branded with a “D.” (On the other hand, actually the bulk of the San Patricios were Mexican nationals, as this group included men of German, English, and Irish extraction who were living in Mexico.)

January 15, Thursday: Reports were coming in that there were people along the coast of [Ireland](#) who were attempting to subsist upon seaweed, and were unable to obtain even this sort of nourishment every day. There were also reports that people had consumed even the seeds and tubers which had been laid aside for the next year’s crops. But the British government was concerned that, were it to purchase any more Indian corn on the open market, this would again elevate the prices of foodstuffs. This was the height of the die-off of the Irish population, peaking in March.

[IRISH POTATO FAMINE](#)

Public Works Enrollment

October 1846	114,000
January 1847	570,000
March 1847	750,000



March: In Scientific American magazine there appeared a report of a new product that “promises to be more useful and acceptable, at least to ladies.” This “Essence of Coffee” was put up in bottles at a low price.⁷⁶

You have only to put a tea-spoon full into a cup of water containing the usual complement of sugar and milk, and you have a cup of superior coffee without further trouble.

This was an era in which physicians, generally, were disapproving of [coffee](#) as unhealthful.

Meanwhile, in [Ireland](#), the starving were being put to hard labor. Swing a pick-ax all day, and then we’ll give you a bowl of something to fill your stomach with:

Public Works Enrollment

October 1846	114,000
January 1847	570,000
March 1847	750,000

(During the famine it was common to see people with their limbs appearing as plump as sausages. This was famine oedema, an accumulation of fluid in the lymphatic system while the body’s tissues were consuming themselves. The condition was termed, by those who understood its true nature and outcome, “the ripening for the grave.” [Elihu Burritt](#) saw laborers who were at work on the roads in order to obtain the public dole, with their limbs “swollen to almost twice their usual size.” These parents would have literally been working themselves to death in exchange for something to give their children. He attempted in a pamphlet *FOUR MONTHS IN SKIBBEREEN* to induce residents of the United States to concern themselves in regard to this famine in Ireland.)

76. Since the turn of the century American consumption of [coffee](#) had increased by some 500%. At this point, while this new commodity, instant coffee, was appearing, the die-off of the [Irish](#) population was reaching its peak, while reports were coming out of that island of dogs wandering the streets of its towns, consuming the flesh of the uncollected dead:

IRISH POTATO FAMINE

[N]othing of life was seen or heard, excepting occasionally a dog. These looked so unlike all others I had seen among the poor – I unwittingly said – “How can the dogs look so fat and shining here, where there is no food for the people?” “Shall I tell her?” said the pilot to Mr Griffith, not supposing that I heard him. That was enough.

April: Continued high mortality in [Ireland](#).



May: There was continued high mortality in [Ireland](#). The last of the ships carrying supplies of Indian corn, Indian corn meal, Egyptian wheat, barley, and barley-meal were off-loading their cargo along the coastline. Because of the fact that:

It is useless to disguise the truth that any great improvement in the social system of Ireland must be founded upon an extensive change in the present state of agrarian occupation, and that this change necessarily implies a long, continued and systematic ejection of small holders and of squatting cottiers.

the trend among the “improving” absentee landlords had become to hire gangs of thugs who would evict small tenants and tear the roofs from their cottages to make certain they could not come back:

Families Evicted

Year	Families
1847	6,026
1848	9,657
1849	16,686
1850	19,949
1851	13,197



IRISH POTATO FAMINE



IRELAND

IRELAND

Summer: The [Irish](#) refugees while in transit were sleeping on bunks which were six foot square, made of bare planking. They had to sleep four to the bunk, each adult being allocated 18 inches of the width. Children, traveling at half fare, slept eight to the bunk. Under such circumstances, without the opportunity to bathe, with only minimal sustenance, shipboard disease was spreading rapidly. At Grosse Isle, the quarantine station for the port of Québec, immigrants were dying of ship's fever at the rate of 50 per day, much too fast for individual graves to be contemplated, and, over the course of the summer, at Staten Island, the quarantine station for New-York harbor, some 2,000 interments would need to be arranged.⁷⁷ It is estimated that in this year's transportation one out of every five Irish emigrants to Canada died in transit.⁷⁸ For some reason, the children did not die at quite the same rate as the adults — there would be many orphans available for “adoption.”

At this late point, soup kitchens began to open in [Ireland](#).

FAMINE

77. The [Irish](#) refugees appeared to Americans to be poor. However, since passage to Québec port cost at least £3 and passage to Boston port or New-York port at least £4, these were not the poorest of the poor. Some of the poorest of the poor were committing crimes and offering themselves up in the hope that as criminals they would be transported free to Australia. In Ireland, the fatality rate for [typhoid fever](#) was currently two of every three of those infected — and no-one had any good way to prevent becoming infected.

78. Black slaves from Africa would warrant more direct **economic** consideration than these [Irish](#) famine refugees, because black slaves would have been worth money if delivered alive and not if delivered dead — but this transportation arrangement had been so structured, by way of payment in advance, that there was no **financial** incentive to the shipowner or the shipmaster, but only some supposed “humanitarian” incentive, to ensure that such passengers remained still alive at their point of debarkation.



THE MASS GRAVES OF IRELAND, BY COUNTY

Donegal⁷⁹

- Carndonagh
- Dunfanaghy
- Milford
- Letterkenny
- Stranorlar
- Glenties
- Donegal
- Ballyshannon

Derry

- Coleraine
- Limavady
- Derry
- Magherafelt

Antrim⁸⁰

- Lisburn
- Ballycastle
- Ballymoney
- Ballymena
- Larne
- Antrim
- Belfast (2 sites of mass graves)

Down⁸¹

- Newtownards
- Banbridge
- Downpatrick
- Newry
- Kilkeel

Tyrone⁸²

- Strabane
- Gortin
- Castleterragh
- Cookstown
- Clogher
- Dungannon
- Omagh

Armagh⁸³

- Lurgan
- Armagh

79. This county was held under control by the English excise steamer *Comet*.

80. This county was held under control by the 3rd and 74th English Regiments.

81. This county was held under control by the 48th and 1st English Regiments.

82. This county was held under control by the 92nd English Regiment.

83. This county was held under control by the 49th English Regiment and 6th English Dragoons.



IRELAND

IRELAND

Louth⁸⁴

- Ardee
- Drogheda
- Dundalk

Monaghan⁸⁵

- Monaghan
- Clones
- Castleblaney
- Carrickmacross

Cavan

- Bawnboy
- Cootehill
- Cavan
- Bailieborough

Fermanagh⁸⁶

- Lowtherstown
- Enniskillen
- Lisnaskea

Leitrim

- Manorhamilton
- Mohill

Sligo⁸⁷

- Sligo
- Dromore West
- Tubbercurry

Meath⁸⁸

- Kells
- Navan
- Dunshaughlin
- Trim
- Oldcastle

Dublin⁸⁹

- Balrothery
- North Dublin
- South Dublin
- Rathdown

Wicklow⁹⁰

84. This county was held under control by the 17th English Lancers.

85. This county was held under control by the 57th English Regiment.

86. This county was held under control by the 48th English Regiment.

87. This county was held under control by the 69th English Regiment.

88. This county was held under control by the 52nd English Regiment.

89. This county was held under control by the English warship *Medusa*. In addition, these British units escorted food shipment through the Royal and Grand Canals to Dublin during the famine, for export:

2nd, 3rd, 13th and 60th English Regiment

13th English Dragoons

90. This county was held under control by the 71st English Regiment.



IRELAND

IRELAND

- Baltinglass
- Rathdrum
- Shillelagh

Wexford⁹¹

- Gorey
- Enniscorthy
- New Ross
- Wexford

Longford⁹²

- Granard
- Longford
- Ballymahon

Westmeath⁹³

- Castletown
- Delvin
- Mullingar
- Athlone

Kildare⁹⁴

- Celbridge
- Naas
- Athy

Offaly⁹⁵

- Tullamore
- Edenderry
- Birr

Laois⁹⁶

- Mountmellick
- Mountrath
- Abbyleix

Kilkenny⁹⁷

- Castlecomer
- Urlingford
- Kilkenny
- Thomastown
- Callan

Waterford⁹⁸

- Waterford
- Kilmacthomas
- Lismore

91. This county was held under control by the Coast Guard.

92. This county was held under control by the 13th English Dragoons and the 6th English Cavalry.

93. This county was held under control by the 2nd and 37th English Regiments, and the 7th English Hussars.

94. This county was held under control by the 2nd and 6th English Cavalry and the 3rd English Regiment.

95. This county was held under control by the 55th, 85th, and 13th English Regiments.

96. This county was held under control by the 47th English Regiment.

97. This county was held under control by the 64th, 83rd, and 75th English Regiment.

98. This county was held under control by the 47th and 67th English Regiments and the English warship *Dragon*.



IRELAND

IRELAND

- Dungarvan

Carlow⁹⁹

- Carlow

Cork¹⁰⁰

- Mitchelstown
- Kanturk
- Fermoy
- Mallow
- Milstreet
- North Cork
- Middleton
- Youghal
- Cork
- Macroom
- Dunmanway
- Bandon
- Kinsale
- Bantry
- Clonakilty
- Skibbereen
- Schull
- Castletown-Berehaven

Kerry¹⁰¹

- Listowel
- Tralee
- Killarney
- Dingle
- Caherciveen
- Kenmare

Tipperary¹⁰²

- Borrisokane
- Roscrea
- Nenagh
- Thurles
- Cashel
- Tipperary
- Clonmel
- Carrick-on-Suir
- Clogheen

Limerick¹⁰³

- Limerick
- Rathkeale

99. This county was held under control by the 64th English Regiment.

100. This county was held under control by the 6th, 26th, 67th, and 70th English Regiment, the 12th English Lancers, the 8th English Dragoons, the English excise steamer *Warrior*, and the English warship *Merlin*.

101. This county was held under control by the 1st and 8th English Dragoons.

102. This county was held under control by the 43rd, 59th, and 72nd English Regiments and the 8th English Hussars.

103. This county was held under control by the 55th, 59th, 64th, and 92nd English Regiments.



IRELAND

IRELAND

- Glin
- Croom
- Newcastle
- Kilmallock

Clare¹⁰⁴

- Ballyvaughan
- Ennistymon
- Corofin
- Scariff
- Tulla
- Ennis
- Kildysart
- Kilrush

Roscommon¹⁰⁵

- Boyle
- Carrick-on-Shannon
- Castlerea
- Strokestown
- Roscommon

Galway¹⁰⁶

- Glennamaddy
- Tuam
- Mount Bellew
- Ballinasloe
- Galway
- Loughrea
- Portumna
- Gort
- Clifden
- Oughterard

Mayo¹⁰⁷

- Ballycastle
- Bellmullet
- Ballina
- Newport
- Swinford
- Castlebar
- Westport
- Louisburgh
- Claremorris
- Ballinrobe

104. This county was held under control by the 41st, 73rd, and 47th English Regiments, the English warship *Dee*, and the coast guard.

105. This county was held under control by the 75th English Regiment.

106. This county was held under control by the 49th, 41st, 63rd, and 40th English Regiments.

107. This county was held under control by the 49th and 69th English Regiments, the 18th and 7th English Hussars, the English excise steamer *Eliza*, and the English warship *Stromboli*.

September 12, Sunday: Not all the refugees of the [Irish Potato Famine](#) had proved willing to put up with the constant abuse they encountered in the United States of America. Some of the recent immigrants who had needed to enlist as cannon fodder in the US Army in order to survive had decided to make common cause with the Mexicans after the US Army got into Mexico. The unit of the Mexican army that had been formed largely out of these “deserters” had become known as the “San Patricios” (St. Patrick’s) because their leader was an Irishman. Such volunteers had been specially hunted down by the US forces and on this day, simultaneous with the raising of the US flag above the captured castle nearby, the US Army [hanged](#) 30 of these prisoners of war.¹⁰⁸



(In a ceremony on September 12, 1997, Mexico would honor these volunteers on the 150th anniversary of their execution.)



108. Contrary to myth, not all the prisoners of war [hanged](#) in a row by the US Army on this day were Irish. Also, this fails to qualify as the [largest simultaneous execution](#) in United States history, because on the day after Christmas in 1862 President Abraham Lincoln would have 38 native Americans [simultaneously executed](#) at a similar military ceremony in Mankato, Minnesota.

Fall: In [Ireland](#), the prospects for an 1847 [potato](#) harvest had appeared good, despite the continuing presence of some “soot” on the leaves.



However, the number of acres not planted, and the continuing presence of the blight, would mean a rather small dig that October.

FAMINE

Acreage in Potatoes

Year	Acres
1845	>2,000,000
1846	>1,000,000
1847	300,000
1848	700,000

At this point the Relief Commissioners began to predict that neither home potatoes nor the wages needed to procure other sustenance were going to be available during the coming winter. Later on, –although we don’t know precisely how many people starved to death or, weakened by starvation, succumbed to diarrhea and fever or to [cholera](#) in [Ireland](#) during the period– we would be able to calculate that the first great die-off had occurred during the winter of 1846-1847. A table prepared after the fact by the Census Commissioners, presented here, in all probability under-estimates the mortality because of the manner in which they collected data: for a family

all of whose members succumbed zero deaths would be tabulated.





Of the total number of deaths, which would be between 500,000 and 1,500,000, the percentage of that total which would occur in each year probably worked out to something like this:

Mortality, expressed as %ages of the 1841 Population

Year	%
1842	5.1%
1843	5.2%
1844	5.6%
1845	6.4%
1846	9.1%
1847	18.5%
1848	15.4%
1849	17.9%
1850	12.2%

The figures shown for 1849 are the result of a [cholera](#) epidemic in Connacht, Leinster, and Munster, as well as of the general starvation.



One of the most important and highly regarded charitable organizations was the Society of Friends, or Quakers. They first became involved in the Irish Famine relief in November 1846, when some Dublin-based members of the Society decided to establish a Central Relief Committee. The Quakers had a long tradition of philanthropic activity and were well regarded for their avoidance of proselytism. Although the Quakers were numerically small in Ireland, their numbers did include a relatively high proportion of successful businessmen. They also had the support of co-religionists throughout the world. Initially, the role of the Central Relief Committee was to be mainly advisory, as they believed that it was important for accurate information to be provided by disinterested experts. They intended that any assistance which they gave was to be merely supplementary to other relief. However, in the early months of 1847, the relief provided by the Society of Friends often proved crucial in keeping people alive, as other systems of relief failed in this basic purpose. This was particularly so during the vacuum in relief provision following the closure of public works in some areas.

At the end of November 1846, two Englishmen, James H. Tuke and William Forster, with the assistance of local Quakers, commenced a tour of the most distressed parts of Ireland. During the course of this journey, they visited counties Roscommon, Leitrim, Fermanagh, Donegal, Sligo, Mayo, Galway, Longford and Cavan. The Quakers admitted that their extensive experience in working with distressed people in England had not prepared them for what they



saw in Ireland. They reported to the Central Relief Committee that they were appalled by the scenes which they witnessed and had never encountered such suffering before. Tuke was driven to record: "the scenes of poverty and wretchedness are almost beyond belief ... notwithstanding all my experience derived from my years service in the Poor Law Commission, three of which were spent in Yorkshire and Lancashire during the extremity of distress there."

A number of Quakers criticised the relief policies of the government, holding them to be inadequate and misjudged. As the Quakers who were touring the west of Ireland quickly realised, the distress was often most severe in the areas where the administrative machinery for the distribution of relief was most limited. They believed that absentee or irresponsible landlords were to a large extent responsible for this. Consequently, although the Quakers identified the most severe distress as existing in the province of Connacht, the amount of relief which they provided was restricted because of the absence of an interested middle and landlord class in some places through which to channel this assistance. Joseph Bewley, the Secretary of the Society of Friends, realised that government policies meant that the relief taxes were heaviest in the districts which were least able to afford them. He judged these policies to be short-sighted and incapable of bringing any long-term benefit to the people of Ireland. During his visit to Co. Donegal, Tuke was delayed for weeks by heavy snowstorms. He realised the implications that this had for people who were employed on the public works: bad weather reduced the amount of money which could be earned. Also, the effort to remain warm and dry -- through the wearing of warm clothes or the lighting of a small fire-- proved an additional drain on the limited resources of the people. Those who attempted to continue working during the bad weather invariably increased their propensity to fall ill. Apart from the relief provisions, Tuke was also critical of the social structures within Ireland. He regarded the abject poverty and wretchedness of the small farmers and cottiers as not being surpassed even in the "most barbarous nations." Tuke saved his most severe criticisms for the role played by absentee landlords, particularly those who, although they owned large estates, had not "subscribed one farthing" to help alleviate the suffering of their tenants.

The main form of relief provided by the Quakers in 1848 was the distribution of seed, primarily on behalf of the government. The Relief Commissioners had a supply of seed but the government would not permit them to become involved in the direct sale of it. Instead they requested the Quakers to distribute it in the most impoverished districts in Ireland. The Quakers agreed, as they felt that this would be of permanent benefit to the country. In total, they distributed nearly 200,000 lbs of seed which was estimated to result in the cultivation of approximately 800 acres of green crops. The vast majority of the seeds were turnip, although carrot, parsnip and cabbage seeds were also distributed....

The Society of Friends had undertaken to import supplies of food mostly from America into Ireland in 1847. Even before it



arrived, it was obvious to Tuke and Forster that in many areas more extensive and immediate assistance was required than that envisaged by their colleagues in Dublin. In each of the areas which they visited, Tuke and Forster distributed both food and cash. Although the Quakers had intended that their provisions should be sold at cost price, they realised that if they adhered to this, it would still be beyond the means of the most distressed people. Increasingly, the relief provided by the Quakers in the field was given gratuitously even though in doing so they offended both the central committee in Dublin and the Treasury. As far as possible, the Quakers worked through the local relief committees or local gentry or clergy. Money was not to be provided directly to the destitute people. The money which they provided was frequently used for the establishment of a soup kitchen, the purchase of seed, or the provision of local employment. In Dunfanaghy, for example, money was given to the local minister for the purchase of boilers for a soup kitchen and the purchase of materials for the local women to knit Guernsey shirts.

Apart from food and cash, the Quakers donated clothes and bedding. They also imported boilers for soup kitchens, being one of the first organizations to favour the use of soup kitchens as a means of providing large-scale relief. This was approved by the government, which disliked giving either money or uncooked food. The government, who regarded the involvement of the Quakers as very valuable, paid the freight and warehouse charges of all goods imported by the Quakers and waived all port duties. Most of the food was imported directly into the area where it was to be distributed. It included Indian meal, flour, rice, biscuits, peas, Scotch barley, American beef and tapioca. During 1846 and 1847, the Quakers provided approximately £200,000 for the relief of distress in Ireland, which was spent almost exclusively in the west of the country. The following statistics which refer to Co. Donegal provide an insight into the assistance afforded by the Quakers:

Quaker Relief in Co. Donegal

Estimated number of grants:	266
Number of boilers:	19
Quantity of food, in tons:	400
Value of food and boilers:	£6,659 0s 0d
Amount of money grants:	£1,429 5s 9d
Total Value	£8,088 5s 9d

During the summer of 1847, as the Temporary Relief Act was implemented, the Quakers began to wind down their operations with a view to ending them totally when the extended Poor Law became operative in the autumn. Instead, they decided only to provide relief which would contribute to developing the industries and resources of the country. However, in the winter



IRELAND

IRELAND

of 1847-8, the government asked them if they would consider again becoming involved in the provision of relief, particularly in the re-establishment of soup kitchens. The Quakers were reluctant to do so. As one official explained, providing this form of relief would be similar to "giving the criminal a long day." They believed that it was better if they used their energies to contribute to the long-term improvement of Ireland and leave the provision of immediate relief to the government. In 1849, Trevelyan, at the request of the government, offered the Quakers £100 if they would provide direct relief as they had previously done, but again they refused.

October: The [Irish potato](#) harvest was generally healthy and, in many counties, the blight made no appearance at all. However, due to the [famine](#) die-off, in the hardest hit districts it had simply been impossible to plant or cultivate any significant crops, which meant that the yield was low, food prices remained high, and those in low-paying jobs were entirely unable to feed themselves:

Acreage in Potatoes

Year	Acres
1845	>2,000,000
1846	>1,000,000
1847	300,000
1848	700,000



SPROUTING POTATOES AND BIRTH DEFECTS

I have been studying the [Irish potato](#) famine of the 1840s, and as part of my background for this investigation I have consulted a technical treatise on the general family of plants which includes the potato, D'Arcy, William G. (ed.), SOLANACEAE: BIOLOGY AND SYSTEMATICS (NY: Columbia UP). This technical treatise was published in 1986, all of a decade ago, and yet it is the most recent book-length treatment which I have been able to locate. I have picked up some really quite startling observations from this tome, about dangers in a potato diet, which I would like to check out with someone on this list. I have seen the potato famine in Ireland linked to monoculture and to class and national antagonisms, and I have seen it linked to various epidemics which followed the starvation. I have not, however, seen it linked to birth defects in the manner depicted in this technical treatise. Here are some of the factoids which I have picked up in this reading, in their technical complexity:

- European selection of potato and tomato cultivars for lessened bitterness during the 16th-19th Centuries may have resulted in greater vulnerability to infection by the *Phytophthora infestans* microorganism (the “late blight” or “murrain” of the famine era). Native potatoes and wild tomatoes possess much higher levels of bitter phytoalexin alkaloid and tend to be much more resistant to infection. However, among the infection organisms, *Phytophthora* in particular seems to have evolved a way in which to slip past the poisonous potato and tomato steroidal alkaloids which are otherwise effective in protecting these plants against many other varieties of microorganisms. Therefore we should be somewhat skeptical of the popular stories which have it that certain parochial Europeans were simply being foolish in the 16th Century, when they resisted the introduction of potatoes and tomatoes to their diet – as potatoes then and tomatoes then may have been substantially more bitter and substantially more hyperallergenic than the potatoes and tomatoes we enjoy nowadays. One of our attempts to breed a less vulnerable potato, the “Lenape,” has had to be withdrawn from the market because it proved to be far too toxic to humans.
- There has been a substantial correlation between the very serious *spina bifida* and *anencephaly* birth defects in the British Isles in this century, and years in which potato blight has been a problem. In fact, were the potato to be introduced today as a new and novel food crop, the source points out, it would need to be subjected to a long and careful period of evaluation by our Food and Drug Administration before being approved for general use as a dietary supplement.
- After a year in which people have been reduced to eating deteriorated potatoes, the charts show that there is ordinarily a year in which significant numbers of human infants are stillborn, or born deformed. The suspicion is that this is caused by an accumulation of solanidine in the mother’s liver, and the liberation and transfer of this chemical to her fetus during the 3rd or 4th week of gestation while the fetus’s neural tube is in the process of closing.
- The concentrations of this dangerous alkaloid, solanidine, are highest in the spring after winter storage of the potato crop, and highest in the vicinity of the potato’s eyes while it is sprouting. It seems to function in the potato as a natural insecticide to protect the young leaves. It has been noticed that stored potatoes which have been infected by the late blight *Phytophthora infestans* microorganism begin to sprout earlier in the spring than uninfected potatoes. After a blight year, in the late spring just at the point at which the food need of poor farm people is highest and the last of the old stored potatoes are about to be replaced by the first of the tiny new potatoes, the risk of generating deformed babies reaches its peak.
- Therefore in this literature it is strongly recommended that girls, and women who are not yet out of their reproductive years, should never nowadays (except I suppose of course again under conditions of absolute starvation) consume old potatoes from which they have had to rub off the sprouts with their hands.
- Such toxic alkaloid compounds are not removed by boiling, and in fact seem to be concentrated by a cooking process involving oil and high heat. Also, therefore, females should never ingest such



IRELAND

IRELAND

preprepared foods as “fish and chips,” the source recommends, for such commercially prepared potatoes may have been purchased by a corporation for bulk processing because they were cheap, low-grade “old crop” potatoes which had begun to sprout: their sprouts would be automatically knocked off by the peeling machinery! (As an American rather than a Brit, I wonder whether this source’s recommendation against any consumption of fish and chips by those human females who might without their knowledge be in an early stage of pregnancy might not also extend to our own ubiquitous “burger and fries.”)

- Tests using golden hamsters suggest that infant deformation may be minimized by ensuring that every woman or girl who might become pregnant receives constant elevated levels of vitamin C – perhaps because the C vitamin has a tendency to clear these toxic accumulations of solanine from the liver. REFERENCE: J.H. Renwick’s “Our Ascorbate Defense Against the Solanaceae,” pages 567-76 in D’Arcy, William G. (ed.), SOLANACEAE: BIOLOGY AND SYSTEMATICS (NY: Columbia UP, 1986).

So, has anyone ever seen literature in which the potato famine of the 1840s in Ireland, in addition to being linked to the epidemics which followed among the weakened and impoverished, was also linked to a spasm of birth defects?

Note that we are dealing here with both nutritional deficiency and chemical poisoning. It may be that potatoes are deficient in choline, or at least that has been suggested. The deficiency of Indian corn, maize, in the amino lysine is well known. And it is known that the standard diet of Ireland in the years before the famine was ten to twelve pounds of potatoes per day per person, eaten often with buttermilk and not supplemented by a whole lot of other foodstuffs – one simply wouldn’t be able to consume ten to twelve pounds of potatoes per day if one were eating in addition any quantities of any other foodstuff. Nutritional insufficiencies operate in quite a different manner from chemical poisons. One is an insufficiency of a chemical, the other an excess of a chemical. Fetuses generally feed first, that is, in cases of nutritional insufficiency it is generally the pregnant woman who is impacted before her fetus. This *spina bifida* and *anencephaly* however, by way of contrast, being the result of a specific toxin which has a specific effect on a specific vulnerable new tissue growth, that is to say, the initial closure of the new neural tube, is one which shows up in the stillborn or live birth by an apparently healthy mother.

Winter: [Henry Thoreau](#) watched the ice-cutters, mostly [Irish](#), on Walden Pond.

The weather along the west coast of [Ireland](#) this winter was characterized as “one continuous storm.” The poorly nourished fishermen, due to [famine](#) weakness, were in general unable to row their frail *currachs* through the breakers so as to fish offshore, although some, driven by desperation, drowned while attempting such maneuvers.

Some of the visitors to the cloisters of Westminster Abbey were not of the usual kind, but were instead naturalists. They were coming to inspect a large collection of madrepores and sea sponges kept in seawater inside glass cases in the drawing-room of Ashburnham House. This constituted the 1st marine aquarium in England. The exhibit had been created by Anna Thynne, the wife of the Reverend Lord John Thynne, Sub-Dean of the Abbey. This lady’s housemaid (possibly, but of course not necessarily, an impoverished [Irish](#) woman refugee of the great [famine](#)) would need to spend 30 to 45 minutes each day pouring six gallons of salt water backward and forward before an open window, in order to keep it fresh. (The result would become a mania of the 1850s.)

Having given up his dental practice in Connecticut, apparently after a fatality, [Dr. Horace Wells](#) relocated to New-York and became addicted to [chloroform](#).



DENTISTRY

1848

Hugh Strickland's *THE DODO AND ITS KINDRED; OR, THE HISTORY, AFFINITIES, AND OSTEOLOGY OF THE DODO, SOLITAIRE, AND OTHER EXTINCT BIRDS OF THE ISLANDS MAURITIUS, RODRIGUEZ, AND BOURBON* (London: Reeve, Benham, and Reeve). There would be an anonymous review of this book in the January 1849 issue of *Blackwood's Edinburgh Magazine*, which [Henry Thoreau](#) would read and comment upon in his journal.

THE DODO AND ITS KINDRED

Frederick William Van Amringe's *AN INVESTIGATION OF THE THEORIES OF THE NATURAL HISTORY OF MAN, BY [WILLIAM] LAWRENCE, [JAMES COWLES] PRICHARD, AND OTHERS, FOUNDED UPON ANIMAL ANALOGIES: AND AN OUTLINE OF A NEW NATURAL HISTORY OF MAN, FOUNDED UPON HISTORY, ANATOMY, PHYSIOLOGY, AND HUMAN ANALOGIES* was published in New-York by Baker & Scribner. Because it signaled an unfortunate shift in scientific opinion in regard to race it would be enthusiastically reviewed at length in [The United States Magazine and Democratic Review](#) in 1850. The burden of this treatise of scientific racism was that, if the scientist fairly divides the human species into the four distinctive groups of the white, the yellow, the red, and the black races, and inquire into their histories, and on the basis of their histories into their relative prospects for progress beyond their current social and intellectual condition, he can reach only the "melancholy" conclusion that "the dark races are doomed to extinction by the gradual increase of the white race, by a progress similar to that which is now fast extinguishing the aborigines of North America." Did [Thoreau](#) read this paper in 1848 or 1849, or something like it, or the article in the [Democratic Review](#) in 1850 (26 n.s.:327-45, quotation from page 338) and is this what accounts for his alarming remark in his *JOURNAL*, Volume X, page 52 (1857?), that "The fact is, the history of the white man is a history of improvement, that of the red man a history of fixed habits of stagnation"?

Or, was it some other of the many, many manifestations of scientific racism that filled the literature of the era? For instance, here is an illustration from *HARPER'S WEEKLY: A JOURNAL OF CIVILIZATION*, designed to show that the "Irish Iberian" and the "Negro" were very similar to one another and utterly different from the "Anglo-Teutonic" — which was destined to triumph:



IRISH IBERIAN



ANGLO-TEUTONIC



NEGRO



According to Noel Ignatiev's **HOW THE IRISH BECAME WHITE**, "To be acknowledged as white, it was not enough for the Irish to have a competitive advantage over Afro-Americans in the labor market; in order for them to avoid the taint of blackness it was necessary that no Negro be allowed to work in occupations where Irish were to be found."



IRISH PHYSIOGNOMY.

According to the jokes that were going the rounds in those days among non-Irish white racists (the bulk of the population, actually), the Irish were "Negroes turned inside out" while the American free blacks were "smoked Irish."

It has been well said, that inside the charmed Caucasian chalk circle it is the sum of what you are not -not Indian, not Negro, not a Jew, not Irish, etc.- that make you what you are. And, that's as true now as it was then.

Ungrateful [Irish](#) laborers in Holyoke went on strike when the amount paid for canal labor was reduced from 75¢ to 70¢ daily. This wasn't personal -it was merely business- and nevertheless their attitude became "Dam gone to Hell by way of Willimansett."

In [Ireland](#), the "Young Ireland Rebellion." After the "Battle of Widow MacCormack's cabbage patch," Stephens fled to France.

In 1821 the New York State Constitutional Convention had required potential male voters of African origin to be freeholders worth \$250, a requirement that was not placed upon any other block of potential voters and a requirement that effectively had disenfranchised all or virtually all black New Yorkers. This racial discrimination between voters would not be brought to an end until 1870, because it so well served the purposes of Tammany Hall. For instance, in this year 1848, the 6th Ward, which was "the very citadel of Tammany," largely [Irish](#), produced the largest anti-Negro vote. (There's a factoid that most unfortunately must be pointed out in this connection: this phenomenon of scorn for the black citizen was very prominently an "Irish thing." Most of the voters in this heavily pro-Tammany area of the city were recent immigrants, and virtually without exception the immigrant Irish were racist. If you had been Irish-American during that period, and had expressed abolitionist sympathies, you would have been subjected to nothing but endless angry confrontations from your fellow Irish-Americans. Such a violation of solidarity would never have been tolerable. To espouse such an attitude might very well have been as much as your life was worth.)



According to Noel Ignatiev's **HOW THE IRISH BECAME WHITE**, "To be acknowledged as white, it was not enough for the Irish to have a competitive advantage over Afro-Americans in the labor market; in order for them to avoid the taint of blackness it was necessary that no Negro be allowed to work in occupations where Irish were to be found."



IRISH PHYSIOGNOMY.

According to the jokes that were going the rounds in those days among non-Irish white racists (the bulk of the population, actually), the Irish were "Negroes turned inside out" while the American free blacks were "smoked Irish."

It has been well said, that inside the charmed Caucasian chalk circle it is the sum of what you are not -not Indian, not Negro, not a Jew, not Irish, etc.- that make you what you are. And, that's as true now as it was then.

[William Henry Harvey](#)'s *PHYCOLOGIA BRITANNICA* (Plates 147-216) (London: Reeve & Banham). Also, his "Directions for Collecting and Preserving Algae," in [American Journal of Science and Arts](#) (II, 6: 42-45). He was appointed Professor of Botany of the Royal Dublin Society.

To the current regulations for emigration, the British parliament added a requirement that each vessel carrying more than 100 passengers must have aboard a surgeon. This would result in advertisements offering free passage to surgeons. A requirement was stated, that the emigrants were to be inspected for infectious diseases before embarkation, and that none who could not be certified as free of such diseases might be embarked. Each vessel carrying more than 100 emigrants was required to provide a cook and a cooking place.

At this point the [Irish](#) who had emigrated to the USA aboard the horrendous "[famine](#) ships," and survived, were beginning to provide a great deal of, and an increasing amount of, assistance for their relatives on the old sod:

Low Estimates for Total Remittances to Ireland

Year	Amount
1848	£460,000
1849	£540,000
1850	£957,000
1851	£990,000

Because of the fact that:

It is useless to disguise the truth that any great improvement in the social system of Ireland must be founded upon an extensive change in the present state of agrarian occupation, and that this change necessarily implies a long, continued and systematic ejection of small holders and of squatting cottiers.

the trend among the "improving" absentee landlords of the island had become to hire gangs of thugs who would evict small tenants and tear the roofs from their cottages to make certain they could not come back:

Families Evicted

Year	Families
1847	6,026
1848	9,657
1849	16,686
1850	19,949
1851	13,197

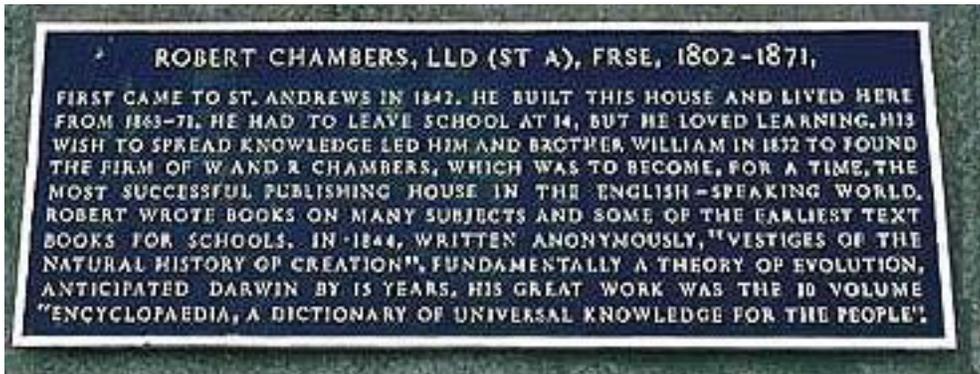


End of January: Toward the end of the month, John Mitchel broke with the Young [Irishmen](#).



February 12, Saturday: At the home of Mrs. Crowe in Edinburgh, [Waldo Emerson](#) met [Thomas De Quincey](#), who had walked ten miles through stormy weather to attend the supper and was still wet, and [Robert Chambers](#), whose anonymous 1844  [VESTIGES OF THE NATURAL HISTORY OF CREATION](#), or whose equally wrongheaded 1845  elaboration EXPLANATIONS: A SEQUEL TO “VESTIGES OF THE NATURAL HISTORY OF CREATION,” had encouraged him to be misconceiving evolution in a conventional self-congratulatory Hegelian and unDarwinian manner, as a mere progressive ascent from *volvox globator* through the animalcule savages of the waterdrop, through the ape, through the Negro, “up to the wise man of the nineteenth century,” that is, up to himself the pinnacle, the apex, the paragon, the reward.

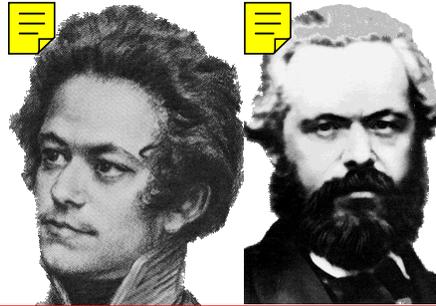
CHARLES DARWIN



Having given up not only on [The Nation](#) but also on the Irish Confederation, John Mitchel put out the first issue of his [The United Irishman](#). This newspaper would openly espouse the preparation of his countrymen for rebellion against their English overlords. Its target audience was to be “that numerous and respectable class of the community, the men of no property.” The newspaper would characterize His Excellency Lord Clarendon as “H(er) Majesty’s Executioner General and General Butcher in [Ireland](#),” and would write openly of its project to “sweep the English out of Ireland.” All this would be for a few weeks ignored by the British authorities.



February 22-24: There was a revolution in France. It had all been as easy as [Henry Thoreau](#) had indicated a few nights before,  before the Concord Lyceum: “When the subject has refused allegiance, and the officer has resigned his office, then the revolution is accomplished.” Within months more than 50 revolutions and attempted coups would break out across the Western world. This would be the period of Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels’s COMMUNIST MANIFESTO.



READ THE FULL TEXT

That 23-page pamphlet issued in London was said at the time to be by Marx and Engels but is almost certainly in its final form the work product of Marx. It would cause scarcely a ripple in this revolutionary year of 1848 and after the failure of this spasm the document would sink without a trace. In fact it would not begin to be widely studied until after 1870. I will list below some of its catchy phrases that would eventually begin to resonate with its readers (you can click on any of these lines to go directly into the full text:

A specter is haunting Europe — the specter of Communism.

The history of all hitherto existing society is the history of class struggles.

The bourgeoisie ... has left remaining no other nexus between man and man than naked self-interest, than callous “cash payment.”

What the bourgeoisie, therefore, produces, above all, are its own gravediggers.

The workingmen have no country.

We shall have an association, in which the free development of each is the condition for the free development of all.

The proletarians have nothing to lose but their chains. They have a world to win.

Modern industry has established the world market, for which the discovery of America paved the way.

The bourgeoisie has through its exploitation of the world market given a cosmopolitan character to production and consumption in every country.

In place of the old wants, satisfied by the productions of the country, we find new wants, requiring for their satisfaction the products of distant lands.

In place of the old local and national seclusion and self-sufficiency, we have ... universal inter-dependence of nations. And as in material, so also in intellectual production.



IRELAND

IRELAND

It has accomplished wonders far surpassing Egyptian pyramids, Roman aqueducts, and Gothic cathedrals; it has conducted expeditions that put in the shade all former Exoduses of nations.

Constant revolutionizing of production, uninterrupted disturbance of all social conditions, everlasting uncertainty and agitation distinguish the bourgeois epoch from all earlier ones. All fixed, fast-frozen relations ... and opinions, are swept away, all new-formed ones become antiquated before they can ossify. All that is solid melts into air, all that is holy is profaned, and man is at last compelled to face, with sober senses, his real conditions of life and his relations with his kind.



IRELAND

IRELAND

In Hungary, when news of the revolution in Paris would be received, [Lajos Kossuth](#) would seize his main chance as head of a “national opposition.”

The cities on the East Coast [of the USA], of course, were the first to respond to the news from France. In Washington, several torchlight processions were held, complete with speeches, and President [James Knox Polk](#) wrote a message to Congress declaring that “the world has seldom witnessed a more interesting spectacle than the peaceful rising of the French people, resolved to secure themselves enlarged liberty, and to assert, in the majesty of their strength, the great truth that, in this enlightened age, man is capable of governing himself.” In New York, [William Cullen Bryant](#) praised France’s new government and its “reverent recognition of human rights” while Horace Greeley rejoiced in his [Tribune](#) that “the Emancipation of Europe has begun in earnest” and accurately predicted that “the news from Paris shall thrill the hearts of Milan, of Venice, of Rome and of Naples,” stirring them to overthrow despotism.

This COMMUNIST MANIFESTO had been neither written in this month by Karl Marx nor written in London. It initially appeared in German rather than in English. The publication would motivate the Belgian government to expel its author, who would return to Paris at the invitation of the new French provisional government. From there Marx would journey to Cologne with friends to found the [Neue Rheinische Zeitung](#).

Note that this Communist Manifesto forecast the same thing happening within literature (intellectual production) as was happening within economics (material production). The old national self-sufficiency was giving way before a universalized economy of exchange of ideas:

The bourgeoisie has through its exploitation of the world market given a cosmopolitan character to production and consumption in every country. To the great chagrin of reactionaries, it has drawn from under the feet of industry the national ground on which it stood. All old-established national industries have been destroyed or are daily being destroyed. They are dislodged by new industries, whose introduction becomes a life and death question for all civilized nations, by industries that no longer work up indigenous raw material, but raw material drawn from the remotest zones; industries whose products are consumed, not only at home, but in every quarter of the globe. In place of the old wants, satisfied by the productions of the country, we find new wants, requiring for their satisfaction the products of distant lands and climes. **In place of the old local and national seclusion and self-sufficiency, we have intercourse in every direction, universal inter-dependence of nations. And as in material, so also in intellectual production. The intellectual creations of individual nations become common property. National one-sidedness and narrow-mindedness become more and more impossible, and from the numerous national and local literatures there arises a world literature.**

Karl Marx would express, in his *THE CIVIL WAR IN FRANCE, 1848-1850*, the sentiment that “The origin of states gets lost in a myth, in which one may believe, but which one may not discuss.” On the 1st page of Theodore W. Allen’s introduction to his 1st volume,¹⁰⁹ this independent scholar asks our “indulgence for only one assumption, namely, that while some people may desire to be masters, all persons are born equally unwilling and unsuited to be slaves.” I find that remark remarkable indeed! When in our [Declaration of Independence](#) we said to ourselves “All men are created equal,” we were of course writing as lawyers and in a lawyerly manner.



We were purposing to level others, such as those overweening overbred British aristocrats, down to our own lay level, but meanwhile it was no part of our purpose to level others, such as our wives and slaves, up to our own exalted situation—we were doing this to benefit ourselves at the expense of others, and not doing this for the benefit of others. What we meant back there in Philadelphia several centuries ago, by such a trope as “All men are created equal,” was “We want, 1st, to sound almost as if we were saying that while some people may desire to be masters, all persons are born equally unwilling and unsuited to be slaves, and we want, 2dly, to sound as if we were struggling to express **something** like that without actually declaring **anything** like that—because it is essential that in this new nation of ours (based as it is upon human enslavement) we avoid any such issue. Our equality here is to be founded upon the inequality of others, and this grand-sounding trope ‘All men are created equal’ is being provided so that it can function as our cover story, enabling such viciousness to proceed unhindered.” As [Edmund Burke](#) expressed on February 16, 1788 during the impeachment trial of Warren Hastings for maladministration of the British rule in [India](#), “There is a sacred veil to be drawn over the

109. Allen, Theodore W. *THE INVENTION OF THE WHITE RACE, VOLUME ONE: RACIAL OPPRESSION AND SOCIAL CONTROL*. London: Verso, 1994

beginnings of all government.”



The African Association was founded in England to explore the interior of Africa.

In the usage of the trope “peculiar institution” that is today ordinary or usual, this trope is deployed of course in oblique reference to the unmentionable crime of human chattel bondage. It is nowadays used in implicit criticism of enslavement. Not so originally! In its initial usages, to refer to slavery as “peculiar” was not to attack it but proclaim it to be defensible. “Peculiar,” in this archaic usage, indicated merely that the legitimacy of the system was based not upon any endorsement by a higher or more remote legal authority, but based instead upon the “peculiar conditions and history” of a particular district of the country and a particular society and a particular historically engendered set of customs and procedures and conventions. This trope went hand in hand with the Doctrine of States Rights, and went hand in hand with the persistence of the English common law. What Allen, however, refers to by use of this trope “peculiar institution” is, instead, the invention of the so-called “white race” which has here been used to legitimate our local version of thus unmentionable crime, our local version of a solution to the problem of social control. It is for him this biologicistic cover story, itself, which constitutes the quintessential “Peculiar Institution” we have been forced to construct. “Only by understanding what was peculiar about the Peculiar Institution can one know what is exceptionable about American Exceptionalism” (Volume I, page 1). In this he acknowledges that he is following a seed that had been planted by W.E.B. Du Bois in his BLACK RECONSTRUCTION.

Allen’s 1st volume is made up of an elaborate parallelization of the Irish and Scottish experience under English colonialism, and the American antebellum experience:

Every aspect of the Ulster Plantation policy aimed at destroying the tribal leadership and dispersing the tribe is matched by typical examples from Anglo-American colonial and United States policy toward the indigenous population, the “American Indians” – a policy we clearly recognize as racial oppression of “the red man.”

I have been looking into an Irish mirror for insights into the nature of racial oppression and its implication for ruling-class social control in the United States.

IRELAND

IRELAND

March 21, Tuesday: Subsequent to the failure of the “Young [Ireland](#)” uprising, John Mitchel was charged with treason for having published seditious articles in his [United Irishman](#), while William Smith O’Brien and future US Union general Thomas Meagher were charged with treason for having made seditious speeches at a meeting. Although treason was an offense that called for the convict to be hanged, drawn, and quartered, all three were released on bail because Her Majesty’s government simply had no intention of continuing this tradition of hanging, drawing, and quartering. The accused remained on bail while, “with the speed of an express train,” a new piece of legislation, the Treason Felony Act, was enacted by the Parliament, allowing that any person who “compassed the intimidation of the Crown or of Parliament” would be guilty of a felony punishable by transportation for 14 years to life.



Spring: The prospects for an [Irish potato](#) harvest appeared good. It ain’t over, of course, ’till it’s over, but — is it over?



Friendship has this peculiarity that it can never be talked about. It is never established –as an understood relation– Friends are never committed.

What it would say can never be expressed. All words are gossip– what has speech to do with it.

When a man approaches his friend who is thus transfigured to him, even his own hoarse salutation sounds prosaic and ridiculous and makes him least happy in *his* presence.

–It is an exercise of the purest imagination and the rarest faith– I will be so related to thee– I will spend truth on thee– the friend responds through his nature and life and treats *his* friend with the same divine civility–



There is friendship –but without confession –in silence as divine –
If the other is dull or engrossed by the things of the world and does not respond to this lofty salute –or from a lower platform –hears imperfectly– That friendship is by necessity a profound secret which can never be revealed– It is a tragedy that cannot be told. None ever knows what was meant.
There is no need that a man should confess his love of nature –and no more his love of man.– In any case what *sentence* is it indispensable should be framed and uttered Why a few sounds.
True love does not quarrel for slight reasons –such mistakes as mutual friends can explain away –but alas only for adequate & fatal & everlasting reasons, which can never be set aside.
That person is transfigured is God in the human form –henceforth– The lover asks no return but that the beloved will religiously accept & wear and not disgrace this apotheosis Whatever virtue or greatness we can conceive we ascribe to that one –of that at least his nature is capable –though he may {*leaves missing*}
Yet a fault may appear greater than it is in many ways.
I have never seen a person –who could bear criticism –who could not be flattered who would not bribe his judge.– Who would bear that truth should be loved always better than themselves ———
Mythology is ancient history or biography The oldest history still memorable becomes a mythus– It is the fruit which history at last bears– The fable so far from being false contains only the essential parts of the history–
What is today a diffuse biography –was anciently before printing was discovered – –a short & pithy tradition a century was equal to a thousand years. To day you have the story told at length with all its accompaniments In mythology you have the essential & memorable parts alone –the you & I the here & there the now & then being omitted– In how few words for instance the Greeks would have told the story of Abelard & Heloise instead of a volume They would have made a mythus of it among the fables of their gods and demigods or mortals –and then have stuck up their names to shine in some corner of the firmament– And who knows what Greeks may come again at last to mythologize their Love.– and our own deeds.
How many Vols folio must the life and labors of Prometheus have filled if perchance it fell in days of cheap printing!– What shape at length will assume the fable of Columbus –to be confounded at last with that of Jason –& the expedition of the Argonauts –and future Homers quoted as authority. And Franklin there may be a line for him in the future Classical dictionary recording what that demigod did.– & referring him to some new genealogy –
I see already the naked fables scattered up & down the history of modern –Europe– A small volume of mythology preparing in the press of time– The hero tell –with his bow –Shakspeare –the new Apollo — Cromwell –napoleon.
The most comprehensive the most pithy & significant book is the mythology
Few phenomena give me more delight in the spring of the year than to observe the forms which thawing clay and sand assume on flowing down the sides of a deep cut on the rail road through which I walk.
The clay especially assumes an infinite variety of forms–
There lie the sand and clay all winter on this shelving surface an inert mass but when the spring sun comes to thaw the ice which binds them they begin to flow down the bank like lava –
These little streams & ripples of lava like clay over flow & interlace one another like some mythological vegetation –like the forms which I seem to have seen imitated in bronze– What affects me is the presence of the law –between the inert mass and the luxuriant vegetation what interval is there? Here is an artist at work – as it were not at work but –a-playing designing – – It begins to flow & immediately it takes the forms of vines –or of the feet & claws of animals –or of the human brain or lungs or bowels– Now it is bluish clay now clay mixed with reddish sand –now pure iron sand –and sand and clay of every degree of fineness and every shade of color– The whole bank for a quarter of a mile on both sides is sometimes overlaid with a mass of plump & sappy verdure of this kind– I am startled probably because it grows so fast –it is produced in one spring day.
The lobe of these leaves –perchance of all leaves –is a thick –now loitering drop like the ball of the finger larger or smaller so perchance the fingers & toes flow to their extent from the thawing mass of the body –& then are congealed for a night.
–Whither may the sun of new spring lead them on– These roots of ours– In the mornings these resting streams start again and branch & branch again into a myriad others– Here it is coarse red sand & even pebbles –there fine adhesive clay–
–And where the flowing mass reaches the drain at the foot of the bank on either side it spreads out flatter in to sands like those formed at the mouths of rivers –the separate streams losing their semicilindrical form-and gradually growing more and more flat –and running together as it is more moist till they form an almost flat sand –variously & beautifully shaded –& in which you can still trace the forms of vegetation till at length in the water itself they become the ripple marks on the bottom
The lobes are the fingers of the leaf as many lobes as it has in so many directions it inclines to flow –more genial heat or other influences in its springs might have caused it flow farther.
–So it seemed as if this one hill side contained an epitome of all the operations in nature.
So the stream is but a leaf What is the river with all its branches –but a leaf divested of its pulp – – but its pulp

is intervening earth –forests & fields & town & cities– What is the river but a tree an oak or pine –& its leaves perchance are ponds & lakes & meadows innumerable as the springs which feed it.
 I perceive that there is the same power that made me my brain my lungs my bowels my fingers & toes working in other clay this very day– I am in the studio of an artist.
 This cut is about a quarter of a mile long –& 30 or 40 feet deep –and in several places clay occurs which rises to within a dozen feet of the surface.– Where there is sand only the slope is great & uniform –but the clay being more adhesive inclines to stand out longer from the sand as in boulders –which are continually washing & coming down.
 Flowing down it of course runs together and forms masses and conglomerations but if flowed upward it would dispersed itself more –& grow more freely –& unimpeded
 In the next 9 miles which completed the extent of the voyage for this day We rowed across several small lakes –poled up numerous rapids & thoroughfares, and carried over 4 portages– I will give the names and distances for the benefit of future tourists
 1st after leaving Ambejisjis lake –a quarter of a mile of rapids to the Portage or carry of 90 rods around Ambejisjis Falls. ———
 Than a mile & a half through Passamagamet lake, which is narrow & river like to the falls of the same name – Ambejisjis stream coming in on the right ———
 Then 2 miles through Katepskonegan lake.– to the carry of 90 rods around Katepskonegan Falls –which name signifies “carrying place” –Passamagamet stream coming in on the left ———
 Then 3 miles through Pockwockomus lake –a slight expansion of the river to the carry of 40 rods around the falls of the same name Katepskonegan stream coming in on the left ———
 The 3/4 of a mile through Aboljacarmegus lake, similar to the last to the portage of 40 rods around the fall of the same name ———
 Then 1/2 mile of rapid water to the Sowadnehunk dead water & the Aboljacknagesic stream.
 This is generally the order of names as you ascend the river &c v 81

May 13, Saturday: John Mitchel was charged under the new Treason Felony Act and taken to Dublin’s Newgate prison to await trial.

IRELAND



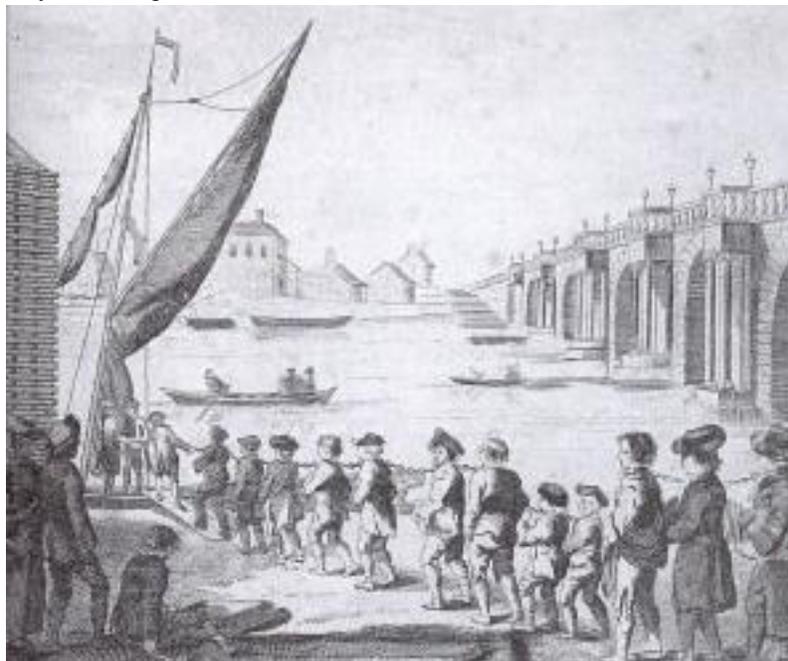
[Margaret Fuller](#) reported to the New-York [Tribune](#) from Rome:

May 13.
 Returning from a little tour in the Alban Mount, where everything looks so glorious this glorious spring, I find a temporary quiet. The Pope’s brothers have come to sympathize with him; the crowd sighs over what he has done, presents him with great bouquets of flowers, and reads anxiously the news from the north and the proclamations of the new ministry. Meanwhile the nightingales sing; every tree and plant is in flower, and the sun and moon shine as if paradise were already re-established on earth. I go to one of the villas to dream it is so, beneath the pale light of the stars.

May 25, Thursday: [Waldo Emerson](#)'s 45th birthday.



John Mitchel and his eldest son John C. Mitchel Jr. were convicted under the new Treason Felony Act and sentenced to 14 years transportation. Within the hour, as his friends rushed around the docks trying to find



some way to rescue him, he was in chains and on his way to the convict depot off the Cove of Cork (Spike Island), en route via Bermuda to what was then known as Van Diemen's Land and is now known as Tasmania.



(He expected that his sentence would provoke an insurrection, but nothing more ensued than a skirmish in County Tipperary.)

July: Farmers along the west coast of [Ireland](#) were beginning to notice blight on the leaves of their [potato](#) crop.



IRISH POTATO FAMINE

War wounded [Thomas Mayne Reid, Jr.](#) sailed back from Mexico to New-York with what remained of the 1st New York Volunteer Infantry Regiment.

WAR ON MEXICO

August: The plan of the English government, to dispense with all relief efforts for those starving in [Ireland](#) as of August 15th, needed to be postponed when the blight was again discovered on the leaves of the [potato](#) plants.



IRISH POTATO FAMINE

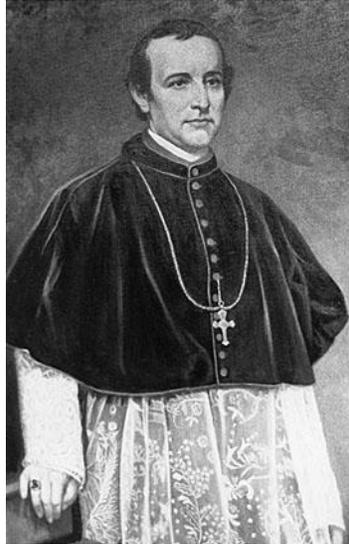
The blight was already as pervasive as it had been in August  of 1846.

Acreage in Potatoes

Year	Acres
1845	>2,000,000
1846	>1,000,000
1847	300,000
1848	700,000

“Until Ireland can be famished, it cannot be subdued.”
 – Edmund Spenser

August 14, Monday: Life gets so frustrating sometimes! The activities of those raising money to purchase arms for the “Green Armies” of [Ireland](#), to throw out the Brits, were becoming more intense. It was being predicted that within a year Ireland would have thrown off the chains which had been placed upon her by the British in 1801, in the Act of Union. At a humongous rally at Vauxhall Garden in New-York, Archbishop John Joseph Hughes, good Christian that he was, brought forward a donation of \$500.¹¹⁰ which hopefully would cause this just killing to commence.¹¹⁰



110. But this was not to be. News would shortly arrive from the auld sod, that the shadow “Green Army” of “Young Ireland” or the “IRA” had been routed by a single skirmish which had –oh the humiliation of it– occurred not on a Golgotha but in a cabbage patch.

December: **Cholera** appeared in the large **famine** workhouse at Belfast, **Ireland** and, as well, among the general population of the city. We don't know precisely how many people starved to death or, weakened by starvation,



succumbed to diarrhea and fever or to cholera during this period, and a table prepared after the fact by the Census Commissioners, presented here, in all probability under-estimates the mortality because of the manner in which they collected data: for any family all of whose members had succumbed, of course zero deaths would be tabulated. Of the total number of deaths, which would be between 500,000 and 1,500,000, the percentage which would occur in each year probably worked out to something like this:

Mortality, expressed as %ages of the 1841 Population

Year	%
1842	5.1%
1843	5.2%
1844	5.6%
1845	6.4%
1846	9.1%
1847	18.5%
1848	15.4%
1849	17.9%
1850	12.2%

(The figures shown for 1849 are the result of this outbreak of **cholera** as it spread in Connacht, Leinster,

and Munster, as well as of the general starvation.)

1849

A 2d dam was constructed at Holyoke, Massachusetts, in seven months. Meanwhile, the squalid conditions in the [Irish](#) neighborhoods of such laborers caused a [cholera](#) epidemic.



Due to the invention of the lock-stitch [sewing](#) machine in 1846, but due to an even greater extent to the exploitable starving immigrants, the clothing manufacturers of the Boston area were able to break a tailors' strike by locking out their striking employees and hiring [Irish](#). By 1860, because of this, the average productivity per laborer in Boston would rise to \$1,137.00 per year against \$798.00 in New-York, whereas the weekly wage in Boston would be merely \$4.50 to \$5.50 versus a weekly wage in New-York of between \$8.00 and \$10.00. Of course, on the downside, there were those terrible slums where the cheap labor was forced to endure constantly in close proximity to the ever-circulating [tuberculosis](#) bacillus....

During this year Walter Hunt of New-York, who had invented a [sewing](#) machine but didn't want to publicize it for fear it would take away the jobs of people who really needed work, got into debt. So he invented the first real safety pin. He immediately sold the rights for \$100 — clearly, a head for business Mr. Hunt had not.

(Karl Marx, who also had no head for business, was in this year relocating his family to London.)



The Irish who had emigrated to the USA were providing a great deal of, and an increasing amount of, assistance for their relatives on the old sod:

Low Estimates for Total Remittances to Ireland

Year	Pounds
1848	£460,000
1849	£540,000
1850	£957,000
1851	£990,000

Because of the fact that:

It is useless to disguise the truth that any great improvement in the social system of Ireland must be founded upon an extensive change in the present state of agrarian occupation, and that this change necessarily implies a long, continued and systematic ejection of small holders and of squatting cottiers.

the trend among the “improving” absentee landlords of the island had become to hire gangs of thugs who would evict small tenants and tear the roofs from their cottages to make certain they could not come back:

Families Evicted

Year	Families
1847	6,026
1848	9,657
1849	16,686
1850	19,949
1851	13,197

March: [Cholera](#) appeared in the west of [Ireland](#). The rescheduled tour by [Queen Victoria](#), originally planned for 1846 and canceled then due to the famine, would need to be confined to the east of the island. In addition, this tour was declared not to be a state visit but a private one — so the monarch would not be required to take any posture in regard to [famine](#) or epidemic.¹¹¹



111. After the assassination attempt of 1839 and the two attempts of 1842, a 4th attack would occur during this year, and then attempts would be made in 1850, 1872, and 1882. What happened in this year was that an Irishman, William Hamilton, attempted to alarm Queen Victoria by discharging a pistol loaded only with powder in the direction of her carriage as it passed between Buckingham Palace and Hyde Park. Interestingly, nobody seems to remember on what day of the year this event took place! Hamilton would be awarded the maximum punishment under the 1842 act, of seven years in a penal colony.

April: Hundreds of Conestoga wagons left Missouri for California. In the crowded conditions along the Mississippi River, cholera ran rampant.



For instance, in the 2d, and most serious, cholera epidemic to strike St. Louis, more than 4,000 died.

Unbeknownst to these people, this month would turn out to have been the peak of the cholera epidemic in Ireland. We don't know precisely how many people were starving to death or, weakened by starvation, were succumbing to diarrhea and fever or to cholera on the island during this famine period, and the table prepared after the fact by the Census Commissioners, presented below, in all probability has underestimated mortality because of the manner in which they were tabulating such data: for a family all of whose members succumbed, zero deaths would of course have been reported. Of the total number of deaths, which would be between 500,000 and 1,500,000, the percentage of that total which would had been occurring in each year probably worked out to something like this:

IRISH

Mortality, expressed as %ages of the 1841 Population

Year	%
1842	5.1%
1843	5.2%
1844	5.6%
1845	6.4%
1846	9.1%
1847	18.5%
1848	15.4%



Mortality, expressed as %ages of the 1841 Population

Year	%
1849	17.9%
1850	12.2%

This would be decimation even in the etymological sense of that term. The figures shown for 1849 are the result not only of the general starvation but also of this outbreak of [cholera](#) as it spread in Connacht, Leinster, and Munster.

April 13, Friday: [Ellen Fuller Channing](#) gave birth to Walter Channing in their home on Main Street opposite the Thoreaus. They were living on an income of about \$400.⁰⁰ a year, most of it from proud grandpa [Dr. Walter Channing](#) — yet wages for domestics were so reasonable that they were able to utilize an [Irish](#) woman, Margaret.

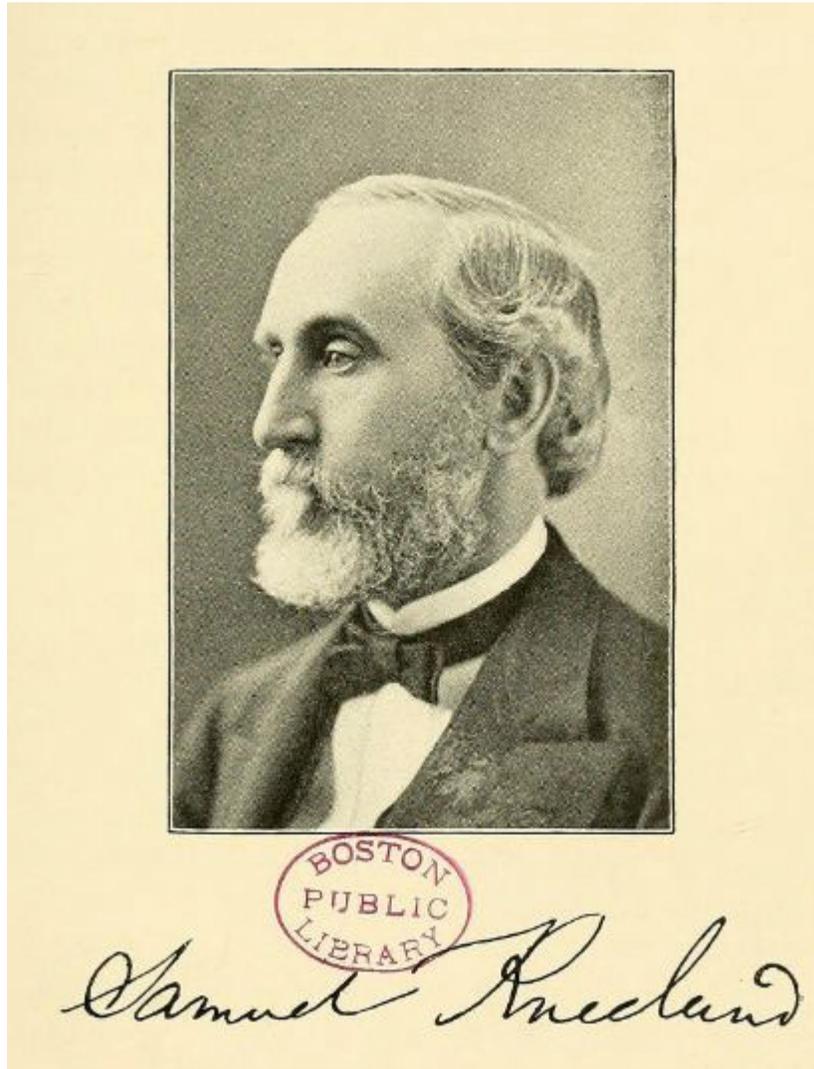
July: The weather in Massachusetts was hot. Later, on June 11, 1851, [Henry Thoreau](#) would recollect this summer and write in his journal “I do not know but I feel less vigor at night –my legs will not carry me so far –as if the night were less favorable to muscular exertion –weakened us somewhat as darkness turns plants pale –but perhaps my experience is to be referred to being already exhausted by the day and I have never tried the experiment fairly. It was so hot summer before last that the [Irish](#) laborers on the RR worked by night instead of day for a while –several of them having been killed by the heat & cold water. I do not know but they did as much work as ever by day. Yet methinks nature would not smile on such labors.”

THOREAU ON THE IRISH

August 1, Wednesday: In [New Bedford](#) during the late 1840s, bands and other marching groups and societies were turning out in force for parades on the anniversary of the emancipation of the slaves of the British West Indies, with the city's schoolchildren joining in as well.

EMANCIPATION DAY
ABOLITIONISM

[Dr. Samuel Kneeland, Jr.](#) got married with Eliza Maria Curtis, daughter of Daniel T. Curtis, Esq. of Cambridge, Massachusetts, grand-daughter of General Paul Curtis of the American Revolution. They would have a son and a daughter, Samuel Kneeland on December 10, 1850 and Eliza Curtis Kneeland on October 21, 1852.



(We can be quite certain that in the case of this 1850 childbirth by Mrs. Kneeland, and in the case of this 1852 childbirth by Mrs. Kneeland, her murderous physician husband did not experiment to demonstrate yet again as he had proved in 1846, that “puerperal fever could be produced by the inoculation of a woman with fluid from a sick woman or from the body of one who had died after labor.” No, this particular mother was no charity patient — who might be killed for the improvement of science and her unfortunate infant left motherless. This one was the physician’s spouse, and the infant in question was the physician’s own child, and thus mother and infant would be awarded the very best of care! She, no, *she* was not injected.)



The [cholera](#) was making an extraordinary visit to [Ireland](#). The [Morning Herald](#) editorialized that “A feeling is becoming very general that some mode of nationally supplying the DIVINE mercy should be immediately adopted, with reference to the pestilence which is now raging among us. It is no longer to be doubted or denied that not in our generation has a visitation of like severity been known. The worst periods of the cholera of 1832 did not approach in extent or intensity to that through which we are passing. We entirely accord with the feeling we have described, and trust that Parliament will not separate without some appeal being made to the heads of her Majesty’s Government as to the propriety of such a step. There is something exceedingly awful in the mysterious character of this pestilence. Nearly twenty years has it been a known disease, in one sense, through out Europe; and yet, in another sense, it remains utterly unknown to this moment. Medical professors of the highest attainments are obliged to admit that they know not how or whence it comes; how or in what cases or circumstances it acts; or of what character the remedies ought to be. All the modes of dealing with it are little better than guesses. One insists on brandy, another prefers ice mixed with salt. Chloroform is the remedy here, bleeding there. Heat or cold, stillness or friction, all manner of differing or opposing modes of treatment, are advocated on all sides, and with equal zeal. The plainest facts are called in question. A Doctor H., at Liverpool, declares that in one week he effected 74 cures! All the other doctors of the town assert with decision, that he has effected no cures at all.” The [Limerick Chronicle](#) reported, on the bright side, that the supply of potatoes was looking up this year, so that although you might fear to die of the cholera this season, this season you need not fear to die of [famine](#): “Precisely at this time last year unmistakable symptoms of the potato disease were generally visible in our market. At present, we have sincere pleasure in announcing that no sign of any distemper affects the large supply now at market in Limerick.”

September 11, Tuesday: [Henry Thoreau](#) checked out, from [Harvard Library](#), the two volumes of Simon-Alexandre Langlois (1788-1854)’s *HARIVANSA; OU, HISTOIRE DE LA FAMILLE DE HARI, OUVRAGE FORMANT UN APPENDICE DU MAHABHARATA* (Paris, 1834).



He would try his hand at translating from this French translation of the original Sanskrit: “The transmigration of the seven Brahmins.”



[WALDEN](#): After a still winter night I awoke with the impression that some question had been put to me, which I had been endeavoring in vain to answer in my sleep, as what-how-when-where? But there was dawning Nature, in whom all creatures live, looking in at my broad windows with serene and satisfied face, and no question on her lips. I awoke to an answered question, to Nature and daylight. The snow lying deep on the earth dotted with young pines, and the very slope of the hill on which my house is placed, seemed to say, Forward! Nature puts no question and answers none which we mortals ask. She has long ago taken her resolution. “O Prince, our eyes contemplate with admiration and transmit to the soul the wonderful and varied spectacle of this universe. The night veils without doubt a part of this glorious creation; but day comes to reveal to us this great work, which extends from earth even into the plains of the ether.”

[Thoreau](#) also checked out Professor [Joseph-Héliodore-Sagesse-Vertu Garcin de Tassy](#)'s *HISTOIRE DE LA LITTÉRATURE HINDOUI ET HINDUSTANI* (Paris: Printed under the auspices of the Oriental Translation Committee of Great Britain and Ireland, *TOME I, BIOGRAPHIE ET BIBLIOGRAPHIE*, 1839; *TOME II, EXTRAITS ET ANALYSES*, 1847).



M. GARCIN DE TASSY, I
M. GARCIN DE TASSY, II



After September 11: “They pretend that the verses of [Kabir](#) have four different senses; illusion, spirit, intellect, & the exoteric doctrine of the vedas” See Wilson as above.

The poet [Mir Camar uddin Mast](#) of Delhi who flourished in the last century says “Being seated, to run through the region of the spiritual world; I have had this advantage in books. To be intoxicated by a single glass of wine; I have experienced this pleasure when I have drank the liquor of the esoteric doctrines.”

To have a brother or a sister — to have a gold mine on your farm — to find diamonds in the gravel heaps before your door — how rare these things are

–To share the day with you — to inhabit the earth. Whether to have a god or goddess for companion in your walks or to walk alone — with hinds & villains & carles. Would not a friend enhance the the beauty of the landscape as much as a deer or hare. Every thing would acknowledge & serve such a relation. the corn in the field & the cranberries in the meadows. The flowers & the birds would bloom & sing with a new impulse. There would be more fair days in the year.

What a difference whether you have a brother on earth or not.

Whether in all your walks you meet only strangers or in one house is one who knows you. & whom you know. The Hindoos by constitution possess in in a wonderful degree the faculty of contemplation — they can speculate — they have imagination & invention & fancy. The western man thinks only with ruinous interruptions & friction — his contemplative faculty is rusty & does not work. He is soon aground in the shallows of the practical– It gives him indigestion to think. His cowardly *legs* run away with him — but the Hindoo bravely cuts off his legs in the first place. To him his imagination is a distinct & honorable faculty as valuable as the understanding or the legs– The legs were made to transport it — & it does not merely direct the legs. How incredibly poor in speculation is the western world!– one would have thought that a drop of thought & a single afternoon would have set afloat more speculations—

What has Europe been *thinking* of these two thousand years. A child put to bed half an hour before its time would have invented more systems — would have had more theories set afloat would have amused itself with more thoughts. But instead of going to bed and thinking Europe has got up and gone to work, and when she goes to bed she goes to sleep. We cannot go to bed & think as children do The Yankee cannot sit but he sleeps– I have an uncle who is obliged to sprout potatoes on sundays to keep him awake. The Hindoo thinks so vividly & intensely that he can think sitting or on his back — far into a siesta He can dream awake.

Their imaginations are lava or pumice in the cold state — torpid Icelandic– It was not in such a temperature that the lava flowed into these beautiful forms. More genial circumstances would melt the rock.



After September 11: –We have a saying an East quarter bargain i.e. a secret one– The Copper mines –the old silver mine now deserted –the holt –the great meadows– The Baker Farm –Conantum –Beck-Stows swamp –the Great Fields –Poland –The Dam Meadows –The Eastabrooks place –Jenny Dugan’s – The Ministerial Lot –Fairy land –Sleepy Hollow –Laurel glen Talls Island The bog-iron mines –The old lime-kiln –the place where the cinnamon stone was found –Hayne’s Island– I usually went across lots & some times I swam the river holding my clothes up in one hand to keep them dry. & at last crawling out the other side like

BAKER FARM



IRELAND

IRELAND

an otter or I forded broad deep & rapid streams on temporary Peruvian bridges which I constructed, by letting fall a rider across & using a steady pole— The Gulf meadows Caesar's—the Caedar Swamp—Paul Dudleys—John Le Gross' Country—The Price place—Capt Bate's The Fort of the rocks—'s Folly the Old Marlboro road. The Bridle road the 2nd Division

Between Anurnuck & strawberry hills in Mr Hapgood's pasture I have measured a chestnut 23 feet in circumference at a foot from the ground. Well meadow— For brooks we have Cold brook—Pantry Brook—Well meadow brook—Nut meadow Brook Wrights brook—Nagog—brook—Nashoba brook—Fort Pond brook—Saw Mill brook—Mill brook—Spencer brook. &c &c.

For hills—Nagog famous for huckleberries where I have seen hundreds of bushels at once—Nashoba—of Indian memory—from which you see Uncanunuc Mt well—Strawberry hill—from which you glimpse Nagod Pond—Annurnuck—Ponkawtasset—Balls hill Fair Haven—Round—Goodman's—Willis's Nobscot—where old Gen Nixon lived—by the Sudbury inn v poetry Turnpike hill—Lincoln Hill—Bare hill Mt Tabor, Pine hill, Prospect hill Nawshawtuct. Wind mill Hill. &c

For ponds Walden—Flints or Sandys White Now, since the railroad & the Irish have prophaned Walden—the most beautiful of all our lakes—a gem of crystal—(v tree story) It deserves a better name— One has suggested God's drop—another Yellow pine lake another Hygae's Water, and another To be sure its shores are white & I used to gather its sand in my youth to make sand paper with.

IRISH

JAMES BAKER

October: The [Irish](#) harvest was mostly healthy, with patches of blight isolated from one another, but the quantity of potatoes harvested was still below pre-Famine levels.

IRISH POTATO FAMINE

October 7 (?), Friday: At some point during the morning [Edgar Allan Poe](#) became too exhausted to continue his raving, sank back into his hospital bed in [Baltimore, Maryland](#) murmuring “Lord help my poor soul,” and died.

The brig *St. John*, full of [Irish](#) families fleeing the [Irish Potato Famine](#), hit the Grampus rock and broke up off Cohasset.

A just man's purpose cannot be split on any Grampus.

Lord, help their poor souls.

1850

The Irish who had emigrated to the USA were providing a great deal of, and an increasing amount of, assistance for their Irish relatives on the old sod:

Low Estimates for Total Remittances to Ireland

Year	Pounds
1848	£460,000
1849	£540,000
1850	£957,000
1851	£990,000

Because of the fact that:

It is useless to disguise the truth that any great improvement in the social system of Ireland must be founded upon an extensive change in the present state of agrarian occupation, and that this change necessarily implies a long, continued and systematic ejectionment of small holders and of squatting cottiers.

the trend among the “improving” absentee landlords of the island had become to hire gangs of thugs who would evict small tenants and tear the roofs from their cottages to make certain they could not come back:

Families Evicted

Year	Families
1847	6,026
1848	9,657
1849	16,686
1850	19,949
1851	13,197





Meanwhile (just to show how parochial and limited such sympathy can be), in Burlington, Vermont, the first parish of French-Canadian Catholics in New England was being formed, but only over the vociferous objections of local Catholics of Irish-American extraction. In general, these Irish-Americans were hostile to competition, and in particular, therefore, they were even hostile to competition from other Catholics, if they happened to be French-Canadian Americans rather than of Irish extraction. These French-Canadian Catholics, such as for one example Alek Therien of Concord, because they had not only an ethnicity problem in Anglo-Saxon New England but also a communication problem, would need to be willing to do harder work for longer hours per day, and for lower wages.¹¹²

They wouldn't be receiving any sympathy from Frederick Douglass, for in his experience, to be pro-Catholic was to be pro-slavery:

The two hundred years this curse has set in the sanctuary proves that there is no warfare between slavery and church.

For instance, the Dorr War of Rhode Island, in the vehemence of its anti-Irish and anti-Catholic and anti-immigrant sentiments, was pure Frederick Douglass.

ANTI-CATHOLICISM

It is religious bigotry and politics, not the US Constitution, that has created today's monopoly public school system.

In about this decade of the 19th Century, it was Protestant ministers, people who regarded Catholic schools as an abomination, who launched a social movement to create exclusive, government-run public schools, and what they were after were schools controlled by good folks like themselves, Protestants, schools that immigrant Catholic kids could be herded into, in which they would be cleaned up and Americanized and indoctrinated and transformed into hordes of decent little Protestant Americans. The public school movement succeeded in defunding the Catholic schools of New-York, despite the fact that the popular, progressive governor of the state, William Seward, stood with the Catholics in demanding equal treatment for religious schools. Here is the course of instruction for Courtlandville Academy in New York, for the year 1850:

SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE

SUMMARY OF THE SEVERAL TERMS

FIRST TERM	SECOND TERM	THIRD TERM	OF THE YEAR
Males———42.	Males———63.	Males———71.	Males———111.
Females——64.	Females——79.	Females——71.	Females——131.
Total———106.	Total———142.	Total———142.	Total———242.

NOTICE

COURSE OF INSTRUCTION, AND TEXT BOOKS.

112. It may be hard for use to imagine how there could have been harder work for longer hours per day for lower wages, than the Irish Potato Famine survivors were subjected to, or how people subjected to such conditions would meet with other than sympathy and commiseration — but evidently in this world just any hardship may be demanded.



Ordinary Elementary Studies.

Weld's and Brown's Grammars; Adam's Davies' University, and Colburn's Intellectual Arithmetics; Harris' Bookkeeping; Town's Analysis; Mitchell's Geography and Outline Maps; Parley's course of History; Sanders' Readers; Webster's Dictionary; Penmanship, Composition and Declamation.

Mathematics, Natural Philosophy, &c.

Robinson's and Davies' Bordon's Algebra; Davies' Legendre's Geometry and Trigonometry; Davies' Surveying and Analytical Geometry; Olmsted's Natural Philosophy; Burritt's and Olmsted's [Astronomy](#), with Mattison's Astronomical Maps¹¹³; Potter's Technology.

Natural Science.

Lincoln's and Wood's Botany; Hitchcock's Geology; Cutter's Human Physiology; Wistar's Pancoast's Anatomy; Johnston's Turner's Chemistry; Comstock's Mineralogy; Smellie's Philosophy of Natural History; Liebeg's Organic Chemistry.

Intellectual, Moral, and Political Science.

Boyd and Newman's Rhetoric; Kaime's Elements of Criticism; Robbins and Taylor's General, and Wilson's U.S. Histories; Wayland's Moral Science and Political Economy; Whateley's Logic; Paley's Natural Theology; — Young's Science of Government; Abercrombie's Intellectual Philosophy; Milton's Poetry, (for analysing.)

Languages.

Andrews and Stoddard's Latin Grammar; Arnold's Practical Latin Exercises; Arnold's Latin Prose Composition; Cooper's Virgil; Schmitz and Zumpt's Caesar; Anthon's "Cicero de Oratore";

Sallust and Horace; Folsom's Livy; Kingsley's Tacitus; Anthon's Classical Dictionary; Leverett's and Ainsworth's Latin Lexicon; Sophocles' and Fisk's Greek Grammar; Arnold's Practical Greek Exercises; Arnold's Greek Prose Composition; Leusden's Greek Testament; Casserly's Jacob's Greek Reader; Xenophon's Anabasis and Memorabilia; Felton's Homer's Illiad and Odyssey; Donnegan's Greek Lexicon; Noel and Chapsal's and Bollmar's French Grammars; "Corinne ou L'Italie"; Vie de Washington; Charles the Twelfth; Siege of Rochelle; Telemarque; Madame De Stael's Germany; La Fontaine's Fables; Boyer's Surenne, and Meadow's Dictionary.

The Text Books in the above list are believed to be best adapted to accomplish the design of this Institution, viz : to furnish a course of study at once thorough and comprehensive, and that shall prepare the Student to prosecute successfully a more extended course of study, or to enter upon the duties of active life.

The institution has a somewhat extensive and well selected Library, and a handsome set of Philosophical and Chemical Apparatus; all of which is open to the student free from charge.

The Academy buildings are nearly new and highly commodious. This school is located in one of the most healthful and pleasant villages in the State, and amid a society exempt from the vicious influences attending the great thoroughfares of travel. Parents and guardians are assured that no pains will be spared on the part of the instructors to promote the welfare of those entrusted to their care.

113. [Elijah Hinsdale Burritt](#)'s THE GEOGRAPHY OF THE HEAVENS.... NEW ED. REV. AND ILLUS. BY HIRAM MATTISON.



IRELAND

IRELAND

The advancement of pupil's in reading, speaking and composition writing, is deemed of primary importance. Exercises in Declamation and Composition are held in the Academy Hall every Wednesday afternoon; and at the close of the winter term, as well as at the close of the Academic year is a public exhibition of the Students in original orations, disputations and essays. Upon all the exercises of the school, public or ordinary, the patrons of the institution, and the friends of education are invited to be present.

The patronage which this school has received, and the favor with which it is now regarded by our citizens, and the public generally, encourage the Trustees to anticipate for it continued and increased prosperity.

The Academic year is divided into three terms, of fourteen weeks each. The first term of the ensuing year will commence on the 4th day of April; the second on the 15th day of August; and the third on the 2d day of December.

THE PRICES OF TUITION in the various studies pursued, are for the Latin, Greek and French Languages, Natural Philosophy and Chemistry, with Lectures, Botany, Mathematics, History, Moral and Mental Philosophy, Rhetoric, &c

\$5.00 per Term,

Music in addition to other Studies,

\$10.00 per Term,

Use of Piano

\$2.00 per Term,

Painting and Drawing,

\$5.00 per Term,

English Grammar, Geography, Arithmetic, Reading, Writing, &c.,

\$3.75 per Term,

Young scholars in English branches,

\$2.50 per Term,

No bills will be made for less time than half a Term, and Tuition is payable in advance, or promptly at the close of each Term.

Board, including Room, Washing, &c., may be obtained in convenient situations, at prices from \$1 25 to \$2 per week.

JOSEPH REYNOLDS, President.

In [Ireland](#), the Tenant League was founded.

[William Henry Harvey](#)'s *PHYCOLOGIA BRITANNICA* (Plates 295-354) (London: Reeve & Banham). Also, his "Observations on the Marine Flora of the Atlantic States," in [Proceedings of the American Association for the Advancement of Science](#) (pages 79-80).



IRELAND

IRELAND

January 25, Friday: The New Orleans Catholic Mirror pointed out that American Catholics were nowhere near as inconsistent as American Protestants, in that everywhere they were united in being in favor of human enslavement. They were invulnerable to a Protestant moral theology that varied “with degrees of latitude,” Northern white Protestants being opposed to slavery and Southern white Protestants being in favor of it. (Of course, in drawing such a moral, the religious newspaper was carefully evading the fact that Catholic moral theology varied with degrees of **longitude**, those in Europe such as the Pope being opposed to slavery and those in America being in favor of it — disregarding the opposition that had been declared since 1839 by the person they regarded as their supreme spiritual leader.)

IRELAND

July 23, day: A letter from South Kingstown, Rhode Island:

We have begun to cart in today & we are also in the midst of haying having got in 30 loads but there are at least 70 more to get in & two of my men have mutinied & gone off drunk ... but we have eight Irishmen & five natives left – How could the work of the country be done but for the Emerald Islanders?

IRISH

October: The Irish harvest was mostly healthy, with patches of blight isolated from one another, such as in counties Clare and Limerick, but the quantity of potatoes harvested was still below pre-Famine levels. We don't know precisely how many people starved to death or, weakened by starvation, succumbed to diarrhea and fever or to cholera in Ireland during this period, and a table prepared after the fact by the Census Commissioners, presented here, in all probability under-estimates the mortality because of the manner in which they collected data: for a family all of whose members succumbed zero deaths would have been tabulated. Of the total number of deaths, which would be between 500,000 and 1,500,000, the percentage of that total which would occur in each year probably worked out to something like this:

Mortality, expressed as %ages of the 1841 Population

Year	%
1842	5.1%
1843	5.2%
1844	5.6%
1845	6.4%
1846	9.1%
1847	18.5%
1848	15.4%
1849	17.9%
1850	12.2%

The figures shown for 1849 are the result of this outbreak of cholera as it had spread in Connacht, Leinster, and Munster, as well as of the general Irish starvation.



1851

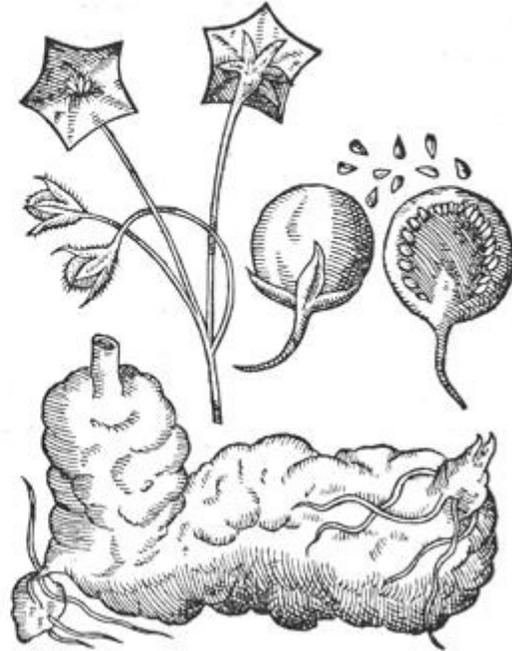
In [Boston](#), one Bernard McGiniskin was hired as a policeman, then fired, then re-hired, and then re-fired.¹¹⁴

As an after-impact of the great [potato](#) famine, there was widespread blindness in [Ireland](#). The population of the island had fallen from 8,175,124 as of 1841 to 6,552,385 (whereas without the [Irish Potato Famine](#) and the accompanying epidemic and emigration the population of that island could have been expected at this point to have been something greater than 9,000,000).

Population Trends

	England / Wales	Ireland
1821	12,000,000	6,800,000
1831	13,900,000	7,770,000
1841	15,920,000	8,180,000
1845	about 16,700,000	about 8,300,000 (the year of the blight, to be followed by famine and then by fever and emigration)
1851	17,930,000	6,550,000
1861	20,070,000	5,800,000
1871	31,629,299	5,410,000
1881	35,026,108	5,170,000

114. He was the initial [Irishman](#), you see, on the force. This was just scandalous — it was like supposing one could fit a fox into a uniform and entrust to it the safety of one’s chickens. Bostonians [*sic*, this means white non-Irish males] talked about it, in their barber shops they were saying it was as cunning as hiring a nigger boy [*sic*, these are 19th-Century white American men talking to 19th-Century white American men] to tend a garden full of watermelons. What is going to come of all this insane **liberalism**?



Accurate estimates of this sort of thing are of course rather hard to come by, but order-of-magnitude it is now being estimated that like a million people had starved to death. Reviewing these figures, however, the Census Commissioners of the time pronounced them “on the whole, satisfactory,” pointing out that lower population levels meant “the general advancement of the country.” The relatives who had emigrated to the USA were evidently unable to take such a sanguinary attitude, as they were providing continuously increasing assistance for the people they had left behind:

Low Estimates for Total Remittances to Ireland

Year	Pounds
1848	£460,000
1849	£540,000
1850	£957,000
1851	£990,000

Because of the fact that:

It is useless to disguise the truth that any great improvement in the social system of Ireland must be founded upon an extensive change in the present state of agrarian occupation, and that this change necessarily implies a long, continued and systematic ejection of small holders and of squatting cottiers.

the trend among the “improving” absentee landlords of the island had become to hire gangs of thugs who would evict small tenants and tear the roofs from their cottages to make certain they could not come back:

Families Evicted

Year	Families
1847	6,026
1848	9,657
1849	16,686
1850	19,949
1851	13,197



What precisely was it, which had produced such a tragedy, or, such a travesty, as this famine and epidemic? Is an event of this magnitude to be understood as having been purely and simply an ecological disaster, a Malthusian inevitability, or must this be considered as having been primarily a piece of political opportunism, a Newt Gingrichian malignancy on the body politic, an opportunity to kick an entire people while they were down? Christine Kinealy has offered a refined analysis¹¹⁵ involving some mixture of these possibilities:



Page 343:

The onset of the Famine was unexpected although partial crop failures and food shortages were not unusual. In 1845, therefore, the [potato](#) blight, regardless of the lack of understanding of either its origins or an antidote, was not regarded with undue alarm. Although approximately 50 per cent of the main subsistence crop failed in 1845-6, the consequence of the resultant shortages was not [famine](#), nor did emigration or mortality increase substantially. The role played by the government, local landlords, clerics, and various relief officials was significant in achieving this outcome. The second, more widespread, blight of 1846 marked the real beginning of the Famine. Ominously, the impact of the shortages was apparent in the period immediately following the harvest. Inevitably also, the people undergoing a second year of shortages were far less resilient than they had been twelve months earlier. The government responded to this potentially more serious situation by reducing its involvement in the import of food into the country and by making relief more difficult to obtain.

The distress that followed the 1847 harvest was caused by a small crop and economic dislocation rather than the widespread appearance of blight. The government again changed its relief policy in an attempt to force local resources to support the starving poor within their district. The government professed a belief that this policy was necessary to ensure that a burden which it chose to regard as essentially local should not be forced upon the national finances. This policy underpinned the actions of the government for the remainder of the Famine. The relief of [famine](#) was regarded essentially as a local responsibility rather than a national one, let alone an imperial obligation. The special relationship between the constituent parts of the United Kingdom forged by the Act of Union appeared not to extend to periods of shortage and famine.

Page 345:

If the blight is judged to be an unforeseen ecological disaster, beyond the control of man, which struck [Ireland](#) at a particularly vulnerable time, it was especially important that the intervention of man (as represented by [Irish](#) merchants, landlords, and the policy makers within the British government among others) should compensate for the failings of nature. It was the failure of these key groups to meet the challenge and implement effective action which transformed the blight into a [famine](#).

Page 347:

The contribution of outside charitable bodies was mostly confined to the early years of the Famine. By 1847, most of these sources had dried up or, as in the case of the [Quakers](#), they had decided to use their remaining funds to concentrate on long-term improvements rather than immediate relief. Significantly, the Quakers' men on the ground who toured the west of [Ireland](#) in the winter of 1846-7 were critical both of absentee landlords and of the policies pursued by the British government alike.

Page 353:

115. Kinealy, Christine. THIS GREAT CALAMITY: THE IRISH FAMINE 1845-52. Dublin: Gill & Macmillan, 1994



IRELAND

IRELAND

For landlords also, who were able to ride the storm of diminished rentals and heavy taxation, the Famine ultimately brought both social and financial benefits. As Lord George Hill, a “reforming” landlord who had attempted without success to consolidate his estates prior to 1845, admitted:

The [Irish](#) people have profited much by the Famine, the lesson was severe; but so rooted were they in old prejudices and old ways, that no teacher could have induced them to make the changes which this Visitation of Divine Providence has brought about, both in their habits of life and in their mode of agriculture.

Page 359:

In conclusion, therefore, the response of the British government to the Famine was inadequate in terms of humanitarian criteria and, increasingly after 1847, systematically and deliberately so. The localised shortages that followed the blight of 1845 were adequately dealt with but, as the shortages became more widespread, the government retrenched. With the short-lived exception of the soup kitchens, access to relief –or even more importantly, access to food– became more restricted. That the response illustrated a view of [Ireland](#) and its people as distant and marginal is hard to deny. What, perhaps, is more surprising is that a group of officials and their non-elected advisors were able to dominate government policy to such a great extent. This relatively small group of people, taking advantage of a passive establishment, and public opinion which was opposed to further financial aid for Ireland, were able to manipulate a theory of free enterprise, thus allowing a massive social injustice to be perpetrated within a part of the United Kingdom. There was no shortage of resources to avoid the tragedy of a [famine](#). Within Ireland itself, there were substantial resources of food which, had the political will existed, could have been diverted, even as a short-term measure, to supply a starving people. Instead, the government pursued the objective of economic, social, and agrarian reform as a long-term aim, although the price paid for this ultimately elusive goal was privation, disease, emigration, mortality and an enduring legacy of disenchantment.

End of this quoting. What I am wondering is whether anyone can offer insight into the Quaker disengagement cited by the author as having taken place in 1848. Was that a case of what nowadays we term “burnout”? In particular, where Friends spoke of their prior effort as having been equivalent to “giving the criminal a long day,” what was the significance of the deployment of such an idiom? Were the Friends at that point, in despair, becoming political “Newt Gingrichians”? What **was** it precisely, in that period, to “give the criminal a long day”?



In this year the Supreme Court of the State of Georgia ruled that although “the killing of a negro” could not be considered a felony, if the murder victim in question had been during his or her life a piece of property, then of course such an act wasn’t an all-right-never-mind, because it would constitute **an actionable deprivation of property rights**:

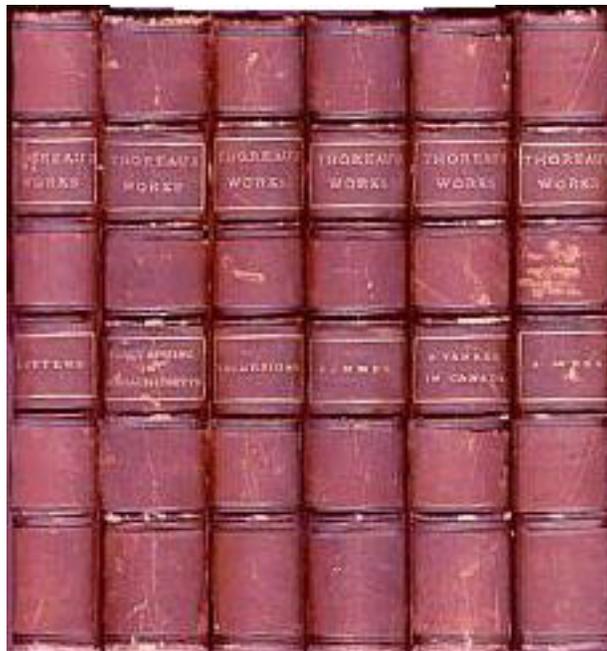
If from the beginning of the 18th Century in Anglo-America the term “negro” meant [slave](#), except when explicitly modified by the word “free,” so under English law the term “hibernicus,” Latin for “Irishman,” was the legal term for “unfree.” If African-Americans were obliged to guard closely any document they might have attesting their freedom, so in Ireland, at the beginning of the 14th Century, letters patent, attesting to a person’s Englishness, were cherished by those who might fall under suspicion of trying to “pass.” If under Anglo-American slavery “the rape of a female slave was not a crime, but a mere trespass on the master’s property,” so in 1278 two Anglo-Normans brought into court and charged with raping Margaret O’Rorke were found not guilty because “the said Margaret is an Irishwoman.” If a law enacted in Virginia in 1723 provided that “manslaughter of a slave is not punishable,” so under Anglo-Norman law it sufficed for acquittal to show that the victim in a killing was [Irish](#). Anglo-Norman priests granted absolution on the grounds that it was “no more sin to kill an Irishman than a dog or any other brute.” If the Georgia Supreme Court ruled in 1851 that “the killing of a negro” was not a felony, but upheld an award of damages to the owner of an African-American bond-laborer murdered by another “white” man, so an English court freed Robert Walsh, an Anglo-Norman charged with killing John Mac Gilmore, because the victim was “a mere Irishman and not of free blood,” it being stipulated that “when the master of the said John shall ask damages for the slaying, he [Walsh] will be ready to answer him as the law may require.” If in 1884 the United States Supreme Court, citing much precedent authority, including the Dred Scott decision, declared that Indians were legally like immigrants, and therefore not citizens except by process of individual naturalization, so for more than four centuries, until 1613, the Irish were regarded by English law as foreigners in their own land. If the testimony of even free African-Americans was inadmissible, so in Anglo-Norman Ireland native Irish of the free classes were deprived of legal defense against English abuse because they were not “admitted to English law,” and hence had no rights that an Englishman was bound to respect.”



1852

An anonymous essay, by [William Allingham](#), on “[Irish](#) Ballad Singers and Street Singers,” appeared in [Household Words](#).

[The Riverside Press](#) (manufacturing division of Houghton-Mifflin) moved from Remington Street in Cambridge to the old Almshouse estate at Blackstone Street and the Charles River in Cambridgeport. It was a large employer and its establishment by Henry O. Houghton had coincided with the availability of the cheap labor of the [famine Irish](#). In addition, Houghton visited Glasgow, London, and Paris to recruit skilled printers. Originally a Vermont farm boy, Houghton had learned the printing business at the Burlington Free Press and had attended the University of Vermont. Some of this press's earliest publications would be [The Atlantic Monthly](#), MERRIAM-WEBSTER'S UNABRIDGED DICTIONARY, and household editions of Charles Dickens. In the late 19th century, the Press's great accomplishments would be the ten volumes of ENGLISH AND SCOTTISH BALLADS by Francis James Child, and Edward Fitzgerald's "translation" of THE RUBAIYAT OF OMAR KHAYYAM, illustrated by Elihu Vedder. One of the most well-known artists associated with the Press would be Bruce Rogers, a typographical genius who preferred to use older, less commercial methods. In a small, bare studio Rogers would work side by side with an elderly, senior pressman, Dan Sullivan, whom he found indispensable. Together Rogers and Sullivan would produce, on a handpress, the Riverside Press Editions, truly extraordinary works. When Houghton Press would buy out Ticknor and Fields, it would acquire publishing rights to works by Samuel Clemens, Stephen Crane, [Nathaniel Hawthorne](#), Oliver Wendell Holmes, William Dean Howells, Sarah Orne Jewett, [Henry Wadsworth Longfellow](#), James Russell Lowell, Harriet Beecher Stowe, Friend [John Greenleaf Whittier](#), and, of course, [Henry Thoreau](#):



January 23, Friday: The case of John Gordon, [hanged](#) for the murder of Amasa Sprague, had been being discussed in [Rhode Island](#) for seven years. Had he been guilty of a crime, or had he been the innocent [Catholic/Irish](#) impoverished immigrant victim of a rush to judgment and a judicial murder?

The Orléans family (the former ruling house) was banned from France by President Louis-[Napoléon](#) Bonaparte.



January 23, Friday: The snow is so deep & the cold so intense that the crows [**American Crow** *Corvus brachyrhynchos*] are compelled to be very bold in seeking their food – and come very near the houses in the village. One is now walking about & pecking the dung in the street in front of Frank Munroe's. They remind



me as they sail along over the street of the turkey buzzards of the south & perhaps many hard winters in succession would make them as tame.

There is a vegetable life as well as a spiritual & animal life in us – for the hair & nails continue to grow after the *anima* has left the body & the spiritual & animal life it is dead. There is also probably an inorganic mineral life.

The surface of the snow on the 20th was not yet disturbed or rippled even by the wind.

P.m. Deep Cut going to Fair Haven Hill No music from the telegraph harp on the causeway – where the wind is strong but in the cut this cold day I hear memorable strains. What must the birds & beasts think where it passes through woods – who heard only the squeaking of the trees before? I should think that these strains would get into their music at last. Will not the mocking bird be heard one day inserting this strain in his medley? It intoxicates me. Orpheus is still alive – All poetry and mythology revive – The spirits of all bards sweep the strings. I hear the clearest silver lyre-like tones – Tertaeon tones. I think of menander & the rest – It is the most glorious music I ever heard. All those bards revive & flourish again in that half-hour in the deep-cut. The breeze came through an oak still wearing its dry leaves The very fine clear tones seemed to come from the very core & pith of the telegraph pole. I know not but it is my own chords that tremble so divinely. There are barytones – & high sharp tones &c Some come sweeping seemingly from further along the wire. The latent music of the earth had found here a vent. Music AEolian – There were 2 strings in fact one each side

I do not know but this will make me read the Greek poets. Thus as ever the finest uses of things are the accidental. Mr Morse did not invent this music.

I see where the squirrels have torn the pine-cones in pieces for the sake of to come at their seeds. And in some cases the **mice**? have nibbled the buds of the pitch pines where the plums have been bent down by the snow.

The Blue Hills of Milton are now White.

Lindley in Loudon dismisses the winter berries by saying “The species are low shrubs of little beauty.”

There are some whose ears help me so that my things have a rare significance when I read to them. It is almost too good a hearing – so that for the time I regard my own writing from too favorable a point of view.

Just before sunset there were few clouds or specks to be seen in the western sky – but the sun gets down lower, and many dark clouds are made visible – their sides toward us being darkened. In the bright light they were but floating feathers of vapor – now they swell into dark evening clouds.

It is a fair sunset with many purplish fishes in the horizon – pinkish & golden with bright edges – like a school of purplish whales they sail or float down from the north – Or like leopards skins they hang in the west. – If the sun goes behind a cloud – it is still reflected from the least haziness or vapor in that part of the sky – the air is so clear – and the after glow is remarkably long – And now the blaze is put out – and only a few glowing clouds like the flickering light of the fire skirt the west. And now only the brands and embers mixed with smoke make an Indian red along the horizon. And the new moon¹¹⁶ & **the evening star** together preside over the twilight scene.

The thermometer was at 21° this morning

Some botanical names have originated in a mere blunder. Thus the *Cytharexylum melanocardium* of the West Ind. “called by the French *fidele*, from its faithfulness or durability in building,” the English have corrupted into fiddle-wood & so the genus goes. It is unfit for musical instruments – **Lindley**

VENUS

October: The **Irish potato** harvest this year was virtually free of the late blight. England had disbursed a grand sum total of less than 1/2 of 1% of **one** year’s annual Gross National Product in relief to sustain the Irish during this entire panicky **Irish Potato Famine** period of like eight years, and had begrudged even that level of assistance.¹¹⁷

116. January 21st and 22nd had been the nights of no moon.

117. Which is to say, making a comparison with the past, that over a period of eight years they had been willing to spend to fight this famine only 10% of what they had felt required to spend **every** year in order to neutralize the armies of Napoleon. Or, looking at this thing compared to England’s glorious future, the Treasury had with the greatest of reluctance disbursed only £8,000,000 for all the Irish, when in a few years it would be disbursing over £69,000,000 in order to fund a pointless and disastrous military foray into the Crimea.

1853

The transportation of British convicts to Tasmania was ending in this year, after half a century with more than 65,000 convicts landed on the island.



As a political prisoner at large there on his own parole, the [Irish](#) convict John Mitchel had been writing away at an account of things which eventually would receive the title *JAIL JOURNAL, OR FIVE YEARS IN BRITISH PRISONS*, and still had friends capable of providing him with a swift horse (what he needed, of course, was friends who could give him a swift kick in the ass, to get rid of whatever bug it was that was up his ass, that was causing all this — but such wise friends are hard to come by). During this year he strode into the local magistrate’s office to inform that startled gentleman “I will no longer be a prisoner on parole, I take back my word!” Dashing out of the office and leaping on the horse, he rode to the seacoast and boarded the American vessel upon which his convict son John C. Mitchel Jr. was already waiting.



They were bound for San Francisco, and eventually for New-York.

1854

January 7, Saturday: Friend [William Henry Harvey](#) arrived at Albany on the coast of Western Australia. After a month at Cape Riche he would hike overland through the bush to Perth to visit Fremantle, Rottnest Island (where he would live in a deserted convict establishment), and Garden Island. He would collect some 10,000 specimens of seaweed, many of them new to science.

Having been awarded a hero's welcome when he arrived in New-York, complete with a banquet attended by prominent Americans of Irish extraction, John Mitchel, along with Thomas Meagher, began to put out [The Citizen](#). Within a few weeks this libertarian newspaper, which obsequiously pandered to every rancid prejudice of its target audience, would be enjoying press runs of 50,000.



The publication would of course be greatly in favor of freedom for [Ireland](#). Along the way it would also defend our inalienable right to own other human beings (that is, human [slavery](#)), would attack the great humbug of the Colonization Society, and would insist upon the unimpeachable privilege of a white man to engage in any business at all (that is, for instance, return to the [international slave trade](#)).

Covering all bases, this paper would also be used to argue against the emancipation of the Jews.

ANTISEMITISM
RACISM



January 7 P.M. –To Ministerial Swamp. I went to these woods partly to hear an owl [**Great Horned Owl *Bubo virginianus***], but did not; but now that I have left them nearly a mile behind, I hear one distinctly, *hoorer hoo*. Strange that we should hear this sound so often, loud and far, –a voice which we call the owl,– and yet so rarely see the bird. Oftenest at twilight. It has a singular prominence as a sound; is louder than the voice of a dear friend. Yet we see the friend perhaps daily and the owl but a few times in our lives. It is a sound which the wood or the horizon makes.

IRELAND

IRELAND



(George Edwards's *A NATURAL HISTORY OF UNCOMMON BIRDS*, 1745)

1855

In Ireland, the endemic poverty, temperance crusades, and high taxes on alcohol were causing recourse to ether as a cheap, readily available alcohol substitute, especially by lower-class Catholics. By 1869 priests would be denouncing this sort of inebriation as sinful.

THE TEMPERANCE MOVEMENT

A public demonstration against Chicago's prohibition of the sale of beer on Sunday resulted in more than 60 arrests (you have three guesses as to what sort of accent the people had, who got locked up).

This year would represent the peak of the alcohol-abstinence movement for 19th-Century America.



Legal prohibition was in effect for 13 of the 40 states of the Union. (The next such spasm of prohibitionism would begin in 1920. The social cycle from inebriation to dryness seems to approximate 70 years, or about three generations.) About one in every three Americans lived in a place where the sale of alcohol was being



IRELAND

IRELAND

prohibited, if not entirely prevented.

Ethanol Consumption in Annual Gallons per US Adult

1790	5.8
1830	7.1
1840	3.1
1860	2.1
1890	2.1
1900	2.1
1920	0.9
1940	1.56
1980	2.76



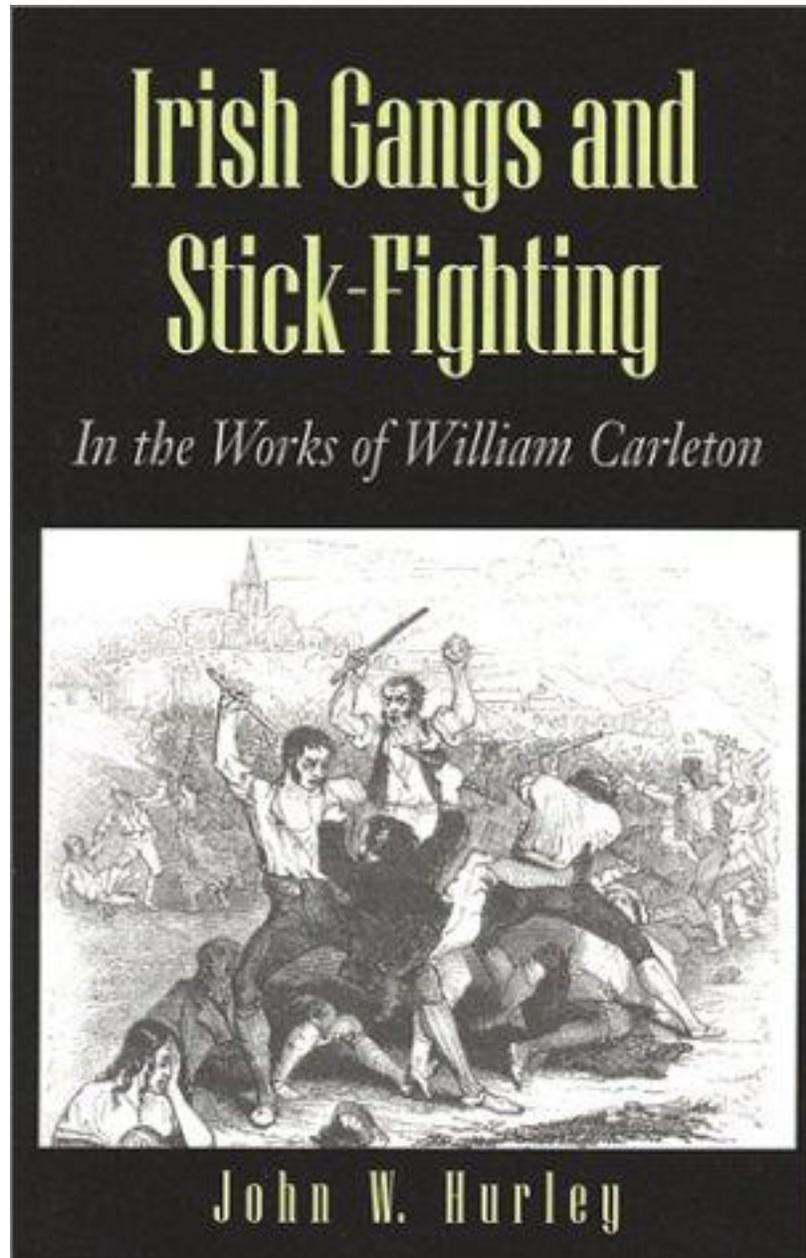
March 22, Thursday: Prejudice toward [Irish Catholic](#) immigrants, fanned by the [Providence Journal](#) (nowadays this paper is referred to locally as the “ProJo”), was using as its vehicle the American, or “[Know-Nothing](#)” party, a secret organization that was sweeping town, city, and state elections in the mid-fifties. In this year its candidate, William W. Hoppin, had captured the [Rhode Island](#) governorship. Some of the party’s more zealous adherents even planned a raid on St. Xavier’s Convent, home of the “female Jesuits,” supported by a fake rumor they were circulating to the effect that a Protestant girl, named Rebecca Newell, was being held against her will by the nuns of Sisters of Mercy.



The password of these [Know-Nothing](#) Protestant rioters was “show yourself.” (Is the password of the Ku Klux Klan “expose yourself”?)

[ANTI-CATHOLICISM](#)

In [Providence, Rhode Island](#) on this day, an angry mob instigated by the ProJo and the [Know-Nothings](#) dispersed when confronted with Bishop Bernard O’Reilly and an equally militant crowd of [Irishmen](#). On this day, God’s providence was definitely on the side of the big shillelaghs!



September: An American ship, the *Waverley*, was transporting a cargo of coolie laborers from South China toward a destiny of hard labor and, more often than not, early death, in South America. In the hold of the ship, when it was opened, were found the bodies of 260 coolies who had suffocated. This, of course, was terrible, because these [Chinamen](#), very much like black slaves from Africa and very much unlike [famine](#) refugees from [Ireland](#), were worth money if delivered alive, but were less than worthless if dead on arrival.

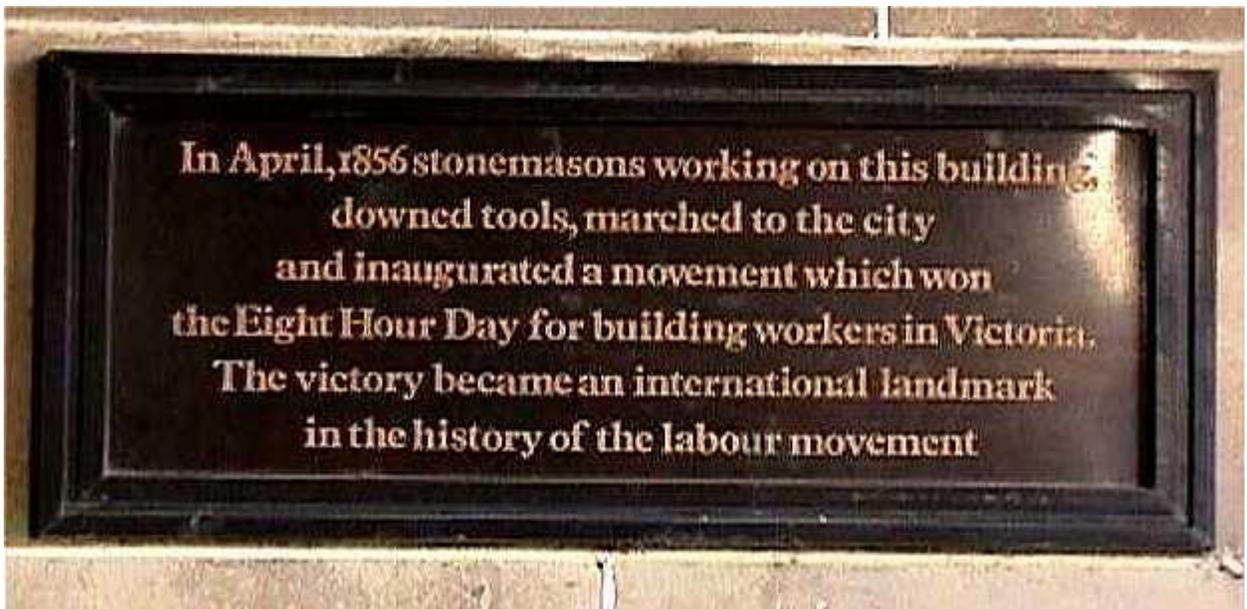
1856

Here is John Mitchel in The Citizen: “He would be a bad [Irishman](#) who voted for principles which jeopardized the present freedom of a nation of white men, for the vague forlorn hope of elevating blacks to a level for which it is at least problematical whether God and nature ever intended them.”



Returning to [Ireland](#), he toured the island.

April: Achievement, by some workers in some skilled trades in one district of Australia, of a workday limited to eight hours.



Their motto was “888”: eight hours for labor, eight hours for rest and recreation and family, and eight hours for sleep.

In this month or the following one, Friend [William Henry Harvey](#) would sail toward [Ireland](#) by way of the port of Valparaiso on the coast of South America.



October: The Reverend Richard Chenevix Trench became dean of Westminster.

Arriving back in Dublin, [Ireland](#), Friend [William Henry Harvey](#) would receive an appointment as Professor of [Botany](#) at Trinity College.

1857

May 8, Friday: [Harvard Observatory](#) produced a collodion photograph of the surface of the moon.

ASTRONOMY



May 8, Friday: A third fine day.

The sugar maple at Barrett's is now in full bloom.

I finish the arbor to-night. This has been the third of these remarkably warm and beautiful [days]. I have worked all the while in my shirt-sleeves. Summer has suddenly come upon us, and the birds all together. Some boys have bathed in the river.

Walk to first stone bridge at sunset. *Salix alba*, possibly the 6th. It is a glorious evening. I scent the expanding willow leaves (for there are very few blossoms yet) fifteen rods off. Already hear the cheerful, sprightly note of the yellowbird amid them. It is perfectly warm and still, and the green grass reminds me of June. The air is full of the fragrance of willow leaves. The high water stretches smooth around. I hear the sound of Barrett's sawmill with singular distinctness. The ring of toads, the note of the yellowbird, the rich warble of the red-wing, [**Red-winged Blackbird** [Agelaius phoeniceus](#)] the thrasher on the hillside, the robin's evening song, the woodpecker tapping some dead tree across the water; and I see countless little fuzzy gnats in the air, and dust over the road, between me and the departed sun. Perhaps the evenings of the 6th and 7th were as pleasant. But such an evening makes a crisis in the year. I must make haste home and go out on the water.

I paddle to the Wheeler meadow east of hill after sundown. From amid the alders, etc., I hear the mew of the catbird and the *yorrick* of Wilson's thrush. One bullfrog's faint *er-er-roonk* from a distance. (Perhaps the *Amphibia*, better than any creatures, celebrate the changes of temperature.) One *dump* note. It grows dark around. The full moon rises, and I paddle by its light. It is all evening for the soft-snoring, purring frogs (which I suspect to be *Rana palustris*). I get within a few feet of them as they sit along the edge of the river and meadow, but cannot see them. Their croak is very fine or rapid, and has a soft, purring sound at a little distance. I see them paddling in the water like toads.

Within a week I have had made a pair of corduroy pants, which cost when done \$1.⁶⁰. They are of that peculiar clay-color, reflecting the light from portions of their surface. They have this advantage, that, beside being very strong, they will look about as well three months hence as now,—or as ill, some would say. Most of my friends are disturbed by my wearing them. I can get four or five pairs for what one ordinary pair would cost in Boston, and each of the former will last two or three times as long under the same circumstances. The tailor said that the stuff was not made in this country; that it was worn by the Irish at home, and now they would not look at it, but others would not wear it, durable and cheap as it is, because it is worn by the Irish. Moreover, I like the color on other accounts. Anything but black clothes. I was pleased the other day to see a son of Concord return after an absence of eight years, not in a shining suit of black, with polished boots and a beaver or silk hat, as if on a furlough from human duties generally,—a mere clothes-horse,—but clad in an honest clay-colored suit and a snug every-day cap. It showed unusual manhood. Most returning sons come home dressed for the occasion. The birds and beasts are not afraid of me now. A mink came within twenty feet of me the other day as soon as my companion had left me, and if I had had my gray sack on as well as my corduroys, it would perhaps have come quite up to me. Even farmers' boys, returning to their native town, though not unfamiliar with homely and dirty clothes, make their appearance on this new stage in a go-to-meeting suit.



IRELAND

IRELAND

That was the spring of 1857, and I've got a story for you from the fall of 1957. In the passage of a calendar century some things change, and some things not. I was in Corpus Christi, Texas trying out living with my father instead of my mother in Indiana, the weather turned a bit chilly one day and I didn't have anything warm, so I stopped by a Goodwills and for fifty cents picked up a very nice, clean sports jacket. I thought its bold contrasting colors were fetching. My father saw this jacket and then it just disappeared. I went looking around the house for it endlessly, and finally he put his hand on my shoulder and, in a low tone, explained "With you having grown up with your mother, it's OK that you don't understand — but that's from the local nigger high school. I can't let you wear something like that — because you're my son." Now isn't that interesting! We have [Henry Thoreau](#) forever being accused of being prejudiced against the [Irish](#) yet there he was, the only person in his Concord 19th-Century ambience who wasn't being very careful not to dress like an Irishman.



IRELAND

IRELAND

July 12, day: There had been no [Catholic](#) church in the parish of Carrigaholt in West Clare, [Ireland](#) because, with the landlords being Protestant, there was nowhere to erect such an edifice. For years Father Michael Meehan celebrated Mass in a makeshift tent, and conducted marriages, baptized children, offered religious education, and administered the Last Sacrament to Catholics dying of cholera. In 1852, perhaps inspired by a Bathing Box on the beach in Killkee, he schemed to replace this tent with a wooden box on four wheels. Timber was obtained from Limerick and Owen Collins constructed what would come to be known as “the little ark,” covered over with tarred canvas. Windows ran along both sides and inside was a low altar with a statue of the Sacred Heart with above this a crucifix. Since the beach in Kilbaha was public, the box could be parked there. Finally a suitable piece of land was provided at Moneen and on this day the first stone for a church of “Our Lady, Star of the Sea” was laid and the little ark rolled to the site to be used until that edifice was ready. The new building would be dedicated on October 10, 1858 at a ceremony attended by 3,000 worshipers, and the little ark placed inside the church doors (it can be seen in the church at Moneen today).

In Belfast on this evening, confrontations began between crowds of Catholic and crowds of Protestant citizens. This would continue into 10 days of violent rioting (many local policemen would unite with the Protestant side and only a minority attempt to provide a police function).



IRELAND

IRELAND

An interesting article appeared on the front page of the Daily Alta California:

Gross Misconduct by a Government Official.

EDITORS ALTA: I would like to inquire of you, whether a Custom House official is empowered to strike an inoffensive Chinaman, because he dared to ask the reason why he insulted his wife?

The facts of the case are these: The ship "Winged Arrow" arrived from China on Friday, July 10th, having Chow Sanis (a respectable Chinese merchant, residing in San Francisco for the last five years) and wife and family on board. He had them removed from the ship shortly after they arrived, and landed them at Pacific wharf. As the Chinaman and his family came on to the wharf, the above-named petty official very rudely caught hold of the Chinaman's wife, and handled her roughly, without even stating who he was. The Chinaman very naturally wanted to know from the official the reason why he insulted his wife, when the cowardly ruffian struck him a severe blow on the face. There were a half a dozen white men, good citizens, that witnessed the whole affair. If the Collector, Mr. Washington, does his duty, he will give the contemptible coward his walking papers; as no true American citizen will insult any person, even an equal, much less those who have no remedy by an appeal on their own testimony in our courts of law.

A BOATMAN.

CHINESE

1858

Irish Republican Brotherhood (*Sinn Fein*) founded by Stephens.

Fenian Brotherhood founded in US by Stephens and O'Mahony.

Scrabo Tower erected.

March: Mrs. Anna Barker Ward, wife of the banker Samuel Gray Ward, a lady who had started out as a [Quaker](#) before turning [Unitarian](#), was converted to [Roman Catholicism](#) in Rome by Father Thomas ([Isaac Hecker](#)) of the just-approved-by-the-Pope “Missionary Society of St. Paul the Apostle,” and [Waldo Emerson](#) had an indignant reaction. Why on earth would she choose the Pope in Rome over himself? Emerson thought poorly of such antics: “This running into the Catholic Church is disgusting, just when one is looking amiably around at the culture and performance of the young people, and fancying that the new generation is an advance on the last.” He had been considering this lady as an archetype of all that was proper in American womanhood: “Her simple faith seemed to be, that by dealing nobly with all, all would show themselves noble.... She can afford to be sincere. The wind is not purer than she is.” –And now she had chosen “repose” over “truth,” so, was he going to need to begin to consider her as just another dupe? “I grieve that she has flung herself into the Church of Rome, suddenly. She was **born** for social grace, & that faith makes such carnage of social relations!” In a letter, he reminded Mrs. Ward that even though it would be in Rome itself that she would encounter a Catholic priest, that man was probably in actuality merely a transplanted [Irishman](#) (how embarrassing).

May 11, Tuesday: [Waldo Emerson](#) recorded the conversation of the previous day, with [Henry Thoreau](#) at Walden Pond, in his journal:

Yesterday with Henry T. at the pond ... I hear the account of the man who lives in the wilderness of Maine with respect, but with despair.... Henry's hermit, 45 miles from the nearest house, [is not] important, until we know what he is now, what he thinks of it on his return, & after a year. Perhaps he has found it foolish & wasteful to spend a tenth or a twentieth of his active life with a muskrat & fried fishes.

My dear Henry,

A frog was made to live in a swamp, but a man was not made to live in a swamp. Yours ever,

R.

HERMITS



One of the children of [Alexander William Doniphan](#) had already died from accidentally ingesting a poison. The other of his children, 17-year-old Alexander William Doniphan, Jr., a student at Bethany College in West Virginia, at this point drowned in a flood-swollen river.

John Mitchel, who after his fight with the Catholic hierarchy in New-York had relocated to Knoxville, Tennessee where he had tried to become a farmer and had then begun a newspaper named the [Southern Citizen](#), was admitted to the Montgomery Commercial Convention. He was admitted over the objection of Edmund Ruffin, apparently because Ruffin had encountered Mitchel only as a Northerner and had not yet been made sufficiently aware of this [Irish](#) gentleman's one redeeming feature, his intense racism.)



According to Noel Ignatiev's **HOW THE IRISH BECAME WHITE**, "To be acknowledged as white, it was not enough for the Irish to have a competitive advantage over Afro-Americans in the labor market; in order for them to avoid the taint of blackness it was necessary that no Negro be allowed to work in occupations where Irish were to be found."



IRISH PHYSIOGNOMY.

According to the jokes that were going the rounds in those days among non-Irish white racists (the bulk of the population, actually), the Irish were "Negroes turned inside out" while the American free blacks were "smoked Irish."

It has been well said, that inside the charmed Caucasian chalk circle it is the sum of what you are not -not Indian, not Negro, not a Jew, not Irish, etc.- that make you what you are. And, that's as true now as it was then.



1859

Publication of the anonymous volume POPE OR PRESIDENT? STARTLING DISCOVERIES OF ROMANISM AS REVEALED BY ITS OWN WRITERS.

SURVEY OF AMERICAN ANTI-CATHOLICISM

In the Eliot Public School in [Boston](#)'s North End, a [Catholic](#) student, required to recite the Ten Commandments as per the King James translation of the BIBLE,¹¹⁸ caused a furor by refusing his teacher's demand. The teacher of course punished this student, the known ringleader of a group of students who had sadly fallen under the influence of one Father John Wiget, a parish priest. After about half an hour of being struck across the palm with a rattan cane, young Thomas Wall found that he had become able to read from the King James BIBLE — but on the following day some 300 [Irish](#) children would be truant.

English landlords in [Ireland](#) tended to prefer Irish tenants over English tenants because the Irish tenants were more profitable. An English tenant needed to be negotiated with —and your mileage might vary— whereas under the standing regulations an [Irish Catholic](#) tenant could be forced to pay as rent, hands down, a staggering standard 1/4th of his annual crop — and that's just the way it had to be.

118. The [Catholic](#) and Protestant translations of the commandments differ in significant details, such as in their numbering, and both differ substantially from Jewish interpretations, a Jewish reading of "Thou shalt not steal," for instance, being that this one did not originally have to do with the theft of objects, which was covered adequately under "coveting one's neighbor's possessions," but dealt instead probably with such activities as kidnapping.

[Thomas Chandler Haliburton](#) was elected the Member of Parliament for Launceston, Cornwall as a member of the Tory minority.



Robert Stephenson engineered the Victoria Bridge over the St. Lawrence waterway at Montréal, at 1,668 yards the longest in the world. It was a tubular structure similar to the Conway and the Britannia bridges, and carried the Grand Trunk railway of Canada.¹¹⁹ Workers on this bridge would go on strike until it was relocated to avoid a shoreside pit full of human bodies, [Irish](#) victims of the great migration thrown off the [famine](#) ships upon their arrival in the New World, victims of a euphemism known as “ship fever” which had claimed a very

119. Also, in this year, over the Tamar River in southwest England, the Royal Albert Bridge by Isambard Kingdom Brunel, completed after his death.

significant %age of those emigrating from Ireland.¹²⁰



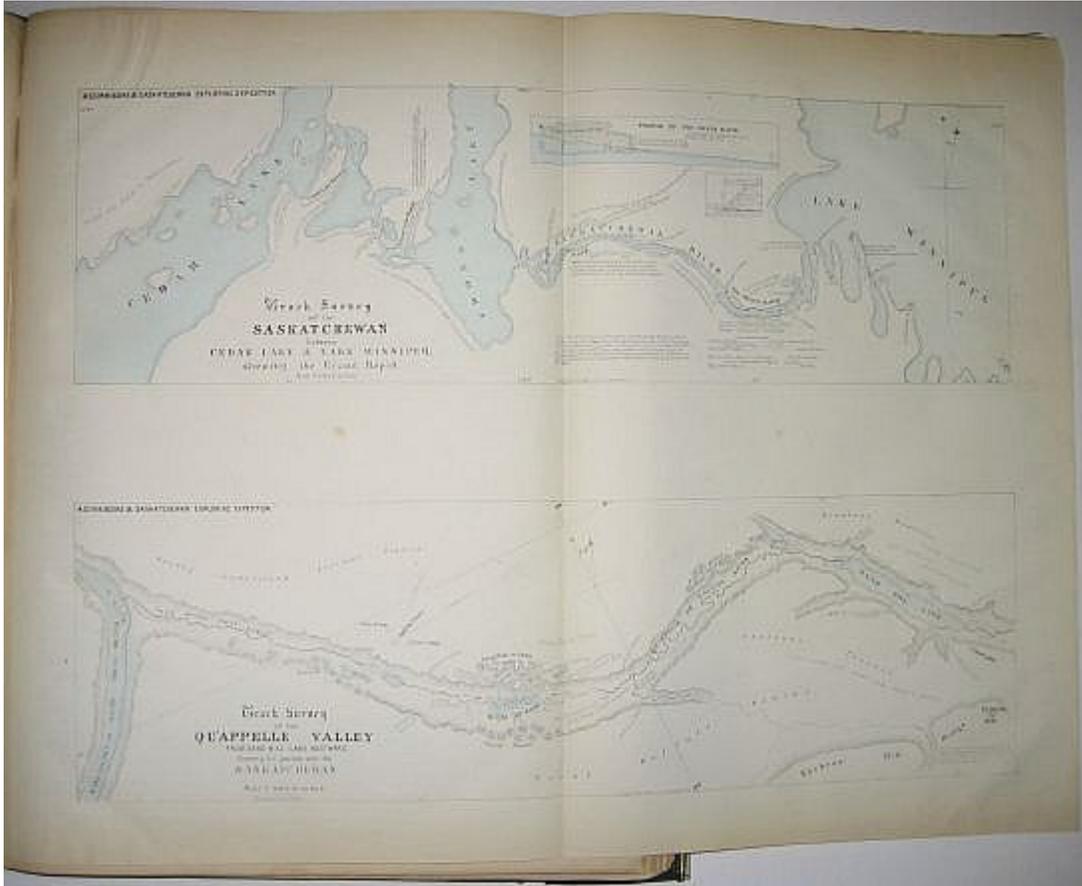
Professor [Henry Youle Hind](#) attempted but failed to persuade the British government to finance an expedition into the northwest.

NORTH-WEST TERRITORY. REPORTS OF PROGRESS; TOGETHER WITH A PRELIMINARY AND GENERAL REPORT ON THE ASSINIBOINE AND SASKATCHEWAN EXPLORING EXPEDITION, MADE UNDER INSTRUCTIONS FROM THE PROVINCIAL SECRETARY, CANADA, BY [HENRY YOULE HIND](#), M.A. ... PRINTED BY ORDER OF THE LEGISLATIVE ASSEMBLY. (Toronto: Printed by J. Lovell).

REPORTS OF PROGRESS
REPORTS OF PROGRESS

120. Canadian historians have been generally uninterested in these bodies because, although the represented emigrants toward Canada, they did not represent immigrants into Canada. Some bodies just “slipped through the cracks” or “fell between chairs” at the port. Some thousands of bodies, stacked up like unclaimed luggage after an air disaster.

Hind's reports would be in the personal library of Franklin Benjamin Sanborn and would be consulted by Henry Thoreau in 1860. Thoreau would copy some of the information into his 2d Commonplace Book and his Indian Notebook #12.



Hind's preliminary sketches indicate contributions made by native or half-breed American guides (although,

of course, his published materials offer no hint of such assistance).



HDT

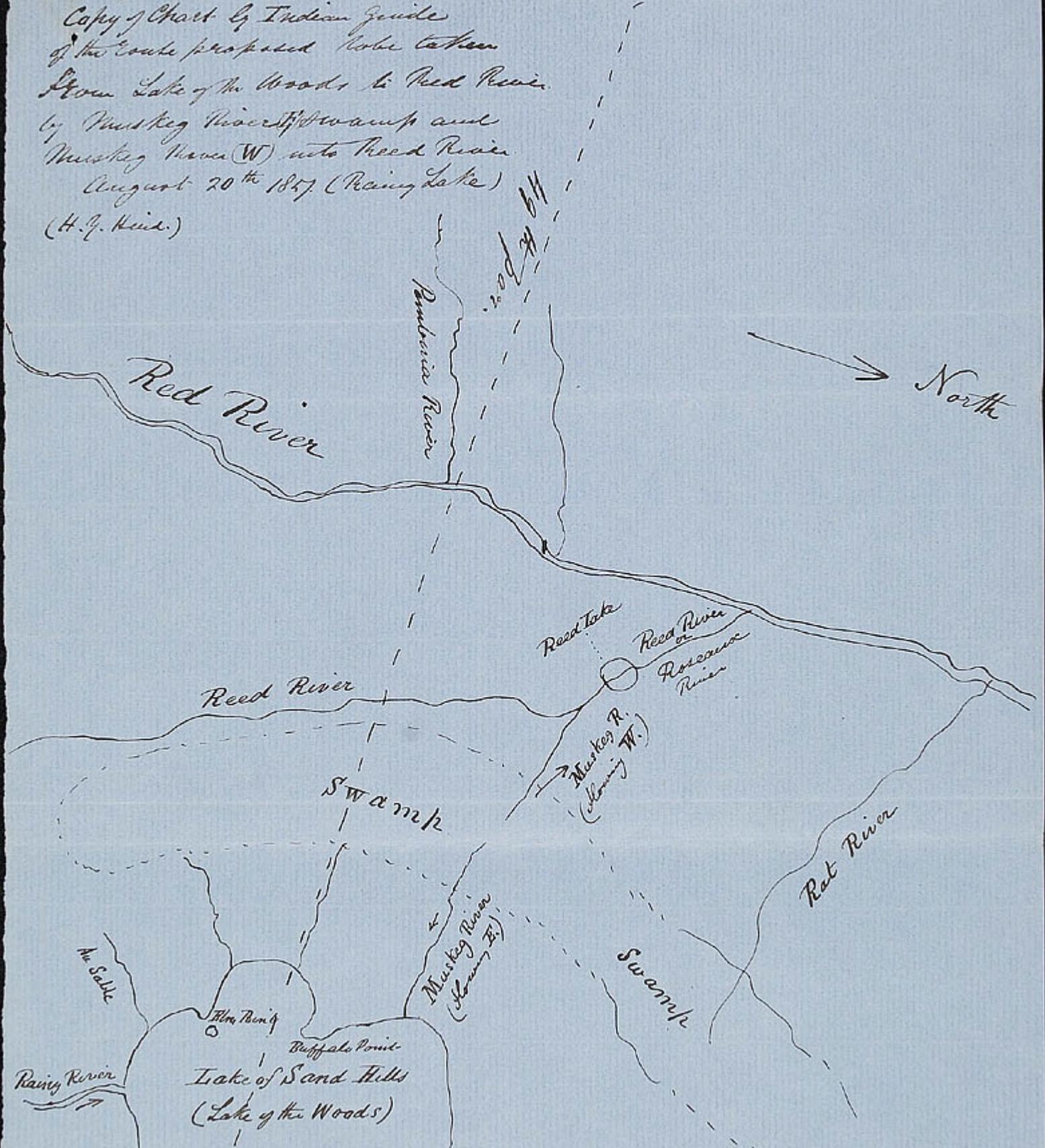
WHAT?

INDEX

IRELAND

IRELAND

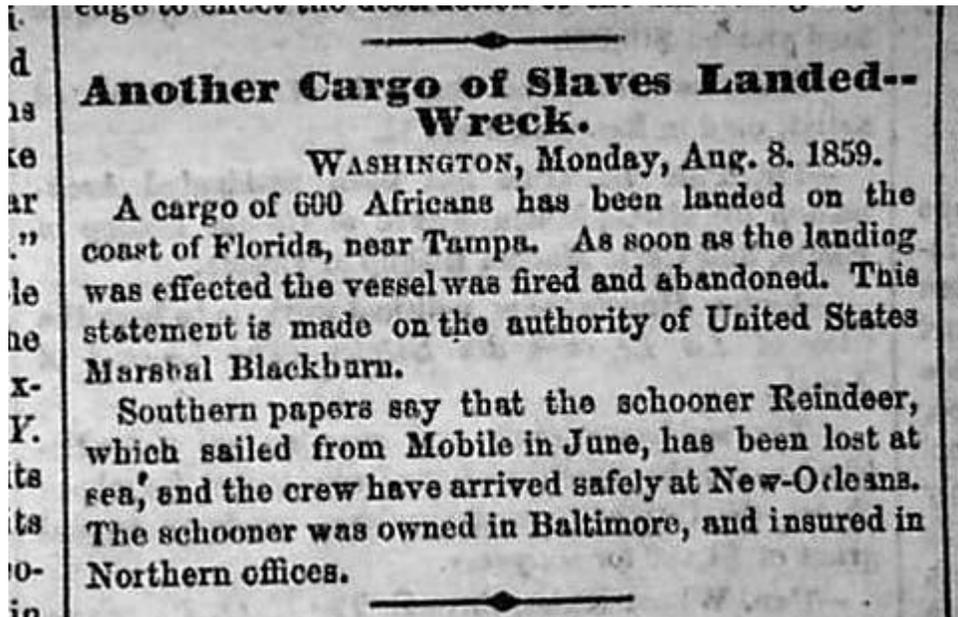
Copy of Chart by Indian guide
 of the route proposed to be taken
 from Lake of the Woods to Red River
 by Muskeg River & Swamp and
 Muskeg River (W) into Red River
 August 20th 1857 (Rising Lake)
 (H. J. Kirk.)



August 9, day: Edmund Ruffin sadly noted that the new racist newspaper Southern Citizen had failed and that his new Irish friend, the editor John Mitchel, was leaving Knoxville, Tennessee.



An interesting report about the vicissitudes of the international slave trade was appearing in American newspapers:



August 9. I see under the railroad bridge a mass of meadow which lodged there last spring, not revealed till this low water, and this is now dense with a thrifty growth of bulrushes.

Minott says that some used to wonder much at the windings of the Mill Brook and could not succeed in accounting for them, but his Uncle Ben Prescott settled the difficulty by saying that a great eel came out of Flint's Pond and rooted its way through to the river and so made the channel of the Mill Brook.

Minott says that he can remember when (it may be forty or fifty years ago) the Great Meadows were so dry one year that, they having got off all the grass and cut it quite smoothly, they talked seriously of having a regimental muster there. He assured me it would have been a good place, for the grass was cut smooth, and the earth was baked so hard that you could ride in a carriage right through the middle from the west end clear to Neck. Cannon could have been dragged about there perfectly well. I was thinking it would be rather tussocky ground for soldiers to wheel and manoeuvre on, and rather damp to camp on, but he declared not. This appeared to be good evidence for the river meadow proprietors. But when I asked him if he thought the meadows were more wet now than fifty years ago, he answered that he did "not think they were," nor the grass any poorer. As he remembered, in one of those years, not far from the dry one referred to, there came a rain in August, when the meadows were partly cut, which raised the water so that it floated off what was left cut and went over the tops of the standing grass, and you could have gone all over the meadows in a boat, and he saw there on the meadows such an immense swarm of sea-birds of various kinds—peeps, plover, yellow-legs, etc.—as he never saw before nor since. He thinks he saw so many in one flock as could not have been packed into his kitchen. He had never



IRELAND

IRELAND

seen anything at all like it but once since, and that was the day after he had been to a muster with his company at Waltham –when he was a young man– and had saved the greater part of his allowance of powder on the field. The next day, after getting home, the yellow-legs were so thick on the Mill Brook meadows that he killed a bushel of them.

I saw the tortoises shedding their scales a week ago. Many of the scales two-thirds off, turned up all around.

1860

Frederick Douglass was not being overly impressed by the new Republican Party and its reliance upon the thinking of Hinton Rowan Helper. In a letter to his “British Anti-Slavery Friends” in this year, he explained that in the USA these Republicans were “only negatively anti-slavery.” He specified to them precisely what he meant by such a strange locution:

It is opposed to the political power of slavery, rather than to slavery itself.

Douglass was registering the Irish [Catholic](#) American hatred of American blacks, especially the ones who were free, and as one might expect, he was responding in kind:

Irish Catholics, and especially Irish Americans, are not simply ignored or critiqued, they are systematically cast out of Douglass’s circle.

– Richard Hardack, “The Slavery of Romanism: The Casting Out of the Irish in the Work of Frederick Douglass,” page 116, LIBERATING SOJOURN

His rhetoric was full of [drunken Irish](#), usually caught in the act of voting while needing to be propped up by two able-bodied helpers, but that wasn’t the worst of it for Douglass was not merely a victim of but also a master at racist rhetoric:

[W]e want no black Ireland in America. We want no aggrieved class.

[T]hese people lacked only a black skin and wooly hair, to complete their likeness to the plantation Negro. The open, uneducated mouth, ..., [etc., etc.]

November: When a band of Pinal Apaches raided the cattle ranch of John Ward near Fort Buchanan AZ, kidnapping his stepson and running off with the cattle, and Ward took the news of this to the fort, for some unknown reason he informed its commander falsely that the raid had been conducted by Cochise, and that he had been leading a band of not Pinal Apaches but Chiricahua Apaches.

So, do you have any clue, what was going on in this guy’s head?

Charles Spencer, a Mississippian who was in the North as an observer of its political climate shortly after the election of Lincoln as President, reported back to the white people of Mississippi that as slaveholders they could “safely rely on” immigrants from [Ireland](#) in New-York to “hate the [African-American] as they do the devil.”



1861

The [Irish](#) population had fallen from 8,175,124 as of 1841 to some 5,800,000 at this point, due to the [Irish Potato Famine](#) and the accompanying epidemic and emigration.

Population Trends

	England / Wales	Ireland
1821	12,000,000	6,800,000
1831	13,900,000	7,770,000
1841	15,920,000	8,180,000
1845	about 16,700,000	about 8,300,000 (the year of the blight, to be followed by famine and then by fever and emigration)
1851	17,930,000	6,550,000
1861	20,070,000	5,800,000
1871	31,629,299	5,410,000
1881	35,026,108	5,170,000

The poor whites of the American South were in a peculiar psychic position carefully calculated to render it impossible for them ever to make common cause with their fellows being likewise exploited:

Unlike the Protestant tenant in [Ulster](#), or the homesteader in the West, or the skilled craftsman in industry, the intermediate status of the poor whites hung by a single thread: the [enslavement](#) of the Negro and the concomitant fact of their own non-slave status. That did, of course, carry the privileges of keeping weapons, marrying, moving about freely in the public domain, becoming literate if they could, voting at elections, and the male white privilege of assuming familiarity with Negro females; but that all meant nothing in the way of property status or economic security. As one eastern Virginia plantation owner, "Civis," wrote of most of the poor whites in his area of the country, they had "little but their complexion to console them for being born into a higher caste." Yet that one tie bound them to the plantation owners like hoops of steel, and made them "always ready to respond to any call of race prejudice, [so that they] voted with the planter, though the economic interests of the two parties of white men were as separate as the poles." Because of this about one million Southern poor whites marched off to a war from which more than one out of four would not return. Those who did return found that the very foundation of their social status had been blasted away: the Negro was free,

too. 



According to Noel Ignatiev's **HOW THE IRISH BECAME WHITE**, "To be acknowledged as white, it was not enough for the Irish to have a competitive advantage over Afro-Americans in the labor market; in order for them to avoid the taint of blackness it was necessary that no Negro be allowed to work in occupations where Irish were to be found."



IRISH PHYSIOGNOMY.

According to the jokes that were going the rounds in those days among non-Irish white racists (the bulk of the population, actually), the Irish were "Negroes turned inside out" while the American free blacks were "smoked Irish."

It has been well said, that inside the charmed Caucasian chalk circle it is the sum of what you are not -not Indian, not Negro, not a Jew, not Irish, etc.- that make you what you are. And, that's as true now as it was then.

January 7, Monday: [Henry Thoreau](#) made no entry in his journal.

Constitution of Alabama.

READ THE FULL TEXT

The Mayor of New-York, Fernando Wood, a Democrat who well knew of the "common sympathy" between the [Irish](#)-Americans he represented and the [slaveholders](#) of America, proposed in effect that the island of Manhattan secede from the continent, no longer consider itself to be a part of the United States of America.

Representative Etheridge offered a resolution to the US House of Representatives.

§ 5. The migration or importation of persons held to service or labor for life, or a term of years, into any of the States, or the Territories belonging to the United States, is perpetually prohibited; and Congress shall pass all laws necessary to make said prohibition effective (CONGRESSIONAL GLOBE, 36th Congress, 2d session, page 279).

INTERNATIONAL SLAVE TRADE

[Thoreau](#) was being written to by L.L. & C.H. Smith in New-York.

New York Jany 7 1861

Mr H.D. Thoreau

Dear Sir, We Enclose herein our note for \$100 @ 3 months,
for last 100 lbs ~~Please be~~

Respy

[L.L.H.] Smith

January 15, Tuesday: Continuing the anti-black agitation in New-York, there was at Brooks Hall a mass meeting of white men responding to the call "Workingmen Arouse!" This functionaries at this event were predominately [Irish](#)-American. A primary organizer had been the US Marshal Isaiah Rynders, the man who had helped a convicted [slave](#)-trader to effect his escape from New-York. Another organizer was R.G. Horton, who in November 1864 would conspire at a Confederate seizure of the city. In the course of this mass meeting, the Republican Party was denounced as "the black Republican Party," and was accused of attempting to overthrow the Constitution of the United States of America. The evidence for this accusation was that this political party was attempting "to reduce white men to a forbidden level with Negroes."

A motion was made on affidavit in the Court of Queen's Bench, Westminster Hall, for the issuance of a writ of *Habeas Corpus* for the production of the person of [John Anderson](#) of Toronto in that Court.

Said writ was duly granted. Extradition wasn't going to happen. Anderson was not going to be roasted alive over a slow fire by the white men of Arkansas.



The report that follows, although it claims to be accurate, also claims to have been abridged:

COURT OF QUEEN'S BENCH WESTMINSTER, January 15th.
(Sitting in Banco before Lord Chief Justice COCKBURN,
and Justices CROMPTON, HILL, and BLACKBURN.)

EX PARTE ANDERSON.

Mr. EDWIN JAMES, Q.C. (with whom were Mr. Flood and Mr. G. Allan) moved for a writ of *habeas corpus*, to be directed to the Governor of the Province of Canada, to the Sheriff of Toronto, and the keeper of the gaol there, to bring up the body of one John Anderson, together with the cause of his detention.



Lord Chief Justice COCKBURN asked why the name of the Governor was introduced.

Mr. JAMES said the reason was because, in the St. Helena case, to which he should have to refer, the name of the Governor was introduced, as well as that of the keeper of the gaol. The affidavit on which the learned counsel moved was made by L.A. Chamerovzow, of No. 27, New Broad-street, in the city of London, Secretary of the *British and Foreign Anti-Slavery Society*. He stated that John Anderson, of the city of Toronto, in Her Majesty's Province of Canada, a British subject, domiciled there, was, as he verily believed, illegally detained in the criminal gaol of the said city there, against his will, not having been legally accused, or charged with, or legally tried, or sentenced for the commission of any crime, or for any offence against or recognized by the laws in force in the said Province, or in any other part of Her Majesty's dominions, or not being otherwise liable to be imprisoned or detained under, or by virtue of any such laws. The affidavit further stated, that the deponent verily believed, that unless a peremptory writ of *habeas corpus* should immediately issue by this honourable court, the life of the said John Anderson would be exposed to the greatest and to immediate danger. The learned counsel proceeded to observe, that in moving for this writ of *habeas corpus*, the persons for whom he appeared would have to satisfy the court that they had jurisdiction to issue this writ to the Province of Canada; and if he established that proposition, their Lordships would have no doubt that, under the pressing circumstances of the case, the writ ought to be directed to issue. The proposition for which he should contend was, that the Crown had power to issue the writ of *habeas corpus* into any part of Her Majesty's possessions. Canada was a part of the possessions of the British crown, and, in the language which had been adopted in these cases, Her Majesty had a right to have an account of the imprisonment of all her subjects in all her dominions. He contended that the court had as much right to issue this prerogative writ into Canada, as a possession of the British crown, as into the Isle of Wight or Yorkshire. These writs had gone to Calais, when a possession of the British crown, and also to Ireland, and he should contend that Canada stood in precisely the same position, as a possession of the British crown. Canada, which was a part of the continent of America, was colonized in the reign of James I., and the first charter was granted in the 13th of James I. At that time (and the expression was material) the whole of that portion of America was called "the Plantations," and the Board of Trade was called "the Board of Trade and Plantations." Canada belonged to the British crown till the year 1633, when it was ceded to France; and it was held by the crown of France till the year 1759, when it was retaken, and ceded to the British crown. The statute 14th George III. cap. 83, treated Canada as a colony in the possession of England.

Lord Chief Justice COCKBURN said that in the Lower Province of Canada the French law prevailed; but Toronto was an English colony in Upper Canada.



Mr. Justice HILL said the 8th section of the statute the 14th of George III. reserved civil matters for the old law; but, by the 11th section, the criminal law of England prevailed through the whole of Canada.

Mr. JAMES read an extract from the judgment delivered by Lord Denman in the case of the Canadian prisoners (9 A, and E., 782), where Lord Denman said –

The difficult questions that may arise, touching the enforcement in England of foreign laws, are excluded from this case entirely; for Upper Canada is neither a foreign state nor a colony with any peculiar customs. Here are no *mala prohibita* by virtue of arbitrary enactments; the relation of master and slave is not recognized as legal; but Acts of Parliament have declared that the law of England, and none other, shall there prevail.

By the 11th section of the statute the 14th of George III. cap. 34, the criminal law of England was in force through the whole of Canada, and, beyond all question, a British subject in Canada was within a portion of Her Majesty's dominions. The learned counsel contended that it was matter of right and clear law, that as soon as a country became a portion of Her Majesty's dominions, more especially if, like Canada, it became so by conquest or cession, that the writ of *habeas corpus* issued into it, upon the ground that Her Majesty had a right to know what had become of every one of her subjects. No instance could be found of the writ going into Canada, and therefore it was necessary to rely upon the argument byway of analogy, which empowered the court to issue the writ. That the writ lies and runs into every part of Her Majesty's dominions was laid down in *Bacon's Abridgement* – tit. *Habeas Corpus* (B) – in these terms:

2. To what places it may be granted. It hath been already observed that the writ of *habeas corpus* is a prerogative writ, and that, therefore, by the common law it lies to any part of the King's dominions; for the King ought to have an account why any of his subjects are imprisoned, and therefore no answer will satisfy the writ, but to return the cause with *paratum habea corpus*, &c. Hence it was holden that the writ lay to Calais at the time it was subject to the King of England.

Mr. James then referred to Cowle's case, in the 3rd vol. of *Burrows' Reports*, p. 834, where Lord Mansfield said:

Writs not ministerially directed (sometimes called prerogative writs, because they are supposed to issue on the part of the King), such as writs of *madamus*, prohibition, *habeas corpus*, *certiorari*, are restricted by no clause in the constitution given to Berwick: upon a proper case they may issue to every dominion of the Crown of England. There is no doubt of the power of this court where the place is under the subjection of the Crown of England; the only question is as to the propriety. To foreign dominions which belong to a Prince



who succeeds to the throne of England this court has no power to send any writ of any kind. We cannot send a *habeas corpus* to Scotland, or to the Electorate; but to Ireland, the Isle of Man, the Plantations, and (as since the loss of the duchy of Normandy they have been considered as annexed to the Crown in some respects) to Guernsey and Jersey we may, and formerly it lay to Calais, which was a conquest, and yielded to the Crown of England by the treaty of Bretigny.

Mr. JAMES said, that by the industry of his junior (Mr. Flood), he had copies of the writs which had been issued to Calais in 1387 and 1389. They might be seen in *Rymer's Foedera*, p. 15. In 1389 such a writ was issued by the House of Lords, sitting as a court of justice. The learned counsel relied strongly on the authority of Lord Mansfield, who said that the writ would issue to "every dominion of the Crown of England;" and that this court could send the writ to Ireland, to the Isle of Man, and to "the Plantations." He also referred to *Vattel's Law of Nations*, b. 1, chap. 18, p. 210, as an authority for the position, that where a nation took possession of a distant country, and settled in it, it became a part of the parent State; and to *Grotius de Jure Belli ac Pacis* b. 2, c. 9. to the same effect. He also referred to *Peere's Williams's Reports*, b. 2, pp. 74, 65, where it was said: -

Memorandum, the 9th of August, 1722. - It was said by the Master of the Rolls to have been determined by the Lords of the Privy Council, upon the appeal to the King in Council from the foreign Plantations, "That if there be a new and uninhabited country found out by British subjects, as the law is the birthright of every subject, so wherever they go they carry their laws with them, and therefore such new-found country is to be governed by the laws of England."

Mr. JAMES then referred to the case of "Reg v. Crawford" (13 Q. B., 613), which was an application for a writ of *habeas corpus ad subjiciendum* to the Isle of Man, and in which it was held that the writ would run into that island since the 5th of George III., by which the island was vested, in the Crown, and formed part of its dominions. The learned council also cited the case of "Campbell v. Hall," in *Cowper's Reports*, p. 204.

Mr. Justice CROMPTON thought the question was whether the courts in Westminster Hall had now a concurrent jurisdiction with the local Courts in granting this writ.

Lord Chief Justice COCKBURN said, that in the Berwick case, Berwick was not subject to the law of Scotland, and therefore there was no superior court which could send a *habeas corpus* to prevent an illegal imprisonment, unless this Court took upon itself jurisdiction. But was that the case in Canada?

Mr. JAMES said he did not dispute that Canada had both legislative and criminal jurisdiction; but his argument was, that the courts in England had a concurrent jurisdiction with the Courts in Canada. The present was not the case of a man who



had been tried in Canada, or who was under the sentence of a court which had power to sentence him, for the affidavit shewed that he had never been tried; and he contended that the mere institution of a local jurisdiction would not oust the Queen of the right which she had to ascertain whether any of her subjects were illegally imprisoned. In the case of the Isle of Man, there were local courts which had the power to issue writs of *habeas corpus*, and so also in the St. Helena case ("*Ex parte Lees, Ellis, Blackburn, and Ellis*, 28). In this latter case a writ of *habeas corpus* had been very recently granted, after a writ of error had issued.

Mr. Justice CROMPTON said he issued the writ as ancillary to the writ of error.

Mr. JAMES said, that if this court refused a writ of *habeas corpus*, the party had a right to go in succession to each of the superior courts; and if this court should refuse their writ, he would have a right to go to every court in Westminster-hall. He thought that was a strong argument to shew that this court had a concurrent jurisdiction with the Canadian courts.

Lord Chief Justice COCKBURN said the question was whether it was within the ambit of this court's jurisdiction, or whether the power of granting the writ was not vested by the Crown in another jurisdiction.

Mr. JAMES contended that the mere establishment of such a jurisdiction in a local court could not limit the rights of the Crown without the authority of an Act of Parliament.

Lord Chief Justice COCKBURN said that, by the conquest or session of Canada the law of England attached, and this court had the power to issue writs of *habeas corpus* into that country, unless the Crown had either expressly or by implication taken away that power. The question was, whether, by the establishment of a local judicature, and committing to it the duty of protecting the subject by issuing writs of *habeas corpus*, the Crown had not, by implication, taken away the jurisdiction of this court.

Mr. Justice CROMPTON said the Legislature might do that.

Mr. JAMES said it was open to a party in this country to apply for the writ of *habeas corpus* to any court of co-ordinate jurisdiction.

Mr. Justice HILL. – And also for a prohibition.

Mr. JAMES contended it was a common-law right of the subject to go to every tribunal for this writ, and *à fortiori*, the courts in this country would have a concurrent jurisdiction with Colonial courts, unless it was taken away by an Act of Parliament.

Lord Chief Justice COCKBURN asked whether the right to go to every one of the courts had not arisen from the Habeas Corpus Act?

Mr. JAMES contended it was by the common law, and all this court was asked to do was, not to interfere with any judgment, but to



grant a *habeas corpus* to liberate a man who was in illegal custody. He was not in custody under the commitment of any local court which had the power to try him; there was no judgment to set aside; but it was shewn to the court that he was detained for no crime cognizable by the law of England. The learned counsel then referred to Carus Wilson's case (7 Q. B., 984), in which the writ had issued in the Isle of Jersey; and then proceeded to argue that the case might arise when the courts in Canada might be unable to discharge their duties, as a reason why this Court should still retain the power of granting these writs.

Lord Chief Justice COCKBURN inquired, supposing the writ should go, what means had the Court of enforcing it?

Mr. JAMES said the Court could enforce the writ by attachment, but it could not be assumed that the Queen's writ would not be obeyed. The court would send its own officer to execute the writ. An application had been made to the local court for a writ of *habeas corpus*, and refused; and it was now shewn to this court that John Anderson, a British subject, was illegally detained in prison, having been guilty of no crime cognizable by the law of England. There were precedents for this application, and he confidently submitted the mere fact that there were other courts which had a concurrent jurisdiction would not deprive the applicant of that protection for which he now prayed the Court.

The learned counsel then handed in the affidavit upon which he moved, and which was in these terms:

IN THE QUEEN'S BENCH.

The affidavit of Louis Alexis Chamerovzow, of No. 27, New Broad-street, in the city of London, Secretary of the *British and Foreign Anti-Slavery Society*.

I say, 1. That John Anderson, of the city of Toronto, in Her Majesty's Province of Canada, a British subject domiciled there, now is, as I verily believe, illegally detained in the criminal gaol of the said city there, against his will, not having been legally accused, or charged with, or legally tried, or sentenced for the commission of any crime, or for any offence against, or recognized by the laws in force in the said province, or in any other part of Her Majesty's dominions, or not being otherwise liable to be imprisoned, or detained, under or by virtue of any such laws.

I verily believe, that unless a prematory writ of *habeas corpus* shall immediately issue by this honourable Court, the life of the said John Anderson is exposed to the greatest, and to immediate danger.

Their Lordships then retired to consider their decision.

During their Lordship's absence great interest was manifested by a large number of the bar, who were present, and their Lordship's return was waited for with the greatest anxiety. After a short absence, their Lordships returned and resumed their seats, and Lord Chief Justice COCKBURN said: We have



considered this matter, and the result of our anxious deliberation is, that *we are of opinion that the writ ought to issue*. We are, at the same time, sensible of the inconvenience that may result from the exercise of such a jurisdiction. We are quite sensible that it may be felt to be inconsistent with that higher degree of colonial independence, both legislative and judicial, which has happily been carried into effect in modern times. At the same time, in establishing local legislation and local judicial authority, the Legislature has not gone so far as expressly to abrogate any jurisdiction which the courts in Westminster Hall might possess with reference to the issuing of a writ of *habeas corpus* to any of Her Majesty's dominions; and we find that the existence of that jurisdiction in these courts has been asserted from the earliest times, and exercised down to the latest. We have it upon the authority of my Lord Coke, we have it upon the authority of my Lord Mansfield, we have it upon the authority of Mr. Justice Blackstone, and on the authority of *Bacon's Abridgement* – that these writs have been issued, and are to be issued, into all the dominions of the crown of England, wherever a subject of the crown is illegally imprisoned, and kept in custody; and not only have we these authorities in the shape of *dicta* of most eminent judges and afterwards of text writers, but we have the practical application of the doctrine in cases from the earliest period down to modern times. The more remarkable cases are the instances in which the writ of *habeas corpus* has issued into the Islands of Jersey and Man, and St. Helena: all this being in very modern times. Finding that upon these authorities it has been not only asserted as matters of doctrine, but carried into effect and execution as matter of practice; that even where there were local judicatures, and local legislatures, the writ of *habeas corpus* has been issued into these dominions of the crown, we feel that nothing short of legislative enactment, depriving the court of such a jurisdiction, would warrant us in omitting to carry it into effect, where we are called upon to do so for the protection of the personal liberty of the subject. It may be that the Legislature has thought proper, in its wisdom, to leave a concurrent jurisdiction between these courts and the colonial courts, as there has been, as very properly pointed out by Mr. James in his argument, between the different courts in Westminster Hall. We can only act on the authorities that have been brought before us, and we feel that we should not be doing that which it is our duty to do under the authority of the precedents to which our attention has been called, by refusing this writ; *therefore the writ must go*.

At the conclusion of the judgment there was a very general but suppressed expression of applause, and the countenances of all in court seemed lighted up with extreme pleasure at the result.
– Writ of *habeas corpus* granted.

After more than eight months in the Canadian pokey waiting to be burned to death over a slow fire in Arkansas, [John Anderson](#) was to be set free.



IRELAND

IRELAND

May 7, day: Tennessee seceded.

IRISH

The [Catholic](#) Archbishop of New-York, John Hughes, pledged to a Southern co-religionist his neutrality: he would neither encourage his “Catholics to take part in” the suppression of the insurrection of the South, nor advise them “not to do so.”

The Reverend [Moncure Daniel Conway](#) wrote to President Abraham Lincoln offering to the federal government precisely what Conway didn’t have: military intelligence about the territory surrounding his home plantation in Virginia. (If the President forwarded this goofball offer to the War Department, someone had enough military intelligence to ignore it.)¹²¹

[THOREAU MADE NO ENTRY IN HIS JOURNAL FOR 7 MAY]

121. In a curiously similar gesture, Elvis Presley would offer his services as a drug informant for the federal administration.

May 18: On this day and the following one, there was fighting at Sewell's Point.

This appeared in Punch:



Am I satyr or man?
Pray tell me who can,
And settle my place in the scale.
A man in ape's shape,
An anthropoid ape,
Or monkey deprived of his tail?
The Vestiges taught,
That all came from naught
By "development," so called, "progressive;"
That insects and worms
Assume higher forms
By modification excessive.
Then DARWIN set forth,
In a book of much worth,
The importance of "Nature's selection;"
How the struggle for life
Is a laudable strife,
And results in "specific distinction."
Let pigeons and doves
Select their own loves,
And grant them a million of ages,
Then doubtless you'll find
They've altered their kind,
And changed into prophets and sages....

EVOLUTION
RACE POLITICS
CHARLES DARWIN



June: While working as an apprentice at an [Irish](#) newspaper, [John Boyle O'Reilly](#) enrolled in the 11th Lancashire Rifle Volunteers. He would receive military training.

June 16, Sunday: "A.m., to Carver's Cave.... P.m. to w end of town." The St. Paul [Pioneer and Democrat](#) newspaper proclaimed:

HO! FOR THE PAYMENT! – Remember that the Frank Steele and Favorite leave for Red Wood, at 4 o'clock, on Monday afternoon, accompanied with the Great Western [German] Band, and a bevy of beautiful ladies and brave men.

At the United States Custom Office in the port of New-York, a black American had been hired. The newspaper of the Democratic Party, the [Leader](#), opinioned that if this sort of thing was allowed to go on, it was going to require "more than honied words" to appease "the entire race of white men," who were going to arise "in vindictive rebellion" against such offers of racial equality of economic opportunity.

Control of hiring at the United States Custom House was in the hands of the national government, and consequently most of the time in the hands of the Democrats. It was "the largest single federal office in the country and was the greatest source of patronage." The Collector "had at his disposal hundreds of relatively well-paying jobs which he could distribute to the advantage of the political party or faction he represented," and "[i]t was at the Custom House that the spoils system reached its highest form of development." The Custom House therefore offered an opportunity not only to build up the pro-slavery political machine; by strictly keeping employment at this government facility as a white-skin privilege, it effectively was a Northern bastion of the principle that the Negro had no job rights that a "white" person was bound to respect.

IRISH



October: This month's issue of [Harper's New Monthly Magazine](#).

CONSULT THIS ISSUE

The Catholic Archbishop of New-York, John Hughes, wrote to Simon Cameron, the Secretary of War, pointing out that if the purpose of this civil war was to abolish human [enslavement](#), this had best be maintained as a deep dark secret, because very clearly "among a certain class, it would make the business of recruiting slack indeed." He was pointing up, of course, the fact that to defeat the South the Secretary of War would need to be creating very large northern armies made up very predominately of recent [Irish](#)-American immigrants, and that these impoverished Irish-American immigrants were, almost to a man, just apeshit in their contempt for the American black. They simply were not going to fight for freedom, for someone else.



IRELAND

IRELAND

October 12, Saturday: The [Catholic](#) Archbishop of New-York, John Hughes, placed an editorial he himself had written in his “official organ,” the [Metropolitan Record](#). The article declared that although American Catholics would fight to preserve the federal union, they were not going to fight to end human [enslavement](#). Human enslavement existed by virtue of “Divine permission of God’s providence.” Not only was God in favor of slavery, God was in favor of the [international slave trade](#), a trade in human beings which was no “moral transgression of the law of God.” To the contrary, the good Archbishop pointed out, God wants us to be “humane masters” and God wants us to “take care of these unfortunate people.” Theologically, Hughes considered himself to be on very safe ground, as his God was a God who had condemned men to live by the sweat of their brow on account of the original sin of their ancestor Adam despite the fact that they themselves “had no part in the commission of original sin.” How could a God who very generally punished children for the sins of their parents be opposed in particular to the condition of enslavement being passed on from owned black parents to owned black children?

IRISH

November 10, Sunday: Funeral of Terence Bellew MacManus in Dublin.

IRELAND

November 27, Wednesday: Fernando Wood, Democratic Mayor of New-York, denounced the federal government for having provoked civil war.

IRISH



1862

John Percival the American war hero, AKA “Mad Jack” or “Roaring Jack,” died. Have you ever heard of him?

Charles Thomas Longley became Archbishop of Canterbury.

Dr. Robert Knox of Edinburgh¹²² again circulated the knowledge he had originated in 1850 in his THE RACES OF MEN: A FRAGMENT (this time under the title THE RACES OF MEN: A PHILOSOPHICAL ENQUIRY INTO THE INFLUENCE OF RACE OVER THE DESTINIES OF NATIONS), knowledge attained by the dissection of the purchased, hardly cold bodies of executed men of various races. “Race is everything,” he reiterated,

literature, science, art – in a word, civilization depends on it.

In order to hold at arm’s length any accusation that a portion of the misery in [Ireland](#) might be due to some measure of misrule on the part of England, the physician still hypothesized that:

[T]he source of all evil lies in **the race**, the Celtic race of Ireland. Look at Wales, look at Caledonia; it is ever the same. The race must be forced from the soil; by fair means, if possible; still they must leave.

For the animadversions to be found in this 1850/1862 treatise, Philip Curtin has recently awarded to Doctor Knox a title of sorts: “the father of English racism.”¹²³

RACISM

Who is our neighbor? –Dr. Knox asked. The wisdom he had to offer was that there is no point in trying to be a Good Samaritan to a person who is of dark race rather than of Saxon blood, as for instance a [Chinese](#):

Destined by the nature of their race to run, like all other animals, a certain limited course of existence, it matters little how their extinction is brought about.

He again recommended, for deployment on the white homefront, the teachings of [Jesus](#) on the mount, but abroad, he recommended for deployment the principles of Machiavelli. When [Emerson](#) had perused this

122. This is the same notorious physician whose repeated purchases of bodies for dissection had inspired William Burke and William Hare to lure into their Edinburgh boarding house, make drunk, and suffocate, some 15 persons in series in order to supply the ongoing market. He had managed due to his social position, despite the fact that he had been hanged in effigy by an indignant crowd outside his home, to evade formal prosecution. Eventually, this physician’s body would in its turn be dissected.
123. Curtin, Philip. THE IMAGE OF AFRICA. BRITISH IDEAS AND ACTION 1780-1850 (Madison WI: U of Wisconsin P, 1964, page 377). It is worth noting, however, that this title “the father of English racism” is a disputed title, for Paul Fryer, in STAYING POWER: THE HISTORY OF BLACK PEOPLE IN BRITAIN (London: Pluto P, 1984, page 70), has awarded it to Edward Long, the slavemaster who in 1774 had authored a racist HISTORY OF JAMAICA.



IRELAND

IRELAND

obviously self-serving scientism, he had discovered in Knox's pages not drivel but "pungent and unforgettable truths." However, there was a difference between Knox's approach and Emerson's: temperamentally the Sage of Concord was more inclined to praise the excellence of the fittest to survive, at least during these years of his life,¹²⁴ than he was to express contempt for the incompetence of our unfit inferiors such as the Mexicans whom we overrun

and it will in the course of ages be of small import
by what particular occasions and methods it was done.

And, by temperament, Emerson lovers down the decades have been inclined to overlook the fact that there is no practical difference between Emerson's praising the excellence of "the strong British race" as the fittest to survive and Knox's expressions of contempt for any group of colored pseudo-people which whom civilization could murder to dissect — as long as a culture-maven is legitimating this work, he or she is doing this work,

124. Later in life, the kindly [Emerson](#) grew noticeably less well-dispositioned toward the mass of humanity, when he discovered that the "calamity" was these "enormous populations, like moving cheese," the "guano-races" in regard to which "the worst of charity is, that the lives you are asked to preserve are not worth preserving."

he or she is a full-fledged co-conspirator in genocide.



Sue Petrovski <spetrovski@home.com> has pointed up the fact that although [Emerson](#) clearly had dementia of some form at the end of his life, this may well have been coloring some of his thinking far earlier, even as early as this period. In her years of activity with the Alzheimer's Association she has heard many caregivers say, "Well, s/he's been a little strange for a long time." Her experience has been that the late 50s is a common time for Early Onset Alzheimer's to begin. While the average length of life with Alzheimer's is about 8 to 10 years, her friend's mother lived 20 years with that attacking her sanity. She points out that "Paranoia, a suspicious nature, anger, and even an unprovoked dislike of someone once trusted by the patient is not uncommon." The disturbing elements that we find in this period, in Emerson's musings, may, if that is the case, be forgiven him.



IRELAND

IRELAND

January 18, day: [Waldo Emerson](#) delivered “American Civilization” at New Bedford, Massachusetts.

In New-York, the Metropolitan Record, the mouthpiece of American Catholicism, spoke on behalf of American “mechanics and labourers,” meaning of course **white** mechanics and laborers: the abolition of human [enslavement](#) would be “the worst evil that could befall them.” Why? Because “the influx of negro labor on the Northern market would reduce them to a condition worse than that of the pauperized operatives of Europe.”

IRISH



Our national birthday, the 4th of July: It was the 4th of July in the Year of Our Lord 1862, [Nathaniel Hawthorne](#)'s 58th birthday and our national birthday. The author had a piece currently appearing in The Atlantic Monthly. A pyrotechnic depiction of the battle between the *Monitor* and the *Merrimac* was taking place in New-York harbor. The wounded Colonel Daniel Butterfield lay on his cot and composed bugle calls on the backs of envelopes. One of the calls he developed was a new one to replace the old final call of the day, which had variously been known as “taps,” as “tattoo,” and as “lights out.” He was trying to make Taps be something that would bring comfort to soldiers who were physically exhausted, and peacefulness to those of troubled mind:

The music was beautiful on that still summer night and was heard beyond the limits of the Butterfield Brigade as it echoed through the valleys. The next morning, buglers from other Brigades came to visit and to inquire about the new Taps and how to sound it.

CELEBRATING OUR B-DAY

Nelson J. Waterbury, the head at this point of the Tammany Hall political organization and thus an enormously powerful American politician, declared at this point that the President of the United States of America would need to “set his foot firmly on abolitionism and crush it to pieces.” This would be essential to maintaining the fighting spirit of the Union armies. If there was one thing this civil war could not be about, it could not be about the freeing of America's [slaves](#). Don't even think of going there.

IRISH

In England, a famous river excursion was taking place. Charles Ludwidge Dodgson, a dean of Christ Church college in Oxford University, had taken the Liddell sisters, prepubescents, for a row on the river and was inventing a charming story which soon he would write down. Dodgson subscribed to the Victorian notion that prepubescent humans were purity incarnate and found their purity to be utterly compelling. He liked to take photographs of little girls with their clothes off, as such naked innocence was emblematic of this compelling purity. For unspecified reasons this dean soon would become a former dean and be more or less banned from the company of little girls.





IRELAND

IRELAND

July 26, day: In New-York, the Caucasian warned its readership of white workers that free black Americans were taking “their” jobs. A published letter on the subject demanded awakening and action in such an extreme manner as clearly to suborn race riot: “White Men! mechanics and workingmen of New York! how long is this state of things to exist? If you are asleep, awake! If awake, arouse! When aroused from your slumbers, act!” Of course, nothing would be done to suppress this protected freedom of speech –this white scream of “Fire” in a crowded theater– as the opinions being expressed were overwhelmingly powerful.

IRISH
SLAVERY

August: [Stephen Elliott](#) led a successful expedition against a Federal force on Pinckney island. He was also involved in the devising of floating torpedoes, with which they blew up a tender in St. Helena bay. He would be promoted to chief of artillery of the Third military district, including Beaufort.¹²⁵



During this month and the following one, in his deliberations leading up to his decision to issue an Emancipation Proclamation, a resistant Abraham Lincoln was bringing himself to “suppose” that if his staff of White House lawyers could compose such a proclamation bringing about a general [manumission](#) so that it could be considered merely a “a practical war measure,” that then, as Commander in Chief of the Armed Forces of the United States of America in the midst of this sectional conflict, he would possess adequate authority to issue such a piece of paper – but only, bear in mind, as “a practical war measure,” an interim solution, which after the cessation of hostilities inevitably would need to be superseded by one or another colonization scheme, as a final solution, that would create the necessary all-white America, freeing our nation

125. This is not the Professor [Stephen Elliott](#) of South Carolina whose botany textbook Henry Thoreau consulted, but his grandson.



October 5, day: There was fighting at Hatchie’s Bridge / Davis Bridge / Matamora.

In New-York, Archbishop Hughes placed a long editorial in his religious organ, the Metropolitan Record, condemning President Lincoln’s anticipated Emancipation Proclamation as little more than an attempt at highway robbery. Specifically, the Catholic argument was that to attempt to make a case that this civil war which was convulsing America was being caused by our institution of human enslavement would be like attempting to make a case that highway robbery was caused by travellers with cash in their pockets. Owning other people was one of the good thing of civilized life, equivalent to having coins to jingle in your pocket.

IRISH

October 9, day: In New-York, Richard O’Gorman, a prominent lawyer of Irish-American extraction, addressed the Democratic Union Association. Constitutionally, he opined, the federal government of the United States of America had no more authority to “alter the relation” between the slaveholder and his possessions, than it had to alter the familial relationship between parents and their children, or than it had to step between the husband and the wife.

October 12, day: In New-York, the headline “Archbishop Hughes’s Thunderbolt Against the Abolitionists” appeared in the Caucasian. This racist newspaper was republishing a long editorial written by the Archbishop for his religious organ, the Metropolitan Record, condemning President Lincoln’s anticipated Emancipation Proclamation.

SLAVERY
IRISH

December: In its support for the armies of the Union, William Lloyd Garrison’s Liberator was becoming more and more downright chauvinist –tendentiously ambiguous statements such as that “the true fight is only begun” – statements such as “Never was death more nobly laughed to scorn” (which would indicate were they to be taken with any seriousness that what soldiers were going out to the battlefields for was to be killed, rather than in order to kill others).

Irish Catholic Archbishop John Joseph Hughes warned Secretary of State William H. Seward in general terms without naming the names of any of the penitents, of the sort of talk that was going down in the confessionals of his Catholic churches in the city of New-York. Some of his confessors were commenting that “**their** fighting” was fighting that was “to be done in the streets of this city.” Very clearly, the federal government was being made aware of the anti-draft white race riots that were about to begin.

At the Gatling Gun Company factory in Indianapolis, Dr. Richard Jordan Gatling’s initial production run of 6 weapons of mass destruction were destroyed by fire. This was most unsettling for the good doctor, who had been able to persuade himself that by increasing the efficiency of war killing and thus making for himself a shit-pot full of money, he could decrease the war killing. Dr. Gatling would arrange for a 2d production run, of 13 of these weapons of mass destruction, to be manufactured at the Cincinnati Type Factory.

GATLING’S MACHINE GUN

1863

Completion of serial publication of William Allingham's verse novel LAURENCE BLOOMFIELD IN IRELAND, which dealt with land-relations in a manner sympathetic to the tenants, during the previous year and this year in Fraser's Magazine. His landlord hero, upon taking charge of his estate, dismissed his bailiff for cruelty and burned the bailiff's list of Ribbonmen, halting evictions and instituting fair dealing. Despite this fair treatment of the peasants, this kindly landlord was unable to prevent them from taking their revenge on the former bailiff. This novel, when it would be published in book form, would win him the appreciation of George Eliot, John Stuart Mill, and Ford Madox Brown.

The founding of the "Irish People" newspaper.

Upon his return to Ireland at the completion of his military service with the 11th Lancashire Rifle Volunteers, John Boyle O'Reilly enlisted with the 10th Hussars in Dublin.

July 13, Monday through July 16, Thursday: Antebellum white anti-slavery people were forced to have categorically excessive positive feelings for the American black as victim, because the race issue was so troublesome and dangerous that the only alternative attitude available to them would have been an unacceptably bitter resentment of American blacks in all their troublesomeness. In fact this submerged resentment did from time to time come to the surface, as in the New-York anti-draft riot of this summer, and ever and again would need to be pushed down into the cultural unconsciousness.

During this four-day period in steamy New-York, a largely Irish proslavery Copperhead mob attacked the Colored Orphan Asylum at 5th Avenue and 43d Street, driving the orphans into the street. One of the orphans, ten year old, by the name of Jane Barry, was killed when the rioters were heaving a bureau out of a window and by accident it landed on top of her.

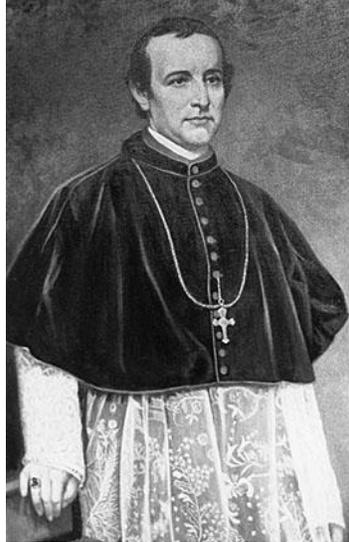
TIMELINE OF ACCIDENTS



During the four days in which this sort of thing would be going on, the mob would also lynch some citizens of African descent, lightening people up by hanging them from lamp-posts. Sometimes they lightened them up by cutting off their fingers and toes.

In regard to a Mr. William Jones whom they hanged from a tree on Clarkson Street, they lit a fire beneath him as he swung. After they had strongarmed a disabled black coachman by the name of Abraham Franklin from his home and strung him up in this manner, an 18-year-old Irishman by the name of Patrick Butler dragged the corpse of Abraham Franklin through the streets by the genitals, to general applause. The mob drove some

blacks into the river, where they drowned. The Roman [Catholic](#) bishop there, John Joseph Hughes, who had



been born in [Ireland](#) [IRELAND](#), helped bring this to a stop, but mostly, what brought it to a stop was the arrival of US Army troops still alive after an intense struggle which had taken place at Gettysburg PA (July 2d and 3d) to take military control over the streets of the city.¹²⁷ For these four days the city police made themselves very scarce –precisely as the white-dominated LAPD would make itself scarce while the 1992 riots in LA were starting, though perhaps for quite opposite tactical reasons– while these gangs of “outraged citizens” went into black neighborhoods and set them to the torch. The question of the day among these outraged whites was, “Is it not outrageous that Irish men are being drafted by the Union government in Washington DC, merely to send them off and endanger their precious lives in order to obtain freedom for these unworthy black people?” In other words, these race riots were draft riots, with anger directed against the distant government that was offering to let rich men escape the draft for a cash payment of \$300, and yet were redirected against innocent and helpless local people.

127. This factoid has been offered by some in a demonstration that it is not categorically correct to presume that during this period, due to the intensity of the economic competition, the American [Irish](#) were hopelessly hostile to American blacks on a racial basis. If it makes you feel better to suppose this, fine, but factor into your thinking that once upon a time during a correspondence with the convert to [Catholicism](#) [Orestes Augustus Brownson](#), Archbishop John Joseph Hughes declared himself as perplexed and frustrated at the insanity of a crusade to end human enslavement in America:

[S]ometimes it has appeared to us that abolitionism ... stands in need of a strait jacket and the humane protection of a lunatic asylum.

The complex of events would be described by [Herman Melville](#) in “The House-Top: A Night Piece”:

No sleep. The sultriness pervades the air
 And blinds the brain — a dense oppression, such
 As tawny tigers feel in matted shades,
 Vexing their blood and making apt for ravage.
 Beneath the stars the roofy desert spreads
 Vacant as Libya. All is hushed near by.
 Yet fitfully from far breaks a mixed surf
 Of muffled sound, the Atheist roar of riot.
 Yonder, where parching Sirius set in drought,
 Balefully glares red Arson — there — and there.
 The town is taken by its rats — ship-rats
 And rats of the wharves. All civil charms
 And priestly spells which late held hearts in awe —
 Fear-bound, subjected to a better sway
 Than sway of self; these like a dream dissolve
 And man rebounds whole aeons back in nature.
 Hail to the low dull rumble, dull and dead,
 And ponderous drag that jars the wall.
 Wise Draco comes, deep in the midnight roll
 Of black artillery; he comes, though late;
 In code corroborating Calvin’s creed
 And cynic tyrannies of honest kings;
 He comes, nor parlies; and the Town, redeemed,
 Gives thanks devout; nor, being thankful, heeds
 The grimy slur on the Republic’s faith implied,
 Which holds that man is naturally good,
 And — more — is Nature’s Roman, never to be scourged.

The rioters, it would turn out, had been able to disrupt police communications merely by clipping single telegraph lines. This would have the effect of forcing the police to become intensely aware of their need to establish multiple independent routes for information flow: redundancy. And it was this sort of concern for the reliability which comes only through redundancy which would eventually lead to Dr. Douglas C. Engelbart’s proposal in 1950 that we establish a national information network. Just as it was the police in 1863 that first grasped the need for local redundancy, it would be the military in 1950 that would first grasp the need for national redundancy. This was achieved by asking the military hard questions such as “How does the East Coast give orders to the West Coast after Castro has taken out the Midwest?” and the result would be an item in the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology, the military ARPAnet of 1969.



Commenting on the Scorsese movie “Gangs of New York”:
 “In my own research of New York history, through first-person accounts and newspaper reports, I have found that our past was often at least as violent and squalid, if not more so, than the movie depicts.”



— Kevin Baker

Eric Foner refers to this event as “the largest civil insurrection in American history other than the South’s rebellion. Nevertheless it has been the sort of non-event which Mary McCarthy, writing in 1946, would term, like [Hiroshima](#) and [Nagasaki](#), the phenomenon of the “hole in human history.” There is such a hole in human history, it would seem, at every point at which an atrocity has been committed by some group which then “won.” —For instance, the hole in Concord history which resulted from the racial mass murder on the watershed of Walden Pond as of the Massachusetts race war in 1675-1676.—For instance, the hole in human history which resulted from the use of Christian Dakota as hostages during this race war of 1863. Writing thirty years after the fact of Hiroshima and Nagasaki, Ralph Lapp, who had worked on the A-bomb, would ask “If the memory of things is to deter, where is that memory?” He would add that “Hiroshima has been taken out of the American conscience, eviscerated, extirpated.” We might easily say “The New-York draft riot of 1863 has been taken out of the American conscience, eviscerated, extirpated.”

Speaking of holes in American history, one hole was left when the bulk of the private papers of Friend [Isaac T. Hopper](#) were destroyed in the sacking and torching of the home of his daughter Abby Hopper Gibbons. The home was known to the Copperhead rioters to have been one that had housed antislavery activists. Abby herself was not endangered by the proslavery New-York rioters because at the time she was nursing wounded at the front. However, we have been forced to reconstruct the detail of Friend Hopper's life out of what Lydia Maria Child had included in her 1853 biography of him.¹²⁸

Here are these New-York draft riots, as they would be described in Frederick Douglass's 1893 LIFE AND TIMES:

This [race prejudice] was especially true of New York, where there was a large Irish population. The attempt to enforce the draft in that city was met by mobs, riot, and bloodshed ... the Irish began to hang, stab, and murder the negroes in New York.

Douglass had come to detest the American Irish and lower-class [Catholics](#) in general. At one point he would become reflective, attempting to figure out why it was that these marginal whites were "among our bitterest persecutors." Here is his rumination, in which, to put the matter in the vernacular, his concept was simply that what had been going around had been coming around:

It is said that a negro always makes the most cruel negro driver.... The Irishman has been persecuted for his religion about as rigorously as the black man has been for his color.

* * *

They [the immigrant Irish, arriving as foreigners] are taught to believe that he [the native-born American negroes] eats the bread that belongs to them.

What Douglass had to say to Ireland in 1893, by way of amelioration of this hostile standoff, was utterly blunt and hostile:

[S]end no more such children here.

128. [Lydia Maria Child](#). [ISAAC T. HOPPER](#): A TRUE LIFE (Boston: Jewett)



A TRUE LIFE



IRELAND

IRELAND

(For background, on the following screens appears the article “The Conscription a Great National Benefit” as it was printed on this day in [The New-York Times](#).)

The New York Times
"May you live in interesting times."



The National Enrollment Act, the enforcement of which was commenced in this City on Saturday, will be carried into execution until the quota of the State of New York and of every State in the Union shall be raised and in the field. It may not be necessary that a man of those drafted shall ever go into line of battle during this war. Yet it is a national blessing that the Conscription has been imposed. It is a matter of prime concern that it should now be settled, once for all, whether this Government is or is not strong enough to compel military service in its defence. More than any other one thing, this will determine our durability as a Republic and our formidableness as a nation. Once establish that not only the property, but the personal military service of every able-bodied citizen is a the command of the national authorities, constitutionally exercised, and both successful rebellion and successful invasion are at once made impossible for all time to come. From that time it will be set down as a known fact that the United States is the most solidly based Government on the face of the earth.

The standing reproach against the Republican form of government hitherto has been, that its superior freedom was obtained at the expense of its security. It has been deemed a very comfortable sort of Government for fair weather, but quite unfit for a storm. A Federal Republic, made up like ours of distinct States, has been considered particularly weak. Every philosophical writer who has treated of our institutions, has put his finger upon the weakness of the central authority as the special reason for doubting their perpetuity. De Tocqueville himself, much as he admired our constitutional system, did not hesitate to say, "It appears to me unquestionable that if any portion of the Union seriously desired to separate itself from the other States, they would not be able, nor indeed would they attempt, to prevent it." and to illustrate the helplessness of the federal authority, he cites from a letter of Jefferson's to Lafayette the statement that, "during the [War of 1812](#), four of the Eastern States were only attached to the Union like so many inanimate bodies to living men." Everybody knows that one of the chief embarrassments of that war was the unwillingness of some of the State authorities to surrender the control of their military forces to the Federal Executive. Another of these embarrassments was the great difficulty of keeping the armies up to the necessary figure, notwithstanding extraordinary bounties for the encouragement of the enlistments. The Secretary of War, at that period, in his strait for soldiers, proposed a Conscription system, but it was deemed by Congress dangerous and impracticable, and hardly obtained a hearing.

In fact, up to the last year the popular mind had scarcely bethought itself for a moment that the power



of an unlimited Conscription was, with the sanction of Congress, one of the living powers of the government in time of war. The general notion was that Conscription was a feature that belonged exclusively to despotic Governments, and that the American reliance could only be upon volunteered effort, as prompted by patriotic feeling or pecuniary inducements. It was not until the second year of this terrible rebellion that the public mind began seriously to question whether it would answer to depend entirely upon these precarious stimulants; and even then it began to question only in a whisper. Even the boldest shrank; for they well understood how quickly the factious enemies of the Government would seize upon the old hated word Conscription, and do their best with it to make the war itself odious. But as the war lingered on without result, the Government gradually braced itself up to the responsibility of demanding under the mild name of a National Enrollment bill, what was in reality nothing less than a Conscription law on the European model. Congress, after deliberation, framed and passed such a law. The great practical question now to be determined is whether such a law can be sustained or not in other words, whether this American Republic has or has not the plenary power of its own defence which is possessed by a European monarchy.

For a time after the act was passed, the chiefs of faction were free in their threats that any attempt to carry it out should be resisted by force and arms. In some few localities they succeeded in working up popular passion against its first processes, even to a fighting place; but it was very quickly made apparent that the people at large would never sustain any such resort to violence, and that it was worse than idle to contend thus with the Government. Since then, the talk of these factionists on the platform and in their newspaper organs has been that the appeal shall be carried to the ballot-box. They flatter themselves that, by working diligently upon the basest motives and meanest prejudices, they can secure popular majorities that will force a repeal of the measure, or at least deter the Government from carrying it out to its complete execution.

Well, let them do their worst. We want it determined whether the majority of the American people can be induced by any such influences to abandon the cause of their country. So far as the Government itself is concerned, we have no fear that it will fail to do its duty. Every day adds new evidence that it means to go straight on to the complete enforcement of the act. The world will now have a better chance to judge than ever before what the real strength of this Republic is. And unless we greatly mistake, it will be seen that an overwhelming majority of the people will stand by the Government in this exercise of the mightiest of its



IRELAND

IRELAND

powers; and will show a proud satisfaction in demonstrating that freemen are as capable as subjects and serfs of abiding any needful requirements for the national safety. No people on the face of the earth have such reason to submit to the extremist sacrifices for the salvation of their Government; and, if conscription be necessary to replenish its struggling armies, no population, we undertake to say, has ever endured it with more patience or cheerfulness than the American people will now do. The Government is the people's Government, and the people will never consent that their Government shall suffer in a critical hour for the want of a power which is not grudged even the worse Government when its existence is threatened. When it is once understood that our national authority has the right, under the Constitution, to every dollar and every right arm in the country for its protection, and that the great people recognize and stand by that right, thenceforward, for all time to come this Republic will command a respect, both at home and abroad, far beyond any ever accorded to it before. It will be a new and priceless security against all future rebellion and wanton foreign attack.



LABOR COMPETITION AND THE NEW YORK DRAFT RIOTS OF 1863

By Albon P. Man, Jr.

Journal of Negro History, Vol. XXXVI, No. 4, October 1951

The New York draft riots of July, 1863, had their origin largely in a fear of black labor competition which possessed the city's, Irish unskilled workers. Upon emancipation, they believed, great numbers of Negroes would cross the Mason-Dixon line, underbid them in the Northern labor market and deprive them of jobs. Similar fears helped produce mass anti-Negro violence in World Wars I and II, also periods of acute labor shortage. The movement of Negro strikebreakers into the East St. Louis, Illinois, area, for example, touched off the demonstrations which occurred there in July, 1917,¹²⁹ while the upgrading of a few Negro employees signalled the start of the ugly Philadelphia transit strike of August, 1944.¹³⁰

But the New York draft disturbances remain the bloodiest race riots of American history. Police figures on deaths among the white rioters ranged from 1,200 to 1,500, and it is impossible to know how many bodies of Negro victims of the lynch mobs were borne away by the waters on either side of Manhattan Island.¹³¹ Significantly, the Negro population of the metropolis dropped 20% between 1860 and 1865, declining from 12,472 to 9,945.¹³²

This article will seek to answer some of the more important questions bearing upon the white workers' dread of labor competition from contrabands: What predictions as to the consequences of emancipation were made by pro-slavery politicians and journalists between the campaign of 1860 and the sultry week of July 12, 1863? How did abolitionists and Republicans try to allay the fear stirred up in the minds of white workers by opponents of emancipation? Did former slaves within Union lines in the South really wish to go northward at that time? Was there any appreciable migration to the North? In addition, this article will examine the actual, rather than anticipated, labor competition between whites and Negroes in various occupations in New York, with special attention to the crucial longshore field and to the anti-Negro violence which marked the waterfront strikes of 1855 and 1863.¹³³ For that violence was to be repeated, intensified a thousandfold, in the draft riots immediately following the strikes of 1863.

At the outset, mention should be made of the fact that before the spurt in immigration in the decades of the forties and fifties, such occupations in New York as those of longshoremen, hod-carriers, brickmakers, whitewashers, coachmen, stablemen, porters, bootblacks, barbers, and waiters in hotels and

129. Arna Bontemps and Jack Conroy, *They Seek a City* (Garden City, 1945), pp. 125-131.

130. *New York Times*, August 2-11, 14-18, 1944.

131. William Osborn Stoddard, *The Volcano Under the City* (New York, 1887), p. 293; *New York Herald*, July 18, 1863.

132. United States Census Office, 8th Census, 1860; *Population of the United States in 1860* (Washington, 1864), pp. 335, 337.

133. For a preliminary but suggestive treatment of the subject of labor competition, see Williston H. Lofton, "Northern Labor and the Negro during the Civil War," *Journal of Negro History*, XXXIV (July, 1949), 251.



restaurants had been almost wholly in the hands of colored men.¹³⁴ Domestic maids, cooks, scullions, laundresses and seamstresses were generally colored women. They were secure in these types of employment and earned relatively good wages. But with the huge influx of white foreigners, particularly after the Irish famine of 1846, their position changed radically.

The unskilled Irish swarmed into the menial occupations which had been monopolized by the colored. Offering to work for any wages they could obtain, they reduced the Negroes' earnings drastically and deprived many of employment.¹³⁵

As Frederick Douglass wrote, admonishing Negroes to learn trades or perish: "Every hour sees the black man elbowed out of employment by some newly arrived emigrant whose hunger and whose color are thought to give him a better title to the place."¹³⁶ Thus the Irish themselves had earlier subjected Negroes to the same job rivalry that Democratic politicians and journalists prophesied would be offered to the Irish by former slaves from the South. To those dire predictions, especially as uttered during the election campaigns of 1860, 1861 and 1862 and after the Emancipation Proclamation and adoption of the draft act in March, 1863, we shall now turn.

At the Democratic rally on October 8, 1860, to ratify the coalition Douglas-Breckinridge-Bell slate of presidential electors in New York, James W. Gerard, prominent lawyer and candidate for Congress, ventured a typical prediction of intensified Negro-white labor competition in the event of emancipation.¹³⁷ He warned his listeners-above all, his "friends from Ireland" and immigrants from other countries-that the Republican party was an abolition party:

Abraham Lincoln, if honest to his party, means to do his best that the free men of the North shall make free the laboring population of the South. (Cries of "Never," and cheers.) ... I call upon all adopted citizens to stand up and vote against Abraham Lincoln, or you will have negro labor dragging you from your free labor.

Speaking again later in the month, Gerard returned to this theme, cautioning Irish and German laborers not to vote Republican lest in casting their ballots to exclude slavery, they "exclude bread from their own table."¹³⁸

Likewise, General Leslie Combs, of Kentucky, declared at a Democratic mass meeting in New York during the campaign of 1860 that if the slaves in the South were liberated, they would come North and take away the jobs of white longshoremen and other

134. The New Moral World (Owenite newspaper), June 29, 1844, in John R. Commons et al., A Documentary History of American Industrial Society (Cleveland, 1910-1911), IX, 60, 61; G. E. Haynes, The Negro at Work in New York City (New York, 1912), pp. 67, 68, 97; A.A. Payne, "The Negro in New York prior to 1860," Howard Review, I (June, 1923), 1-64; Sterling D. Spero and Abram L. Harris, The Black Worker (New York, 1931), pp. 12, 13.

135. J.H. Harmon, A.G. Lindsay and C.G. Woodson, The Negro as a Business Man (Washington, 1929), p. 4; Lindsay, "The Economic Condition of the Negroes of New York Prior to 1861," Journal of Negro History, VI (April, 1921), 193-196; Charles E. Wesley, Negro Labor in the United States, 1850-1925 (New York, 1927), pp. 75-77.

136. Quoted in Charles E. Wesley, Negro Labor in the United States, 1850-1925 (New York, 1927), pp. 61, 62.

137. Herald, October 9, 1860.

138. Herald, October 28, 1860.



laborers. He warned:

*Let the four millions of slaves in the South be set at liberty, and left to their own free will and desires, and we should very soon have, not the great conflict so long predicted between free labor and slave labor, but a terrible conflict between white labor and black labor. (Applause.) ... The unemployed slaves will be found among you in sufficient numbers to compete with you at your wharves and your docks, and in every branch of labor in which white people alone are now employed.*¹³⁹

Pro-South business houses, too, brought pressure to bear upon their employees to vote for the fusion Democratic ticket, to preserve themselves from Negro competition.¹⁴⁰

During the campaign of 1860, the virulently anti-Negro Herald also carried editorials foretelling catastrophe if Lincoln were elected. A wholesale exodus of four million Negroes from the South would occur. If they were anything like the fugitive slaves "of the most vicious and degraded, character" who had already emigrated to the North, it said on one occasion, they would refuse to work and would steal the fruits of Northern industry and burden Northern workers with taxes for their maintenance." The Herald did not hesitate to contradict itself in its arguments, however, for after dwelling one day upon the supposed laziness of freed Negroes, the tax burden for their support, and their criminal tendencies, on another day it would raise the spectre of job competition from apparently hard-working contrabands:

*Hundreds of thousands will emigrate to their friends - the republicans -- North, and be placed by them side by side in competition with white men. Are you ready to divide your patrimony with the negro? Are you ready to work with him in competition to work more than you do now for Less pay? If you are, vote for the republican candidate.*¹⁴¹

Similar to this was the final appeal of James Gordon Bennett, editor of the Herald, to Irish and German laborers on election day, 1860: "If Lincoln is elected to-day, you will have to compete with the labor of four million emancipated negroes.... The North will be flooded with free negroes, and the labor of the white man will be depreciated and degraded."¹⁴²

Even the surge of patriotism which swept the city immediately after the attack on Port Sumter did not delete from Democratic newspapers the theme of Negro labor competition upon emancipation.¹⁴³ It was reiterated by the demagogic Fernando Wood in campaigning for the office of mayor of New York in the fall of 1861. He charged that his Republican opponent was the candidate of a party which would fill regiments with Irish and German laborers and then bring Negroes North to take their jobs

139. Herald, October 25, 1860.

140. Basil Lea Lee, Discontent in New York City, 1861-1865 (Washington, 1943), p. 7.

141. Herald, October 1, 1860.

142. Herald, November 5, 1860.

143. Herald, November 6, 1860.



away.¹⁴⁴ Wood also used the inconsistent argument that the support of contraband paupers in the North would be a crushing financial burden.¹⁴⁵ He played upon fear of Negro labor competition most often in bidding for Irish votes.¹⁴⁶ In the mayoralty campaign of 1861 the Herald once more used its stock prediction of the displacement of white workers, notably the Irish, by black workers, should the Republicans prevail.¹⁴⁷

In the interval between the campaigns of 1861 and 1862, there were few allusions by politicians and press to the danger of Negro labor competition in the event of emancipation. But with the appearance of the preliminary proclamation of emancipation in September, 1862, and the Seymour Wadsworth contest for the New York governorship that year, the old warnings were re-echoed. George Francis Train, the Irish nationalist, said that the abolitionists were "combining to manacle the white man" and were engaged in a "conspiracy against the Irish," whom they sought to degrade by placing Negroes to work beside the¹⁴⁸ Another Irish-American leader, Richard O'Gorman, describing himself as "a sincere friend of the negro," spoke of the impolicy of freeing the black man from the civilizing restraints of servitude.¹⁴⁹ "May not these poor people, joying their newly acquired freedom, swarm on us here in the North?" he asked.

Congressman Samuel S. Cox, of Ohio, felt sure that New Yorkers would elect the Democratic candidate for Governor, Horatio Seymour, because "they would never consent to have negroes compete with them. "I Indeed, he suggested that when whites and freed Negroes clashed in New York's labor market, blood would flow and colored men would get the worst of it.¹⁵⁰ In his campaign pronouncements Seymour himself was more restrained in criticizing Lincoln's preliminary proclamation on the score of Negro labor competition.¹⁵¹ Of course, the Herald ran true to form editorials on the menace of Negro labor, addressed to Irish and German laborers. "The Irish and German immigrants, to say nothing of native laborers of the white race, must feel enraptured," Bennett wrote, "at the prospect of hordes of darkeys overrunning the Northern States and working for half wages, and thus ousting them from employment."¹⁵²

Promulgation of the Emancipation Proclamation on January 1, 1863, and adoption of the conscription act on March 3, 1863, caused a new outburst. The rabid New York Weekly Caucasian rejoiced that the Proclamation had led the Metropolitan Record, which had been the official organ of the [Catholic](#) Archbishop of New York, to oppose the war and asserted that its course was generally approved by Irish Americans, who did not relish the thought of having Negroes on their economic level.¹⁵³ The newly-formed Society for the Diffusion of Political Knowledge, an

144. Herald, April 20, 1861; Irish American, May 24, 1861.

145. Herald, November 28, 1861; New York Tribune, November 28, 1861; Lee, op. cit., p. 289.

146. Herald, November 30, 1861; Tribune, November 30, 1861.

147. Harper's Weekly, V (December 21, 1861), 802, 803.

148. Herald, October 20, 31, November 27, 28, 1861.

149. Herald, September 24, 1862; Tribune, October 2, 1862; Irish American, October 11, 1862.

150. Herald, November 8, 1862.

151. Herald, October 29, 1862.

152. Herald, October 30, 1862; Tribune, October 30, 1862.



anti-emancipation propaganda group in New York City, published as its first pamphlet a letter written by Henry Clay twenty years before, depicting a horrible doom for white labor in the North if slavery were abolished. As Orestes A. Brownson, one of the few leading anti-slavery Catholics, wrote, Democratic leaders and journalists in this period convinced the Irish that in resisting the draft they were simply refusing to fight for their own economic suicide.¹⁵⁴

How did Republicans and Abolitionists deal with these predictions of their opponents? In 1860 and 1861 they failed to answer them at all. In 1862, however, they began to grasp the fact that the labor competition argument was making a deep impression upon the working people of New York, particularly the Irish, and that it could no longer be allowed to go unchallenged. In fact, Horace Greeley declared on the eve of the election of 1862 that it was the most common argument advanced against the abolition of slavery.¹⁵⁵

From the summer of 1862 on, Greeley and other Republican and abolitionist leaders undertook to refute it on every possible occasion. Whatever Negroes had migrated to the North had done so to escape slavery, they said. Eliminate, slavery, and the movement northward would stop, the Negro having an exceptionally strong attachment to the locality in which he was born, according to General Hunter.¹⁵⁶ Furthermore, with the terror of the auction block removed, the colored population of the North would go south, as it was by nature better suited to the climate there and more adept at raising cotton, tobacco, rice and sugar than earning a living at other pursuits in the North. It was therefore clearly to the interest of white workers, including Irish laborers, to support emancipation.¹⁵⁷

This was the approach of James S. Wadsworth, in his message in October, 1862, accepting the Union party's nomination for Governor of New York and defending Lincoln's preliminary proclamation against the Negro labor competition arguments Daniel S. Dickinson, erstwhile Democratic leader, reasoned the same way, as did Secretary of War Stanton, Senator Charles Sumner, Governor John A. Andrew of Massachusetts, Major General Cassius M. Clay (who was most disturbed by the effect of the competition idea upon the Irish), and Robert Dale Owen.¹⁵⁸

Greeley also ridiculed the inconsistency of anti-emancipationists in contending that former slaves would work so hard and so cheaply that they would displace white men and then adding in the same breath that they would be indolent paupers whose upkeep would drain the public treasury.¹⁵⁹

In his extremely eloquent oration on the Emancipation

153. De Alva Stanwood Alexsinder, *Political History of the State of New York* (New York, 1906-1923), III, 27-29; Sidney D. Brummer, *Political History of New York State during the Period of the Civil War* (New York, 1911), pp. 238-240.

154. *Herald*, October 20, 1862; see also *Herald*, October 13, 21, November 1, 1862.

155. *New York Weekly Caucasian*, March 28, 1863.

156. *Society for the Diffusion of Political Knowledge, Papers* (New York, 1863), no. 1.

157. [Orestes Augustus Brownson](#), "Catholics and the Anti-draft Riots," [Brownson's Quarterly Review](#), Third New York Series, IV (October 1863), 401.

158. *Tribune*, November 5, 1862.

159. *Tribune*, August 4, 1862.



Proclamation, on February 6, 1863, at the Cooper Institute, Frederick Douglass similarly heaped scorn upon such logic.¹⁶⁰ Once Greeley was bold enough to declare that even if there were an influx of fugitives into the North, it would not injure white workers, because the normal labor force of the North had been depleted by the demands of the army and needed supplementing.¹⁶¹ The Negroes would produce as much as they would consume, he insisted, observing not very convincingly that they would, moreover, leave whites free to secure "higher, easier, better recompensed positions."¹⁶²

Lincoln himself took note of the Negro labor competition argument against the emancipation program in his message to Congress on December 1, 1862.¹⁶³ His answer was colonization: "Reduce the supply of black labor by colonizing the black laborers out of the country, and by precisely so much you increase the demand for, and the wages of, white labor." But Lincoln denied that even without the deportation of freed slaves there would be any mass migration northward and supplanting of white workers, since Negroes would no longer have to flee from bondage in the South.

Unfortunately, information on whether there was actually any movement of freed Negroes from the South to the Northeast is scanty, incidental and inconclusive.¹⁶⁴

There is a hint here and there buried in the fine print of a Civil War newspaper, a random suggestion in an obscure pamphlet, but no authoritative or extended treatment of this interesting problem. The Tribune would, at one time, admit unqualifiedly that Negroes were leaving the South in considerable numbers to escape slavery. "Were slavery dead tomorrow, the main current of negro migration would flow southward, not northward," wrote Greeley in January, 1863.¹⁶⁵ To the same effect he declared in March: "There is at present a very general exodus of poor people from the region cursed by the Slaveholders' Rebellion ... Black men are fleeing to escape from Slavery to traitors."¹⁶⁶ Yet within a month of making this last assertion he said of liberated slaves: "It is quite certain that up to this time many thousands have been liberated, but as far as we can learn, very few have come among us."¹⁶⁷ This, however, was contradicted in January 1863 by Fincher's Trades Review, which stated that a large number of colored persons had already reached the Northern states and that many of them were filling positions formerly occupied by white men. The leading labor paper of its time then

160. Harper's Weekly, VI (August 23, 1862), 530, 531; Tribune, August 28, November 5, 1862; January 12, March 23, April 16, 1863; R. Dale Owen, J. McKays and Samuel G. Howe, Preliminary and also the Final Report of the American Freedmen's Inquiry Commission. United States Congress. Senate Executive Documents, No. 53, 38th Cong., lot seas., p. 8, 1864.

161. Herald, October 6, 1862; Tribune, October 6, 23, 1862; Brummer, op. cit, pp. 238-240.

162. Tribune, October 7, 9, 22, November 24, December 5, 1862; Herald, October 8, 17, 1862.

163. Tribune, July 5, August 6, 1862; March 27, 1863.

164. Tribune, February 7, 1863; National Anti-Slavery Standard, February 14, 1863.

165. Tribune, October 17, 1862.

166. The idea of giving Negroes land confiscated from rebels was hailed by Greeley and Roscoe Conkling as removing the apprehension of white workers that the North would be swamped by an influx of freedmen. Tribune, February 12, March 21, 1863; Loyal National League, Opinions of Loyalists Concerning the Great Questions of the Times ... Mass Meeting on Union Square, New York, on the 11th of April, 1863 (New York, 1863), p. 96.

167. Carl Sandburg, Abraham Lincoln - the War Years (New York, 1941), I, 620, 621.



proceeded to demand that the government place restrictions on the ingress of emancipated slaves into the North.

It is doubtless true that by the summer of 1863 thousands of former slaves had left Missouri, Kentucky, Tennessee and Mississippi for Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Kansas and Minnesota, despite stringent laws passed by some midwestern states forbidding the immigration of contrabands lest whites be deprived of employment.¹⁶⁸ So many Negroes left Missouri, in fact, that it was predicted that crops would perish or remain undeveloped for want of labor.¹⁶⁹ The codes of these states which excluded former slaves but urgently needed agricultural workers to replace men serving in the army were hotly denounced by abolitionists as examples of the absurd lengths to which fear of Negro labor competition could carry white people.¹⁷⁰ But the opposition to emancipation could still point to the northward movement of Negroes in the midwest and predict a similar influx into New York and consequent unemployment for white men.¹⁷¹

Into the Middle Atlantic states only a negligible migration of freed Negroes took place. The demand for colored labor in Washington, D.C., and on Maryland plantations exceeded the supply.¹⁷² Three hundred contrabands did arrive in Washington in the summer of 1862 from various parts of Virginia, but the men among them were promptly hired about government hospitals and camps and on public works, while the women did washing for the soldiers.¹⁷³ The advent of a small number of contrabands in Chester County, Pennsylvania, however, did cause some excitement, which was reported in the New York press. False rumors arose that they were so numerous that they took work away from whites and accepted employment for ten cents a day. These statements led to assaults upon Negroes in Northern cities.¹⁷⁴ When about a hundred fugitives who came from the South by boat landed in Philadelphia in March, 1862, an immense crowd greeted them with shrieks of abuse.¹⁷⁵ There was probably a trickle of Negroes into New Jersey also, for anti-administration forces there called upon the legislature early in 1863 to bar former slaves from the state.¹⁷⁶

Some migration of Negroes to New York City did unquestionably occur, at least enough to give an appearance of validity to the predictions of politicians and press and the fear of the Irish proletariat regarding black labor competition.¹⁷⁷ Refugees may well have settled in the Five Points neighborhood, in close proximity to the Irish.¹⁷⁸ During the longshore strike a month

168. Woodson is volume pioneered in this field. Carter G. Woodson, *A Century of Negro Migration* (Washington, 1918).

169. *Tribune*, January 12, 1863.

170. *Tribune*, March 27, 1863; *Anti-Slavery Standard*, March 7, 1863.

171. *Tribune*, April 16, 1863.

172. *Fincher's Trades Review*, June 13, 1863.

173. *Tribune*, August 4, October 30, 1862; *Herald*, September 22, 1862; *Anti-Slavery Standard*, January 30, June 30, 1863. On the fear of an influx of contrabands into Kentucky, see Governor Robinson's message to the Kentucky legislature upon the issuance of the Emancipation Proclamation. *Tribune*, January 12, 1863.

174. *Anti-Slavery Standard*, June 20, 1863.

175. *Tribune* July 9, 1862; *Anti-Slavery Standard*, May 9, 30, 1863. Minnesota farmers did employ contrabands in place of whites serving in the army. *Anti-Slavery Standard*, May 30, 1863.

176. *Tribune*, October 30, 1862.

177. *Anti-Slavery Standard*, January 10, 1863.



before the draft riots it was reported that three carloads of contrabands had reached Jersey City and that the Negroes then took the ferry to New York.¹⁷⁹ One source suggests that the colored workers used to break the strikes of longshoremens in 1863 were emancipated slaves, but there is no definite proof of that.¹⁸⁰ It does, seem, though, that the Negroes sheltered in the Seventh Avenue Arsenal during the draft riots included contrabands,¹⁸¹ and not to be forgotten is that shout by "someone with an Irish accent" who interrupted Archbishop John Hughes's speech appealing to [Catholics](#) to abstain from rioting: "Let the niggers stay in the South!"¹⁸² The following day, speaking of Negroes "that float hither from the South," the Freeman's Journal and Catholic Register urged that they be "driven out again, imprisoned or exterminated."¹⁸³ Such a furor could hardly have arisen without some pretext.

But that the pretext was small is apparent from the available information on whether the Negroes of the South did really wish to go north in 1862 and 1863. Although it was well known that General Hunter, commander of the army's Department of the South, at Port Royal, South Carolina, gave passes to the North to all Negroes seeking them, he stated in July, 1862, that not more than a dozen had applied to him for such passes since his arrival.¹⁸⁴ Hunter branded the idea of a general migration of Negroes to the North a "carefully fostered delusion." The superintendent in charge of contrabands in Washington, D. C., made a special investigation into the supposed desire of former slaves to emigrate to the North and found it non-existent.¹⁸⁵ Of those who came under his charge during his first four months in office, not thirty-five were willing to go farther north.

The most thorough attempt to ascertain whether Southern Negroes wished to move to the North was made by a special committee of the Emancipation League.¹⁸⁶ Late in 1862 this committee sent a questionnaire to the different superintendents of contrabands in the South containing the following query, among others: "Do they desire to go North? In the event of general emancipation, and fair treatment at home, would there, in your judgment, be any disposition to go North?" Even though the question was obviously loaded, the answers received leave little room for doubt that the contrabands did not wish to leave the South. The reply from Fortress Monroe, Virginia, was typical: Very few are willing to go North, except for safety. I have had applications from large numbers wishing servants, and offering good wages, lying over for months, because of the unwillingness of any to go." The results of this survey were confirmed by a report of

178. Tribune, August 11, 1862.

179. Tribune, July 11, August 6, 1862; Anti-Slavery Standard, March 28, 1863.

180. Tribune, April 3, 1862.

181. Tribune, January 12, 1863.

182. Woodson's work has an account of the migration of fugitives to New York City in the first half of the century. Woodson, op. cit., pp. 82-86.

183. Committee of Representatives of the New York [Yearly Meeting](#) of Friends upon the Condition and Wants of the Colored Refugees, Report (New York, 1862), P. 20.

184. Tribune, June 10, 1863; Committee of New York Meeting of Friends, op. cit., p. 14.

185. Spero and Harris, op. cit., p. 17.

186. Tribune, July 18, 1863; Herald, July 18, 1863.



the American Freedmen is Inquiry Commission in June, 1863, that there was no disposition on the part of Negro refugees within Union lines in South Carolina and Florida to go north.¹⁸⁷

The preceding pages have described the manner in which political leaders and journalists in New York played upon the fear of white workers that freed Negroes would compete with them for jobs. They have also discussed the extent to which there was a movement of contrabands from the South who could compete with them. It is now appropriate to look into the competition actually taking place between Negroes and whites before the draft riots of July, 1863.

Such competition was omnipresent in the South, to be sure. It greatly heightened the tension between Negroes and poor whites, with slaves used in skilled capacities both on plantations and in towns and cities, as well, where their masters easily underbid white mechanics. It extended to almost all branches of manual labor.¹⁸⁸ Everywhere the Southern white worker turned, the Negro seemed to deprive him of a job, except for the most dangerous occupations, in which it would be folly to expose a valuable slave to injury or death.¹⁸⁹

In the North, some contrabands were competing with white workers by June, 1863, at least according to Fincher's Trades Review, and this development drew a cry for restrictions by the Federal government upon the movement of emancipated slaves into free states.¹⁹⁰ Although our information about racial competition in the longshore field, which will be explored below, is rather plentiful, the press was not very specific about other areas in which the new rivalry was occurring. Random reports did tell of trouble in Washington, D. C., where navy yard workers showed hostility toward twenty or thirty colored calkers brought from Baltimore,¹⁹¹ and of the replacement of white domestic servants by Negro contrabands in St. Louis.¹⁹² The agitation throughout the North during the Civil War for state laws banning the immigration of Negroes from the South can also be taken as a probable indication of job competition between blacks and whites.

In New York, the ousting of the Democratic party from control of the Federal government in 1861 appeared ominously to bring even political patronage to Negroes. Colored men were appointed to positions in the custom house, replacing good Irish Democrats, said the newspapers, and depressing the wages paid custom house employees.¹⁹³ When, in July, 1862, Negro workers were substituted for whites on a ferry line in New York harbor, and the press carried rumors of contrabands' taking away the jobs of white men in Pennsylvania by agreeing to work for ten

187. Herald, July 18, 1863; Daily News, July 18, 1863; Irish American, July 18, 1863.

188. Freeman's Journal and Catholic Register, July 18, 1863.

189. Tribune, August 4, 1862.

190. Tribune, November 7, 1862.

191. Tribune, January 27, 1863; Anti-Slavery Standard, February 7, 1863.

192. R. Dale Owen et al, op. cit., p. 8.

193. Spero and Harris, op. cit., pp. 5-11. In an emancipation debate with George Francis Train in New York, Cassius M. Clay gave an excellent description of the underbidding of free labor by slave labor in the South. Herald, November 2, 1862. See also Charles Nordhoff, America for Free Working Men! (New York, 1865), p. 1.



cents a day, it seemed high time to stop this trend.¹⁹⁴ The method of doing so which was applied by a mob of Irishmen in Brooklyn in August, 1862, may well have been suggested by attacks in recent weeks upon Negroes in Cincinnati and Toledo, Ohio, and Evansville, Indiana.¹⁹⁵

In the midst of an Irish neighborhood in south Brooklyn stood two tobacco factories.¹⁹⁶ All the employees of one were colored, numbering from fifty to seventy-five and consisting mostly of women and children. About 250 persons, colored and white, were employed in the other and worked harmoniously side by side. The resentment against the employment of the Negroes that had been smoldering among the Irish in that area finally broke into flames on August 4, 1862, when a mob of from two to three thousand whites, stirred up by pothouse politicians I talk of competition from contrabands, smashed their way into one of the factories, shouting "Down with the nagurs!" Many were drunk from liquor dispensed at the neighborhood's numerous rum-shops, where the attack on the factory was planned. Failing to reach the Negro employees barricaded on the second floor, they prepared to set fire to the place and were prevented from doing so only by the arrival of a strong detachment of police, who quelled the riot, after a fashion, by clubbing the, Negroes.

The rioters may be said to have won their point, however. Although one tobacco factory closed down entirely, the proprietor of the other promised not to hire any more colored workers.¹⁹⁷ Thus the effectiveness of mob violence in reducing black labor competition was fully demonstrated. Greeley raged, but his editorial lectures to the rioters were scarcely of a type which would cause them to repent, conceding the very competition that had incensed them in the first place. In a characteristic piece he flayed Democratic leaders for playing upon the Irishman's fear of black labor competition and then continued in this dubious manner:

*Least of all have the laboring white men of the United States, native or foreign, cause to hate the negro. He takes off from them the discredit of the lowest social place, and does offices which leave them free to compete for the higher rewards of industry.... The fugitive colored porter, waiter, or stevedore promotes some shrewd Irish lad to keep a shop, to become constable, or alderman, or to go to Congress.... The transformation of four million chattel slaves into four million free citizens ... will benefit no class so much as that whose tasks they assume and whose toils they relieve.*¹⁹⁸

In the weeks following the attack on the tobacco factory, there were a number of cases in Brooklyn and New York City in which gangs of Irishmen beat up individual Negroes.¹⁹⁹ A secret

194. Charles Nordhoff, *America for Free Working Men!* (New York, 1865), pp. 12, 13.

195. Fincher's *Trades Review*, June 13, 1863; Frank Tracy Carlton, *History and Problem of Organized Labor* (Boston and New York, 1920), p. 64.

196. *Herald*, September 26, 1862.

197. *Freeman's Tourn*, January 17, 1863.

198. Lee, *op. cit.*, pp. 137, 138.

199. Lee, *op. cit.*, p. 139; *Tribune*, August 6, 1862.



organization of workingmen formed in New York at this time inserted in its otherwise radical statement of principles a warning about the danger of emancipated slave labor.²⁰⁰ In refusing to work with Negroes, the longshoremen, whose strikes and anti-Negro violence will be discussed presently, were not unique. The Tribune cited the typical experience of a Negro cooper, a refugee from the South, who had just been refused work at several barrel-making establishments in New York. The employer at each place told him: "Yes, I have work; I would like to employ you; but my journeymen would all leave me if I did, and I cannot."²⁰¹

Another movement of workingmen at this time expressed apprehension about Negro competition. It consisted of whites concerned over the importation of cheap labor from abroad by employers, with the cooperation of the Lincoln administrations Iron and shipbuilding workers, in particular, faced the prospect of wage reductions occasioned by an influx of foreigners. Early in February, 1863, they held a mass meeting at Tammany Hall, primarily to protest the importation of foreign labor. It is noteworthy, however, that they also adopted an angry statement denouncing steps by employers "to bring hordes of blacks from the South, as well as whites from Europe, to fill the shops, yards and other places of labor, and by that means compel -us to compete with them for the support of our families." To cope with this menace, they declared their intention "to effect a common organization of all the artisans and laborers throughout the country against the anticipated inundation of contrabands in Northern cities." One speaker at this gathering of ironworkers charged that their masters had already started to introduce contrabands in their midst.²⁰²

But the fiercest competition, with the most violent and far-reaching results, occurred in the longshore field. The remainder of this article will be devoted chiefly to an analysis of longshore work, labor organization among waterfront workers, their strikes of 1855, 1862, and 1863, and their violence against Negro strikebreakers.

Almost all longshoremen in New York City were Irish.²⁰³ Strictly speaking, it is incorrect to classify their work as unskilled labor.²⁰⁴ It required a degree of special competence to perform the more difficult branches of the work which could be acquired only by years of experience and which raised it above the level of what is ordinarily known as common labor. It was, however, an exhausting, hazardous, casual, and oversupplied occupation.²⁰⁵ The irregular employment of longshoremen resulted in unstable earnings which made a settled standard of living impossible.²⁰⁶ One of the persistent complaints of striking longshoremen in 1855, 1862, and 1863 was that they averaged only

200. Tribune, August 8, 1862.
201. Tribune, August 5, 6, 1862; Lee, op. cit., pp. 139, 140.
202. Tribune, January 24, 1863.
203. Tribune, August 8, 1862.
204. Tribune, August 21, 22, 29, September 4, 6, 1862.
205. Tribune, August 8, 1862.
206. Tribune, November 25, 1862; January 24, 1863.



three or four days of work a week. At the October, 1862, pay rate of \$1.50 a day, this meant that they earned between \$4.50 and \$6.00 a week, which was low even according to Civil War wage standards.

Their irregularity of employment and hanging about piers in the hope of being hired also led longshoremen to drift into waterfront bars and encouraged drinking.²⁰⁷ Many of the waterfront assaults on Negroes by longshoremen during the spring of 1863 and at the time of the draft riots planned in groggeries on West Street and South Street, across from the piers.²⁰⁸ Press reports to that effect were borne out by the testimony of the police captain in charge of stopping fights between whites and Negroes along the waterfront in April, 1863: "The trouble is due more to the influence of rum than anything else."²⁰⁹

Nevertheless, having no steady jobs to be endangered, longshoremen flared up at bad treatment more quickly than men in other trades. Hence their readiness to strike.²¹⁰ The first longshore strike in New York of which there is record took place in February, 1836, when for several days the men paraded through the streets and before the docks in what amounted to a kind of picketing's.²¹¹ The strike of 1836 eventually became so violent that the civil authorities called out a regiment of soldiers, which, abundantly supplied with ammunition, established itself at City Hall, thereby intimidating the longshoremen.

The earliest permanent associations of New York longshoremen were formed for benevolent purposes. The Longshoremen's Union Benevolent Society, the organization of longshoremen most frequently mentioned by the press during the first two years of the Civil War, was founded in 1852 and had as its chief functions to provide relief to members who were injured or sick, to aid in the burial of deceased members, and to give financial assistance to their widows and orphans.²¹² It was overwhelmingly Irish in make-up. But although members complained at its meetings of the high cost of living during the war, calling for wage increases and threatening to strike, the Longshoremen's U. B. Society, as it was called, never had any power as a labor union in the present-day sense of the term.

Negro-white friction on the waterfront became pronounced in the middle fifties. In December 1854, the merchants of New York reduced the wages of longshoremen from \$1.75 to \$1.50, using as one reason for the slash the allegation that the Longshoremen's U. B. Society had "attempted to dictate to them."²¹³ A strike, not led by the Society, broke out. Gangs of strikers visited ships from which other longshoremen were still unloading cargo, forced them to desist, and beat them as they came ashore. The

207. Weekly Caucasian, February 14, 1863; Tribune, February 7, 1863.

208. Nor were urban occupations the only ones in which there were complaints of racial competition. A few days before the draft riots, contrabands obtained from a Government agent were reported working for no pay on farms near New York City. Daily News, July 10, 1863.

209. Charles B. Barnes, *The Longshoremen* (New York, 1915), p. 5.

210. Charles B. Barnes, *The Longshoremen* (New York, 1915), pp. 51-54.

211. Charles B. Barnes, *The Longshoremen* (New York, 1915), pp. 129 ff.

212. Charles B. Barnes, *The Longshoremen* (New York, 1915), pp. 55-92; Tribune, January 19, 1855; Herald, October 22, 1862.

213. Barnes, *op. cit.*, pp. 13 ff.



merchants, however, called the police, under whose protection the work of loading and unloading vessels was resumed. When employers replaced striking Irishmen with colored labor, anti-Negro violence resulted, with the whites trying to prevent the blacks from working.²¹⁴ But, handicapped by the fact that shipping was slow at the time, the strike petered out in the ensuing weeks.²¹⁵ The Negroes, having served their strikebreaking purpose, were gradually discharged by the merchants, and by the middle of February, 1855, only a few were still working, in the employ of shippers who had taken the lead in the movement to reduce wages.

There is no evidence that the Longshoremen's U. B. Society called the strikes of 1862 and 1863. By the time of the Civil War it had evidently abandoned any pretense to trade union action and confined itself exclusively to benevolent, social and Irish functions, including annual balls and St. Patrick's Day parades.²¹⁶ Its members would turn out six hundred strong on the latter occasions, dressed in handsome green and gold regalia and carrying Irish and American flags and the Society's imposing banners.

Scattered items in the press in June and July, 1863, indicate the existence of one or two other organizations of longshoremen at the time of the draft riots. In June, 1863, a Longshoremen's Association was established and within a week enrolled three hundred members.²¹⁷ During the riots it was said that white workers, in driving the Negroes from the docks, were insisting that longshore jobs be held exclusively by members of the Longshoremen's Association and such other whites as they permitted upon the waterfront.²¹⁸ The only other longshore labor organization mentioned during the strike of June, 1863, was a Joint Committee of the North and East Rivers, which agreed upon a general rate of wages to be asked of the shippers.²¹⁹

In the interval between the winter of 1854-1855 and October, 1862, no major labor disputes occurred on the city's waterfront. In the autumn of 1862, however, the strain of having to buy with 1855 wages goods sold at war-inflated prices became too great for the longshoremen, who were then working only three days a week. On October 20 they struck. Through a representative committee they demanded that wages be increased from \$1.50 a day to \$1.75, overtime rates raised, and the working day reduced from nine to eight hours, giving as their reason for wanting more pay "the advanced prices of food, clothing, and other necessaries."²²⁰ Alongside one editorial on the danger of an influx of Negro labor into the North, the Herald published another supporting the strike, which the next day brought fulsome praise from the chairman of a strikers' meeting at the Battery.²²¹ What role, if any, Negro strikebreakers played in

214. Herald, April 14, 1863; Anti-Slavery Standard, April 18, July 25, 1863.

215. Herald, April 16, 1863.

216. Barnes, op. cit., p. 93.

217. William Leete Stone, History of New York City (New York, 1872), pp. 486, 487.

218. Tribune, February 15, 1855; Irish American, March 22, 1862; March 28, 1863.

219. Tribune, January 18, 19, 1855.

220. Tribune, February 15, 1855; Charles Lionel Franklin, The Negro Labor Unionist of New York (New York, 1936), p. 25; Spero and Harris, op. cit., p. 197; Wesley, op. cit., pp. 79, 80.



this dispute is not clear, but it appears that the longshoremen failed to win an increase in wages at that time.²²²

For late in January, 1863, workers in one section of the waterfront were informed that thenceforth their pay would be only \$1.12 a day instead of the \$1.50 they had been receiving previously.²²³ This action of the merchants started a labor war on the docks of New York which, except for brief truces, continued till the draft riots in July. Upon reduction of their wages the longshoremen went on strike. They were willing to go back at \$1.25 a day provided they were employed permanently, claiming that their irregular work on the waterfront often compelled them to seek jobs elsewhere or remain idle much of the time. Press accounts of two longshore strikes in March, 1863, which refer to \$1.12 a day as the prevailing rate of wages, indicate, though, that the cut was put into effect on a wide scale and that the January strike against it did not succeed.²²⁴ But on March 23, 1863, longshoremen working on the North River piers of the Erie Railroad Company, having previously won back part of the slash and restored their wages to \$1.25 a day, struck for \$1.50.²²⁵

When the company foreman refused to yield to their terms and announced that he would employ other workers in their places, a thousand men gathered in the street in front of the pier. No disturbances broke out until the foreman hired a gang of Negroes to move bales of cotton. Instantly the crowd fell upon the Negroes with sticks, stones, and fists and drove them from the waterfront. The company then agreed to pay \$1.50 a day but declined to hire about half the strikers. At first some measure of solidarity was shown by the group, as those whom the company offered to take back held out for the reemployment of the others. By the next morning, however, this unity had disappeared. The company hired all but sixty of the most militant strikers, and work resumed under strong police protection.²²⁶

The example set by the Erie Railroad longshoremen was immediately followed by employees of the Hudson River Railroad, who struck for an increase in wages from \$1.12 a day to \$1.50 and notified the company's directors that they would not allow any other persons to take their places for lower wages. Nevertheless, with a squad of police standing by, the company did hire both white and colored strikebreakers. Although here no violence actually broke out, the defeated workers seethed with resentment against those replacements whose dark skin made them stand out conspicuously and rendered them easy targets for revenge.

221. Tribune, February 15, 1855.

222. Irish American, October 27, December 8, 1860; January 5, March 23, August 3, October 12, 10, November 2, 1861; February 15, March 15, 22, August 30, November 15, 1862; February 21, March 7, 14, 28, 1863.

223. Daily News, June 16, 1863.

224. Daily News, July 17, 1863. Speaking of the longshore and railroad workers strikes in 1863, McNeil says that "assaults were made upon the non-unionists who took the place of the men on strike." (Emphasis added.) George E. McNeil, *The Labor Movement—the Problem of Today* (Boston and New York, 1887), p. 126. This implies the existence of a union conducting the strike. See also United States Commissioner of Labor, *Third Annual Report* (1887), p. 1048.

225. Herald, June 10, 1863.

226. Tribune, October 21, 22, 1862; Herald, October 21, 22, 1862.



The next month, April, new strikes broke out among the longshoremen of lower Manhattan. Their exact wage demands are not clear, but for three days mobs of Irish longshoremen, inflamed by drink, beat up Negroes found working on the waterfront and chased them from the docks, shouting "Drive off the damn niggers" and "Kill the niggers."²²⁷ "They were determined, they said, that the blacks should not drive white labor out of the market, and remonstrated against the employment of negroes along shore."²²⁸ Four or five hundred white longshoremen took part in these disturbances, and with difficulty the Metropolitan Police saved from lynching a couple of Negroes who tried to defend themselves. At least two hundred colored longshoremen were employed on the docks at that time, and according to police they did not receive less than the usual rate of wages. In the course of this outbreak, crowds of longshoremen also hunted down and stoned Negroes in other sections of lower Manhattan besides the waterfront, pursuing all the colored porters, cartmen and laborers within sight until routed by the locust batons of the police.

Greeley regarded the episode as the natural result of the persistent efforts of the pro-slavery press of New York to strengthen its readers' prejudices and to persuade them that "white men were to be cheated out of work by an immigration of negroes." Said he further:

*If longshoremen or any other class of laborers do not choose to work with negroes they need not. No law compels them. But the negro, as well as the white man, has a right to work for whoever will employ and pay him, and the law, and courts, and police, and public opinion ought to protect him in that right, and will.*²²⁹

May was a quiet month on the waterfront, but trouble flared up again early in June, when the longshoremen of New York stopped work *en masse*, demanding an increase in pay to twenty-five cents an hour during the regular working day and overtime of fifty cents an hour after 6 PM. Five hundred of them marched from pier to pier, inducing men who were still working to quit. Their number swelled as they proceeded. When non-strikers at one pier balked at leaving work, they were attacked by the strikers and compelled to desist until the police arrived and gave them protection.²³⁰

After a week of fruitless negotiation between committees of strikers and shipowners, the United States government stepped in. It was a now-familiar story: Army transports, supposed to sail with cargoes of ammunition and other supplies, were being held up by the strike.²³¹ Accordingly, about 150 deserters from Governor's Island and sixty-five convalescent soldiers from Bedloe's Island were put to work loading the transports, as a detachment of regular troops stood guard with fixed bayonets and

227. Tribune

228. Wesley, *op. cit.*, pp. 99, 100.

229. Tribune, February 2, 1863.

230. Tribune, March 25, 1863; Herald, March 25, 1863.

231. Times, March 24, 1863; Tribune, March 24, 1863; Herald, March 24, 1863.



nearly five hundred policemen patrolled the waterfront.²³²

But the strike grew despite this formidable show of might opposing it. By the middle of June three thousand longshoremen were idle.²³³ On June 18, however, a group of important shipping firms gave notice that they would pay \$2.00 for a day of nine hours and twenty-five cents an hour overtime, and that was probably the formula on which the strike ended. One thousand of the strikers accepted it by returning to their jobs the next day.²³⁴

While the longshoremen were thus engaged in June, 1863, (with the impassioned support, it might be noted, of the pro-slavery Daily News), occupational groups closely related to them struck successfully for higher pay.²³⁵ These included workers on canal boats and barges in the lower part of the city and freight handlers on the Hudson River Railroad and the New York Central. Another strike of Erie Railroad employees for a wage increase occurred.²³⁶ Again the company hired strike breakers, although it is not certain that they were Negroes, and again the strikebreakers were assaulted by some of the old employees.

Similar work stoppages for higher wages took place in other northern cities during the Civil War. Negroes were often used as strikebreakers, with uniformly violent results.²³⁷

Such strikes are important as a partial explanation of the draft riots in those places. Perhaps the most serious disorders broke out in Buffalo. In August, 1862, striking Buffalo longshoremen demanded higher pay and sought to keep non-strikers from continuing to work at the former rates, but the racial aspect does not seem to have entered into their struggle at that time.²³⁸ The same is true of another strike of longshoremen and grain shovellers in Buffalo in May, 1863, when they won an increase in pay to \$1.50 a day.²³⁹ Only a week before the draft riots, though, some Buffalo shippers tried to replace Irish longshoremen with colored workers, and violence ensued, with three Negroes slain and twelve badly beaten.²⁴⁰ Not only did Irish longshoremen seek to prevent Negroes from working on the docks, but, in addition, mobs of other whites attacked colored inhabitants of the city generally. A prominent Democratic politician was heard to declare publicly that every Negro and every Black Republican ought to be driven out of town.²⁴¹ More truthfully than they knew, the editors of Fincher's Trades Review commented on the Buffalo situation two days before the

232. Herald, March 25, 1863; Tribune, March 25, 1863.

233. Herald, April 18, 1863.

234. Herald, April 16, 1863. See also Herald, April 14, 15, 1863; Tribune, April 13-16, 1863; Anti-Slavery Standard, April 18, 1863; Lee, op. cit., pp. 141, 142.

235. Tribune, April 14, 1863.

236. Herald, June 6, 9, 1863; Tribune, June 8, 9, 20, 1863.

237. Herald, June 15, 16, 1863; Herald, June 16, 1863.

238. Similar to the longshore situation in 1863 was the strike of New York longshoremen in October, 1945, at the end of World War II. At that time, Federal authorities, pleading the piling up of military cargoes on the docks, sent two platoons of Negro soldiers with longshore experience to unload mail and baggage from the British transport, Queen Elizabeth. Times, October 10, 11, 1945. The Negro troops performed this task amid the hissing and booing of the strikers.

239. Tribune, June 15, 1863.

240. Tribune, June 20, 1863; Herald, June 20, 1863; Daily News, June 20, 1863.

241. Tribune, June 16, 1863; Herald, June 16, 1863; Tribune, June 17, 1863.



draft riots began: "This, we fear, is but the beginning of the end."²⁴²

The result of this labor strife was that when resistance to the draft started in New York on July 13, 1863, longshoremen formed the van of the mobs.²⁴³ Deputations recruiting rioters thoroughly canvassed the waterfront, so that by the second day of the upheaval the loading and unloading of ships in the harbor had stopped, except at a wharf here and there which happened to be under the guns of an armed vessel.²⁴⁴ No colored dockhands were to be found on any pier.²⁴⁵ Negroes who ventured on the streets near the waterfront or near saloons frequented by longshoremen were horribly tortured and beaten to death by bands of longshoremen and their bodies cast into the East River and Hudson River.²⁴⁶ One reporter described conditions about the piers thus:

*So determined and bitter is the feeling of the 'longshoremen against negroes that not one of the latter dares show himself upon the docks or piers even when a regular employe of the place. The white workmen have resolved, by concerted action, to keep colored men from this branch of labor, and have evinced, by their conduct toward their former comrades in work, a spirit as murderous and brutal as it is illiberal and selfish. It is a prevalent rumor, to which the authorities give full credence, and which the 'longshoremen seem proud of, that scores of these unfortunates have been thrown into the river and drowned, for no other reason than that they were obnoxious to the sensitive-minded individuals of a lighter color.*²⁴⁷

Another observer likewise noted that longshoremen made

*no attempt to conceal their determination to keep negroes ... from that sort of labor. They insist upon it that the colored people must and shall be driven to other departments of industry, and that the work upon the docks, the stevedoring, and the various job-work therewith connected, shall be attended to solely and absolutely by members of the 'Longshoremen's Association, and such white laborers as they see fit to permit upon the premises.*²⁴⁸

The mobs along the waterfront which attacked other Negroes besides dock workers consisted, in all likelihood, of white longshoremen.²⁴⁹ Next to the colored dock workers, waiters and other Negro employees in downtown hotels and restaurants were

242. Daily News, June 20, 1863.

243. Spero and Harris, Op., Cit., pp. 197, 198; Wesley, op. cit., pp. 99, 100. For an interesting account of anti-Negro violence in a Toledo, Ohio, longshore strike, during which the members of the local board of trade were sworn in as special police, see Tribune, July 11, 1862.

244. Tribune, August 13, 1862.

245. Tribune, May 14, 1863; Herald, May 14, 16, 1863.

246. Fincher's Trades Review, July 11, 1863; Tribune, July 8, 1863; Herald, July 8, 1863; Daily News, July 11, 1863.

247. Tribune, July 10, 1863.

248. Fincher's Trades Review, July 11, 1863.

249. Emerson David Fite, Social and Industrial Conditions in the North during the Civil War (New York, 1910), pp. 189, 190; Spero and Harris, op. cit., pp. 197, 198.



the chief objects of the rioters' fury.²⁵⁰ One firm, fearful that its property might be destroyed by demonstrators who believed it to have employed colored persons, sought to avert that fate by placing in the window a sign in conspicuous capitals: "No niggers in the rear."²⁵¹

It is not contended here that the competition of Negroes with whites ceased completely with the draft disturbances. Indeed, as early as Saturday, July 18, the last day of the riot week, a few colored workers began to pursue their usual vocations in public without being molested.²⁵² On Monday, the 20th, more colored people, including waiters in several restaurants, summoned up enough courage to return to their jobs, and this trend continued in the succeeding days, to a point where even some Negro longshoremen returned to the docks of the Erie Railroad Company.²⁵³

But the committee of merchants formed to give relief to colored victims of the riots was forced to admit that after this civil war within a Civil War many Negroes discharged by employers who feared destruction of their property because they had hired colored workers were not taken back in their old positions, despite years of service. White workers who wished to drive their competitors from the city were responsible, said the merchants, for pressure upon employers not to reinstate Negroes. They also persuaded the street railway companies to refuse colored persons permission to ride on their cars, making it difficult for or them to travel to work.²⁵⁴

To alleviate these conditions, the committee kept its office open as an employment agency after it stopped dispensing financial relief,²⁵⁵ in pursuance of a resolution, adopted at its first meeting, on July 18:

*That we will exert all the influence we possess to protect the colored people of this city in their rights to pursue unmolested their, lawful occupations.... That we will not recognize or sanction any distinction of persons of whatever nation, religion, or color, in their natural right to labor peaceably in their vocations in the support of themselves and those dependent upon them.*²⁵⁶

Brave talk this, but its implementation was another matter. As the more timorous merchants and transportation companies continued to withhold jobs from Negro former employees, their brethren connected with the committee could only shake their heads and repeat that the whole sorry mess was the result of the merchants' having tolerated months ago the dictation of striking

250. Daily News, July 15, 1863; Weekly Caucasian, July 18, 1863; Stoddard, op. cit., p. 158.

251. Herald, July 17, 1863.

252. Daily News, July 17, 1863; New York Committee of Merchants for the Relief of Colored People Suffering from the Late Riots, 1863, Report (New York, 1863), pp. 20, 21; David M. Barnes, The Draft Riots in New York (New York, 1863), p. 24; Stoddard, op. cit., p. 239.

253. Times, July 17, 1863; Anti-Slavery Standard, July 25, 1863.

254. Daily News, July 17, 1863.

255. Tribune, July 17, 1863.

256. Barnes, op. cit., p. 34; Stoddard, op. cit., pp. 80, 81, 91; Alexander, op. cit., 111, 68. Colored servants in private homes were another large class assaulted by rioters. Herald, July 17, 1863.



longshoremen as to whom they should employ and on what terms.²⁵⁷

That many, Negroes were not restored to their old jobs is also clear from editorials in the Tribune after the riots. Greeley urged the merchants of New York to welcome Negroes back "to any work they are able and willing to do at a satisfactory price," and, in a thrust at the Irish, urged that colored persons -- "American born and bred" -- be protected in the exercise of this right.²⁵⁸ Failure to do so meant capitulation to the demands of the rioters:

*The mob exults in the belief that, if it failed in its other objects, it [had?] at least secured possession of the labor of the city, and has driven the blacks to seek work elsewhere... . It is the duty of merchants and other employers to take pains to recall their workmen immediately, and assure them of permanent protection.*²⁵⁹

Greeley observed, nevertheless, that reluctance to reemploy Negroes persisted.²⁶⁰ Of course, the great decrease in the city's colored population by 1865 also indicated a drop in the employment of Negroes.²⁶¹

To review the main points of this article, Democratic leaders and newspapers in New York, from the secession crisis to the draft riots, constantly harped upon the note that if the slaves were freed, they would flock north and take away the jobs of Irish laborers. The election campaigns of 1860, 1861, and 1862 and Lincoln's emancipation program were the occasions for their heaviest barrages of propaganda on this score. Republicans and abolitionists were slow to answer their opponents' predictions. When they finally did reply, they argued that elimination of slavery would forestall any danger of an inundation of blacks.

Although information about the actual movement of Negroes during the Civil War is sparse, it appears that some northward migration of contrabands did take place. It was small, to be sure, but enough seemingly to give point to the warnings of anti-administration politicians and journalists and to alarm the New York proletariat, despite surveys proving that the great majority of former slaves had no desire to leave the South.

Rivalry for jobs between Negroes and Irishmen in New York had existed before the Civil War, and employers had occasionally hired black workers to break the strikes of white workers. During the war, with the numerous strikes for higher wages which

257. Tribune, July 20, 1863. When the danger abated, this concern denied the charge that it had disclaimed having any Negro employees, asserting that it sheltered a number of colored refugees during the disorders. Tribune, July 21, 1863.

258. Tribune, July 20, 1863.

259. Tribune, July 21, 22, 1863; Herald, July 30, 1863; New York Committee of Merchants, op. cit., pp. 4-6. The claim of the committee that within a few weeks the demand for colored servants had increased tenfold must be treated with caution. Herald, p. 27. It is quite possible that new Negro domestics were being sought to replace those who had fled from the city during the riots.

260. Herald, pp. 12, 13.

261. Wesim op. cit., pp. 100, 101

136. Tribune, July 21, 1863.

137. Tribune, July 25, 1863.

138. Tribune, July 20, 1863.

139. Tribune, July 21, 1863.

140. Tribune, July 23, 1863.

141. See footnote 4 supra.



IRELAND

IRELAND

it brought, the use of Negro strikebreakers by employers became much more frequent, particularly in the longshore field, dominated by the Irish. In the first half of 1863 the longshoremen of New York went on strike after strike for increased pay, only to see their places filled by colored men working for less money under police protection. While longshore wages gradually rose, white labor on the waterfront was, obsessed with the fear of competition from Negroes which needed only the commencement of the draft to be transformed into wholesale murder. The violence inflicted upon black workers on the docks and in other occupations by the draft rioters did, in fact, result in a decline for some years to come in the job rivalry which the former had offered. Thus the rioters partially achieved their aims.

ALBON P. MAN, JR.

New York, New York

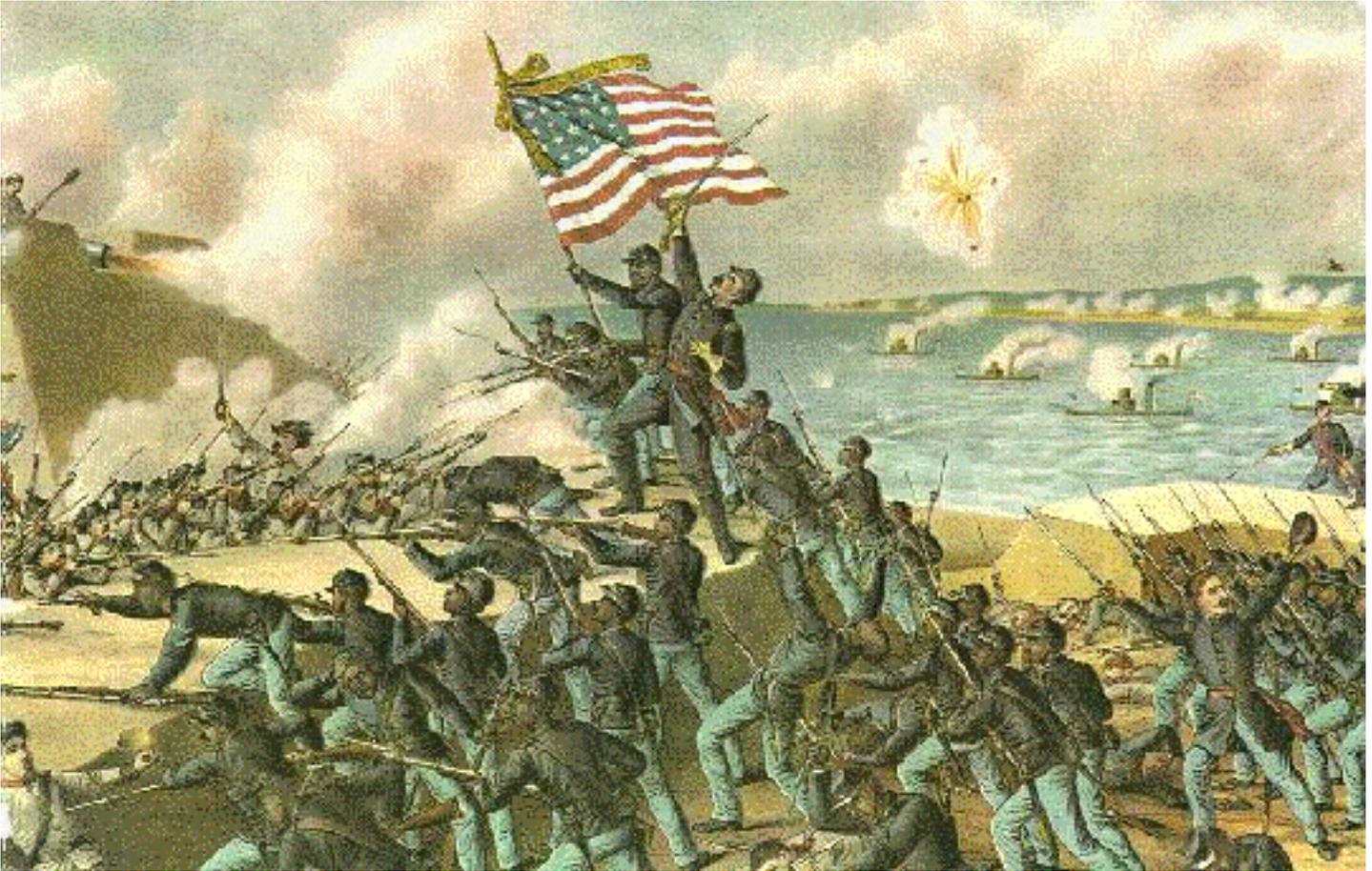
July 18, Saturday: Captain Henry S. Stellwagen replaced Commodore Henry K. Thatcher as commanding officer of the USS *Constellation*. After another year patrolling the Mediterranean, in July 1864, the vessel would be ordered to report to Admiral Farragut for blockading squadron duty back home.

In New-York, four days of continuous Irish-American riot and lynching of black Americans were brought to a culmination when Catholic Archbishop John Hughes was persuaded by the Governor of the state of New York to show himself, despite his severe illness, to a crowd in front of his official residence. Ignoring the anti-black shouting that was arising from the some 3,000 or 4,000 that had assembled, Hughes pleaded with them, as a fellow Catholic and as a fellow [Irishman](#), to now bring this matter to a close.

IRELAND

IRELAND

There was again fighting at Fort Wagner / Morris Island. After the July 11th assault on Fort Wagner in Charleston, South Carolina failed, Gillmore had reinforced his beachhead on Morris Island. At dusk July 18, Gillmore launched an attack spearheaded by the black 54th Massachusetts Volunteers — the all-black unit of the Union army portrayed in the 1989 Tri-Star Pictures film “Glory.” The unit’s colonel, Robert Gould Shaw, two other white officers, and 31 black soldiers scaled the parapet and were cut down by use of the specially provided double-barreled shotguns. The Federals would need to resort to siege operations, which would be completed by September 7th, to reduce this fort. Refer to the monument by Augustus Saint-Gaudens placed in front of the Massachusetts State House in 1897.



“The Fifty-fourth did well and nobly, only the fall of Colonel Shaw prevented them from entering the fort... They moved up as gallantly as any troops could, and with their enthusiasm they deserved a better fate.”

The assault as described by Sergeant William H. Carney, the first African-American to receive the Congressional Medal of Honor for bravery under fire, per Leonard B. Ellis’s HISTORY OF NEW BEDFORD AND VICINITY, 1602-1892. Syracuse NY: D. Mason, 1892, pages 348-9

Having arrived at Hilton Head, we were ordered up the river to Beaufort, S.C. We were here only a few days, however, before we were ordered to St. Simon’s Island. Upon arriving there, we found it deserted by all but one man, and we took charge of him. From here we made a successful raid to Darien, capturing a lot of supplies – vessels – loaded with cotton and



IRELAND

IRELAND

cattle – and the city itself. Thence we proceeded to James Island, SC, staying only four days, during which time we were engaged with the rebels [and] successfully repulsed them. Thence the attack and charge on Fort Wagner. On the 18th of July, 1863, about noon, we commenced to draw near this great fort, under a tremendous cannonading from the fleet, directed upon the fort. When we were within probably a thousand yards of the fort, we halted and lay flat upon the ground, waiting for the order to charge. The brave Colonel Shaw [Commander Robert Gould Shaw] and his adjutant, in the company with General Strong, came forward and addressed the colonel Shaw [Commander Robert Gould Shaw] and his adjutant, in the company with General Strong, came forward and addressed the regiment with encouraging words. General Strong said to the regiment: "Men of Massachusetts, are you ready to take the fort tonight?" And the regiment spontaneously answered in the affirmative. Then followed three cheers for Colonel Shaw; three cheers for Governor Andrews of Massachusetts, and three cheers for General Strong.

We were all ready for the charge, and the regiment started to its feet, the charge being fairly commenced. We had got but a short distance when we were opened upon with musketry, shell, grape and canister, which mowed down our men right and left. As the color-bearer became disabled, I threw away my gun and seized the colors, making my way to the head of the column; but before I reached there the line had descended the embankment into the ditch and was making its way upon Wagner itself. While going down the embankment one column was staunch and full. As we ascended the breastworks, the volleys of grapeshot which came from right and left, and of musketry in front, mowed the men down as a scythe would do. In less than twenty minutes I found myself alone, struggling upon the ramparts, while all around me were the dead and wounded, lying upon one another. Here I said, "I cannot go into the fort alone," and so I halted and knelt down, holding the flag in my hand. While there, the musket balls and grapeshot were flying all around me, and as they struck, the sand would fly in my face. I knew my position was a critical one, and I began to watch to see if I would be left alone. Discovering that the forces had renewed their attack farther to the right, and the enemy's attention being drawn thither, I turned [and] discovered a battalion of men coming towards me on the ramparts of Wagner. They proceeded until they were in front of me, and I raised my flag and started to join them, when, from the light of the cannon discharged on the fort, I saw they were [the] enemy. I wound the colors round the staff and made my way down the parapet into the ditch, which was without water when I crossed it before, but was now filled with water that came up to my waist. Out of the number that came up with me there was now no man moving erect, save myself, although they were not all dead, but wounded. In rising to see if I could determine my course to the rear, the bullet I now carry in my body came whizzing like a mosquito, and I was shot. Not being prostrated by the shot, I continued my course, yet had not gone far before I was struck by a second shot. Soon after I saw a man coming towards me, and when within hailing distance I asked him who he was. He replied, "I belong to the 100th New York," and then inquired if I were wounded. Upon my replying in the affirmative, he came to my assistance and helped me to the rear. "Now then," he said, "let me take the colors and carry them for you." My reply was that I would not give them to any man unless he belonged to the 54th Regiment. So we pressed on, but did not go far before I was wounded in the head. We came at length within hailing distance of the rear guard, who caused us to halt, and upon asking us who we were, and finding I was wounded, took us

to the rear through the guard. An officer came, and after taking my name and regiment, put us in the charge of the hospital corps, telling them to find my regiment. When we finally reached the latter the men cheered me and the flag. My reply was "Boys, I only did my duty. The old flag never touched the ground."

July 19, Sunday: There was fighting at Buffington Island / St. Georges Creek.²⁶²

Catholic Archbishop John Hughes had written again to William H. Seward, the Secretary of State. The real cause of this New-York rioting, he explained, was not resistance to the military draft. The real cause of this rioting was that the white people were fearful that black workers were going to be made equal to white workers, which equality would mean of course that "black labor shall have local patronage over the toil of the white man." Actually, quantitatively, this was sheer mythmaking on the Archbishop's part. Actually, quantitatively, these Irish-Americans had competition from five recent white immigrants to fear, for every one black American, so by all logic they ought to have been five times as alarmed at the continuing US open immigration policy for white people, as at any issue having to do with racial quotas!



The "fear of Negro job competition," so much favored as an explanation of the concentration of Irish-American workers' hostility on the African-American minority of their non-Irish competitors ... had not basis in actual fact. These Irish-American workers may have been led to believe that their interest depended above all upon the exclusion of the African-American workers. But that "fear" was no more justified than the exaggerated allegations of Jessie Helms's 1990 campaign concerning the horrific consequences to be feared by "white" workers from affirmative action employment programs.

1864



Our national birthday, Monday the 4th of July: It was the birthday of a nation dedicated to equality of opportunity for all. The Reverend Stephen Fenn of Cornwall, Connecticut wrote his brother, bitterly, about his not being allowed to participate in the American Dream:

They raise the price of wages for every Irishman & Nigger & yet, I am on the smallest salary of all surrounding ones....

Governor Andrew Johnson of Tennessee addressed the citizenry at Nashville.

In Washington DC, Secretary William Seward, riding in a carriage, narrowly avoided serious injury when a rocket, set off by a young boy, struck him above the eye.

CELEBRATING OUR B-DAY



262. The only Civil War battle to take place in Ohio.

September 26, Monday: [Waldo Emerson](#) was getting righteously indignant about the Democratic party and its wild [Irish](#) element with their terror of [black Americans](#), and indulging in the psychological luxury, the most delicious of moral treats, of getting with the popular northern war spirit of destroying people with a good conscience.



Take from it the [wild Irish element](#), imported in the last twenty five years into this country, & led by [Romish priests](#), who sympathize, of course, with despotism, & you would bereave it of all its numerical strength... This war has been conducted over the heads of all the actors in it: the foolish terrors—"what shall we do with the negro?" "the entire black population is coming north to be fed," &c. have strangely ended in the fact, that the black refuses to leave his climate; gets his living and all the living of his employers there, as he has always done; is the natural ally & soldier of the Republic, in that climate; now takes the place of 200,000 soldiers; & will be, as this conquest of the country proceeds, its garrison, till peace, without slavery, returns. [American] Slaveholders in London have filled English ears with their wishes & perhaps beliefs...



"The surest way to work up a crusade in favor of some good cause is to promise people they will have a chance of maltreating someone. To be able to destroy with good conscience, to be able to behave badly and call your bad behavior 'righteous indignation' – this is the height of psychological luxury, the most delicious of moral treats."



– Aldous Huxley, CHROME YELLOW, 1922

1865

[William Dicks](#) and Company won a prize in Dublin.

The arrest, and escape, of James Stephens, founder of the [Irish](#) Republican Brotherhood. The editors of the "Irish People" publication were arrested. At some point during this year [John Boyle O'Reilly](#) joined the "Fenians," which is to say, the [Irish](#) Republican Brotherhood. He would recruit for them, bringing in before his capture by the British authorities perhaps 80 new members sworn to secrecy and violence as tools of resistance to British rule.

A youthful [Henry James, Jr.](#) reviewed Walt Whitman’s DRUMTAPS, comparing it with vomit (later he would disavow this as “a little atrocity ... perpetuated ... in the gross impudence of youth”).

Whitman would report in the Camden Post for April 16, 1891:

“Memoranda”

1865 to '71 – Had a place as clerk (till well on in '73) in the Attorney General’s Office, Washington. (New York and Brooklyn seem more like **home**, as I was born near, and brought up in them, and lived, man and boy, for 30 years. But I lived some years in Washington, and have visited, and partially lived, in most of the Western and Eastern cities.)

(Rumor would have it that in this year [Henry James, Jr.](#) was being introduced to sex, by Oliver Wendell Holmes, Jr.)

John Mitchel being in prison for having aided the Rebellion, an [Irish](#) deputation asked President Andrew Johnson to release him so he could serve “the cause of Irish freedom.” Upon release, Mitchel went north to New-York and became a newspaper editor again, writing “the truth concerning the southern cause” for the Daily News, before the Fenian movement sent him to Paris to serve as their agent, charged with safe transmittal of funds for the Irish revolutionaries.



Summer: John Mitchel, who had been released from prisoner-of-war camp so he could serve “the cause of [Irish](#) freedom,” had begun to write “the truth concerning the southern cause” for the New-York Daily News. He was warned and then arrested by the military authorities, and was imprisoned at Fortress Monroe, the same compound at which Jefferson Davis was then being detained.



He was held only a short time, and on release he founded a newspaper named the Irish Citizen.



IRELAND

IRELAND

Late in the year: The British authorities struck again against the “Fenian” movement of the secret [Irish](#) Republican Brotherhood. Among those arrested was their recruiter [John Boyle O’Reilly](#). He would be sentenced to transportation into a 20-year period of penal servitude (after initially having been marked for execution).

Professor [William Henry Harvey](#) became seriously ill.

1866

Spring: Fenian forces gathered at Buffalo, New York.

IRELAND

June: An armed force of Fenians crossed the upper reaches of the [Niagara River](#), occupied the village of Fort Erie and defeated Canadian militia, at the Battle of Ridgeway, Ontario. The Fenians, faced with gathering British and Canadian resistance, soon regrouped themselves in Buffalo, New York. United States authorities would block further such raids along the river frontier. Fenian activities would, however, continue into the early 1870s, and friction between the neighbor nations would remain high.

IRELAND

December: Thomas J. Kelly had been sent to [Ireland](#). He and other American Fenians deposed James Stephens as leader of the Irish Fenians.

1867

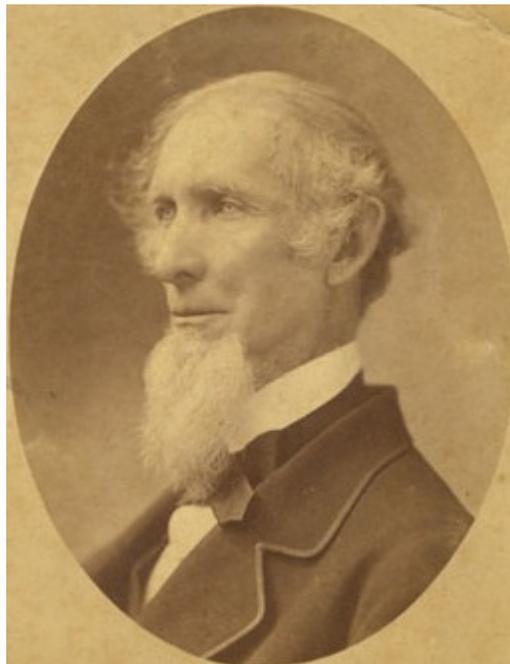
The Fenian rising in [Ireland](#) failed due to English spies. William Philip Allen, Michael Larkin, and Michael O’Brien were publicly hanged for the murder of a policeman. There was an attendance of perhaps 8,000 to 10,000 persons at this hanging. The three would become known in the resistance as “the Manchester martyrs” and their images would be distributed within the three leaves of a shamrock.

After serving nearly two years in English prisons, [John Boyle O’Reilly](#) was put aboard the convict ship *Hougoumont* for transportation to a prison on the west coast of Australia (this voyage by the *Hougoumont* would turn out to be the final convict ship transport to Australia’s western coast).

John Mitchel founded the Irish Citizen in New-York, but angered Fenians by suggesting they should give allegiance to their new country.



Concerned over the poor fortunes of his Medical College of Alabama (in the Reconstruction era the building was been, maddeningly, converted into a school for “two or three hundred negroes racing through it and tearing everything to pieces — the chemical laboratory is occupied by negro cobblers,” [Dr. Josiah Clark Nott](#) gave up in disgust and abandoned Mobile in favor of [Baltimore](#). “What, seize the facility in which I had intended to teach white men how to mend human bodies, and use it to teach black men how to mend boots? — that’s just disgusting” (later he would relocate again, and open a practice on West 23d Street on Manhattan Island, where because of a very large influx of well-to-do Southerners fleeing Reconstruction, he had reason to expect that people would sympathize with the white man’s postwar plight).



William Wells Brown noted well a strange factoid: that by having participated in the fighting in our civil war, American blacks had, rather than gaining the respect and admiration of very many white Americans, merely “gained the hatred of their old masters and put themselves throughout the South in a very bad position.”



He had come at this point to consider that he had made a serious mistake, in having sponsored black enlistment in the Union Army. It would seem that these soldiers and recruiters had fallen victim to a con, a little white lie that he had unfortunately been susceptible to. The US Civil War had been merely a conversation among white men, with the fate of the American people of color being merely one of the topics of this conversation.

RACISM



It is I think unfortunate that he was able to figure this out only afterward, by virtue of hindsight — but it occurs to me now that this may be a truth worth repeating, a truth to which some white people have yet to adjust themselves.

1868

John Mitchel's THE HISTORY OF [IRELAND](#) FROM THE TREATY OF LIMERICK.



1869

Disestablishment of (Anglican) Church of [Ireland](#).

February 18, Thursday: [John Boyle O'Reilly](#) sneaked away from his inmate duties to link up with a party of [Irish](#) settlers from the town of Dardanup. They rode to the Collie River, where a rowboat was waiting, and rowed out the Leschenault Inlet, turning north along the ocean coast, traveled about a dozen miles, and concealed themselves among the dunes. They were to await the American whaling ship *Vigilant*, which Father Patrick McCabe had arranged would take him on board when it sailed from its Bunbury anchorage.

February 19, Friday: [John Boyle O'Reilly](#) and the party of [Irish](#) settlers with the rowboat who were helping him to escape sighted the American whaling ship *Vigilant* as it sailed north along the coast after having departed from its anchorage at Bunbury, and began to row out toward it. The *Vigilant* sailed on, not acknowledging the rowboat or its agreement. The party returned to hiding among the dunes while an attempt was made to make a similar arrangement with some other vessel.

July 29, Thursday: Since the American whaler *Gazelle*'s next port of call after Rodrigues was to be the island of Saint Helena (where British authorities could be anticipated to be waiting for him), when the vessel on the high seas on this day hailed the American cargo vessel *Sapphire*, the escaping [Irish](#) prisoner [John Boyle O'Reilly](#) changed ships.

October 13, Wednesday: The American cargo vessel *Sapphire* arrived at Liverpool and the escaped transported [Irish](#) convict [John Boyle O'Reilly](#) transferred in the harbor to another American ship, the *Bombay*.

November 23, Tuesday: The American vessel *Bombay* arrived at Philadelphia and the escaped transported [Irish](#) convict [John Boyle O'Reilly](#) made contact with other [Irishmen](#) in America, who of course greeted him with open arms.



1870

After his arrival at Philadelphia [John Boyle O'Reilly](#) had been put to work as a reporter for the newspaper The Pilot, published in Boston. He covered the Fenian convention in New-York followed by the disastrous 3d Fenian invasion of Canada. This experienced reversed his attitude toward militant violence as a tool for the independence of [Ireland](#), and thereafter he would pursue independence through an agenda to raise the status of the [Irish](#) people, and their self-esteem. His writings would be well received and he would rise to the editorship of The Pilot.

In this decade a patent-medicine craze in the US would reach a peak. However, in the British Isles, [ether](#) came to be scheduled under the Poisons Act, limiting its sale to qualified pharmacists. All ether imports into [Ireland](#) –where there was a significant substance abuse problem– were banned. Since most of the emerald island's [ether](#) supply had been being imported from England and Scotland, within months imports fell off by 80% — and apparently without causing very much illicit home manufacturing.

Prime Minister Gladstone's 1st Land Reform Bill was at this point bringing hope to [Irish](#) hearts.

1872

Work ceased at [Fort Niagara](#) with only the land front completed. Even then the new gun positions were not armed, and the walls had become obsolescent by the time of their completion. The fact that work was carried even to this point was probably due to another period of border tension. The threat of British involvement in the Civil War had soon disappeared as Confederate fortunes had declined. With the end of hostilities, however, large numbers of discharged veteran Union soldiers of [Irish](#) birth had become involved in the Fenian movement. Their new goal was independence for their Irish homeland of origin. One scheme to achieve this had come to be the invasion and conquest of British Canada as a blow against the British Empire and as a bargaining chip to use among other bargaining chips to gain self-determination for [Ireland](#).

[John Boyle O'Reilly](#) got married with Mary Murphy, who was writing for the Young Crusader under the pen name Agnes Smiley. This couple would produce four daughters, Mollie, Eliza, Agnes, and Bland O'Reilly.

1873

[John Boyle O'Reilly](#)'s initial book of poetry, SONGS FROM THE SOUTHERN Seas.

IRELAND

IRELAND

In his essay on “Hereditary Improvement,” Sir Francis Galton, the data-faking founder of the pseudoscience of human **Eugenics**—the discipline which would eventually “cash out” during the eugenicist years of Virginia, California, Indiana, Vermont, and 27 other states as a legitimator of the sterilization of the institutionalized and then during the **Nazi** regime in Germany as a legitimation of genocide—demonstrated that one result of the **Irish Potato Famine** was that the “Irish type of face” had become noticeably “more like the Negro type of face.” That is, the surviving **Irish**, because they had been selected by starvation for “a low or coarse organization,” had developed the type of protruding (prognathous) lower jaw that was typical of our primitive ancestors and is still typical of the present-day inferior races. “These people lead with their chin — which is why we have to strike them.”

Color of Hair	Color of Eyes	Color of Skin	Color of Hair	Color of Eyes
Color of Teeth	Color of Lips	Color of Mouth	Color of Hair	Color of Eyes
Color of Nails	Color of Feet	Color of Hands	Color of Hair	Color of Eyes
Color of Fingers	Color of Toes	Color of Feet	Color of Hair	Color of Eyes



Color of Hair	Color of Eyes	Color of Skin	Color of Hair	Color of Eyes
Color of Teeth	Color of Lips	Color of Mouth	Color of Hair	Color of Eyes
Color of Nails	Color of Feet	Color of Hands	Color of Hair	Color of Eyes
Color of Fingers	Color of Toes	Color of Feet	Color of Hair	Color of Eyes

SLAVERY
PEONAGE



According to Noel Ignatiev's **HOW THE IRISH BECAME WHITE**, "To be acknowledged as white, it was not enough for the Irish to have a competitive advantage over Afro-Americans in the labor market; in order for them to avoid the taint of blackness it was necessary that no Negro be allowed to work in occupations where Irish were to be found."



IRISH PHYSIOGNOMY.

According to the jokes that were going the rounds in those days among non-Irish white racists (the bulk of the population, actually), the Irish were "Negroes turned inside out" while the American free blacks were "smoked Irish."

It has been well said, that inside the charmed Caucasian chalk circle it is the sum of what you are not -not Indian, not Negro, not a Jew, not Irish, etc.- that make you what you are. And, that's as true now as it was then.

1874

John Mitchel went back to [Ireland](#).





IRELAND

IRELAND

1875

In [Ireland](#), Parnell was elected for Meath.

There remained at this point six military Fenians still confined at Fremantle Prison on the western coast of Australia. John Devoy sought [John Boyle O'Reilly](#)'s advice on how *Clan na Gael* might best effect their rescue, and O'Reilly suggested that the group simply purchase an American whaling vessel and send it under the cover of legitimate business to the port of Fremantle. This recommended rescue plan would be implemented, and would be successful.

1877

Harvest: In [Ireland](#), failure of the [potato](#) crop. Would there be another [famine](#)?

1878

[John Boyle O'Reilly](#)'s book of poetry, SONGS, LEGENDS AND BALLADS.

William Edward Hartpole Lecky (1838-1903) pointed out, in the course of his A HISTORY OF ENGLAND IN THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY that would appear in eight volumes between this year and 1882, that the people of the English Pale in Northern [Ireland](#) had begun during the Tudor and Stuart periods to "look upon the Irish as later colonists looked upon the Red Indians."

1879

In [Ireland](#), there was a [famine](#) scare. The Land League was founded by Davitt. The Land War started. From this year into 1882, Parnell would be encouraging the boycott of repressive landlords.

[John Boyle O'Reilly](#)'s novel MOONDYNE.

1880

In [Ireland](#), the initial boycotts. Charles Parnell, elected to Parliament in 1875, became head of The [Irish](#) Party and the National Land League.



IRELAND

IRELAND

March: The USS *Constellation* was carrying relief supplies to victims of yet another [famine](#) in [Ireland](#), until June. To modify the vessel for this mission, her armament and some ballast had been removed, and carpenters at the New York Navy Yard had built bins on the orlop deck in which were stowed over 2,500 barrels of [potatoes](#) and flour.

Continuation of serial publication of [Fyodor Mikhailovich Dostoevski](#)'s THE BROTHERS KARAMAZOV in [The Russian Herald](#): Continuation of Book IX. (Dmitry is taken away.)

April 20, Tuesday: The USS *Constellation* arrived off Queenstown, to offload its cargo of [potatoes](#) and flour onto lighters, for relief of the [Irish famine](#). The vessel would take on ballast for the return trip, and after return, would be re-fitted for its training mission, and depart on its annual midshipman cruise.

In Central Asia, a symphonic poem by Alyeksandr Borodin composed for the silver jubilee of Tsar Alyeksandr II, was performed for the initial time, in Kononov Hall, St. Petersburg, conducted by Nikolai Rimsky-Korsakov. Also premiered were the closing scene from Modest Musorgsky's opera *Khovanshchina*, along with the premiere of Musorgsky's *Mephistopheles' Song of the Flea* for solo voice and piano to words of [Goethe](#) (tr. Strugovshchikov).

1881

[John Boyle O'Reilly](#)'s book of poetry, THE STATUES IN THE BLOCK. Second Land Act. American based *Clan na Gael* raises funds to support the Land League fight against rack rents, unfair evictions and absentee landlords in [Ireland](#). Parnell was arrested and jailed for supporting the tenants in the "Land Wars." The English historian Edward A. Freeman (1823-1892), making a visit to the United States of America, commented that we'd be able create a "grand land" here this side of the pond, "if only every [Irishman](#) would kill a negro, and be hanged for it."

1882

Kilmainham treaty; Parnell released; Land War ended. Murder of Chief Secretary for [Ireland](#).

[John Boyle O'Reilly](#)'s SONGS, LEGENDS, AND BALLADS. On the following screen is a poem from pages 44-45, that contains a line that has often inaccurately on the internet been attributed to Henry David Thoreau:

RULES OF THE ROAD.

WHAT man would be wise, let him drink of the river
 That bears on its bosom the record of time :
 A message to him every wave can deliver
 To teach him to creep till he knows how to climb.
 Who heeds not experience, trust him not ; tell him
 The scope of one mind can but trifles achieve :
 The weakest who draws from the mine will excel him
 The wealth of mankind is the wisdom they leave.

For peace do not hope—to be just you must break it ;
 Still work for the minute and not for the year ;
 When honor comes to you, be ready to take it ;
 But reach not to seize it before it is near.

Be silent and safe—silence never betrays you ;
Be true to your word and your work and your friend ;
 Put least trust in him who is foremost to praise you,
 Nor judge of a road till it draw to the end.

Stand erect in the vale, nor exult on the mountain ;
 Take gifts with a sigh—most men give to be paid ;
[^] I had ” is a heartache, “ I have ” is a fountain,—
 You're worth what you saved, not the million you made.
 Trust toil not intent, or your plans will miscarry ;
 Your wife keep a sweetheart, instead of a tease ;
 Rule children by reason, not rod ; and, mind, marry
 Your girl when you can—and your boy when you please.

Steer straight as the wind will allow ; but be ready
 To veer just a point to let travelers pass :
 Each sees his own star—a stiff course is too steady
 When this one to Meeting goes, that one to Mass.
 Our stream's not so wide but two arches may span it—
 Good neighbor and citizen ; these for a code,
 And this truth in sight,—every man on the planet
 Has just as much right as yourself to the road.



1884

Founding of Gaelic Athletic Association. Electoral reform.

IRELAND

The Supreme Court of the United States of America, in *Elk v. Wilkins*, citing much precedent authority including their fateful decision in the case of *Dred Scott*, ruled that the 14th Amendment to the United States Constitution, although it had freed persons of black African racial origin, had determined nothing whatever in regard to persons of red native American racial origin. They still could have neither citizenship, nor any constitutional rights. Native Americans were not real Americans, but, instead, were mere immigrants here — unless and until they could individually satisfy federal requirements and obtain naturalization papers and other similar recognitions of standing:

If from the beginning of the 18th Century in Anglo-America the term "negro" meant slave, except when explicitly modified by the word "free," so under English law the term "hibernicus," Latin for "Irishman," was the legal term for "unfree." If African-Americans were obliged to guard closely any document they might have attesting their freedom, so in Ireland, at the beginning of the 14th Century, letters patent, attesting to a person's Englishness, were cherished by those who might fall under suspicion of trying to "pass." If under Anglo-American slavery "the rape of a female slave was not a crime, but a mere trespass on the master's property," so in 1278 two Anglo-Normans brought into court and charged with raping Margaret O'Rorke were found not guilty because "the said Margaret is an Irishwoman." If a law enacted in Virginia in 1723 provided that "manslaughter of a slave is not punishable," so under Anglo-Norman law it sufficed for acquittal to show that the victim in a killing was Irish. Anglo-Norman priests granted absolution on the grounds that it was "no more sin to kill an Irishman than a dog or any other brute." If the Georgia Supreme Court ruled in 1851 that "the killing of a negro" was not a felony, but upheld an award of damages to the owner of an African-American bond-laborer murdered by another "white" man, so an English court freed Robert Walsh, an Anglo-Norman charged with killing John Mac Gilmore, because the victim was "a mere Irishman and not of free blood," it being stipulated that "when the master of the said John shall ask damages for the slaying, he [Walsh] will be ready to answer him as the law may require." If in 1884 the United States Supreme Court, citing much precedent authority, including the *Dred Scott* decision, declared that Indians were legally like immigrants, and therefore not citizens except by process of individual naturalization, so for more than four centuries, until 1613, the Irish were regarded by English law as foreigners in their own land. If the testimony of even free African-Americans was inadmissible, so in Anglo-Norman Ireland native Irish of the free classes were deprived of legal defense against English abuse because they were not "admitted to English law," and hence had no rights that an Englishman was bound to respect."





"It is simply crazy that there should ever have come into being a world with such a sin in it, in which a man is set apart because of his color – the superficial fact about a human being. Who could **want** such a world? For an American fighting for his love of country, that the last hope of earth should from its beginning have swallowed **slavery**, is an irony so withering, a justice so intimate in its rebuke of pride, as to measure only with God."



– Stanley Cavell, MUST WE MEAN WHAT WE SAY? 1976, page 141

In this year Frederick Douglass saw publication of his "The Future of the Negro" in The North American Review:

86

THE NORTH AMERICAN REVIEW.

ing from either meanness or magnanimity. Manly self-assertion and eternal vigilance are essential to negro liberty, not less than to that of the white man.

FREDERICK DOUGLASS.

1885

Irish Unionist Party founded to fight Home Rule.

February 18, Wednesday: ADVENTURES OF HUCKLEBERRY FINN, which some take to be the great American indictment against **slavery**, was first published in the USA during this year in which the practice of human enslavement was being defended in America by no one at all. The **Irish** were, however, still in considerable general disrepute — for instance, during this year the Irish were being characterized by John Beddoe, in THE RACES OF BRITAIN, as "Africanoid."²⁶³ Samuel Langhorne Clemens therefore told his illustrator to be careful not to make Huck "Irishy." He did not want his book to be confrontational or socially helpful; to the contrary, he needed for it to sell. The author needed to and he desired to pander rather than attempt any sort of social corrective.

263. THE RACES OF BRITAIN: A CONTRIBUTION TO THE ANTHROPOLOGY OF WESTERN EUROPE. Bristol, England: Arrowsmith, 1885, page 11. Bear in mind that the description "Nigger Jim" does not appear in this book — it was not Mark Twain but his first biographer, Albert Bigelow Paine, who initiated all our references to the Jim character of this novel as "Nigger Jim."



According to Noel Ignatiev's **HOW THE IRISH BECAME WHITE**, "To be acknowledged as white, it was not enough for the Irish to have a competitive advantage over Afro-Americans in the labor market; in order for them to avoid the taint of blackness it was necessary that no Negro be allowed to work in occupations where Irish were to be found."



IRISH PHYSIOGNOMY.

According to the jokes that were going the rounds in those days among non-Irish white racists (the bulk of the population, actually), the Irish were "Negroes turned inside out" while the American free blacks were "smoked Irish."

It has been well said, that inside the charmed Caucasian chalk circle it is the sum of what you are not -not Indian, not Negro, not a Jew, not Irish, etc.- that make you what you are. And, that's as true now as it was then.

The [Concord Free Public Library](#) nevertheless immediately banned this new fiction from its shelves as “the veriest trash.” [Louisa May Alcott](#), in particular (if we can believe a popular writer, Thomas Beer, who claimed to have found this in an unprinted letter from Miss Alcott to Frances Hedges Butler –whoever she was– but who has been caught red-handed at inventing other stuff of that nature in his earlier biography of Stephen Crane), possibly was outraged by the temerity of this author:



If Mr. Clemens cannot think of something better to tell our pure-minded lads and lasses, he had best stop writing for them.

— From Nat Hentoff’s FREE SPEECH FOR ME – BUT NOT FOR THEE: HOW THE AMERICAN LEFT AND RIGHT RELENTLESSLY CENSOR EACH OTHER (HarperCollins/Harry Asher Books)

RACISM
MARK TWAIN



(There is no indication, however, that the [Concord Free Public Library](#) ever removed from its shelves another famous boy’s story which has buried in it a the-black-man-and-the-pig story worthy to be told at a [Ku Klux Klan](#) rally.  The censorious do tend to be unconscious!)



IRELAND

IRELAND

1886

[John Boyle O'Reilly](#)'s book of poetry, IN BOHEMIA.

In [Ireland](#), the 1st Home Rule bill.

1887

[William Allingham](#)'s [IRISH](#) SONGS AND POEMS, WITH NINE AIRS HARMONISED FOR VOICE AND PIANOFORTE (London: Reeves & Turner).

Forged Parnell letters published.

IRELAND

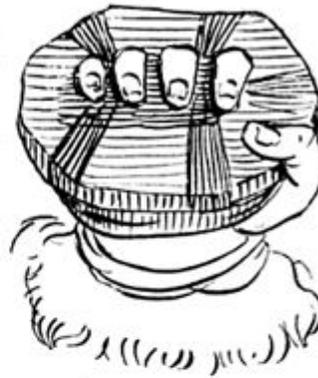
1888

The “Parnell Letters” published in the previous year were being challenged as malicious forgeries.

IRELAND

[John Boyle O'Reilly](#)'s THE ETHICS OF BOXING AND MANLY SPORT.

Two thousand five hundred years ago Greek boxers used only their bare hands. They did nothing rudely, or incompletely, in Greece; and their exercise must have been much the same as ours. Later, as the contests at the great national games of Greece became fiercely earnest, the hands and arms were



RAW-HIDE CESTUS FROM HERCULANEUM.

surrounded with thongs of leather, at first reaching to the wrists, like our “hard gloves,” then carried up to the elbow, and afterward extending up to the shoulder, the hands being heavily weighted and knobbed with lead and iron.

The *cestus* of the Greeks, copied by the Romans, was a dreadful boxing glove, or gauntlet, composed of raw-hide thongs and metal.

1890

Ether drinkers were becoming more numerous and diverse in Ireland as ether became more available and cheaper, and temperance campaigns and fiscal policies make alcohol less desirable, less available, and costlier. By the 1890s, the use of ether as an intoxicant by sophisticate upper classes has declined, possibly in part because of a rise in the availability and popularity of morphine which is pleasanter to use and leaves no tell-tale smell. Use continues to grow among lower classes and peasant communities of Prussia, Hungary, Austria, Russia, Norway, France, and Great Britain. As in Ireland, heavy alcohol taxes may have contributed to this phenomenon.

Parnell's divorce case at this point led to his being deposed from the leadership of the Irish Party. In a year he would be dead. It is estimated that at this point 1/8th of the population of Londonderry and Tyrone counties in Ireland were reduced by the unavailability of alcohol to the use of ether, not for purposes of anesthesia but for purposes of recreational intoxication. The spread of ether into the other counties of Ireland would be driven back by Catholicism and by the law before it could take root (helped along by the fact that a less marginal peasantry would find the drug to be less appealing than alcohol and would therefore abandon it after limited experimentation).

THE TEMPERANCE MOVEMENT

1891

October 6, day: Charles Stewart Parnell died.

IRELAND

1893

Second Home Rule Bill. Gaelic League founded.

IRELAND

1899

Griffith founded "United Irishman" newspaper.

IRELAND



20TH CENTURY

1900

Localized use of [ether](#) in [Ireland](#) continued, since this liquid was still freely available from pharmacists. Some clandestine trade also developed.

The Spanish, who for centuries had been the prime consumers of [chocolate](#) per capita, had at this point fallen far behind. The Germans had come to hold the lead in consumption per capita, followed by the United States, France, and Great Britain. Within a decade or two the Swiss (I know this is hard to imagine) would be seizing the lead in chocolate consumption per capita.

George [Cadbury](#) founded the Bournville Village Trust. This included 330 acres of land, providing spacious and sanitary houses. By 1915 Bournville’s infant mortality rate would be down to 47 per 1,000 live births, whereas in central Birmingham the rate would in contrast be 187 per 1,000.

1901

January 22, Tuesday: Alexandrina Victoria, who had in 1837 become [Queen Victoria](#) of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and [Ireland](#), and of all British conquests across the earth, Empress of India, and had survived seven thwarted assassination attempts, died at the age of 82 after a reign of 63 years in the presence of her family (including her grandson Kaiser Wilhelm II of Germany) at Osborne on the Isle of Wight.

George III	1760	1820
The Prince Regency	1811	1820
George IV	1820	1830
William IV	1830	1837
Victoria	1837	1901

She would be succeeded by her son Albert “Dirty Bertie” Edward, who had been waiting for this for all of four decades, as [Edward VII](#).

Two women reigned during Thoreau’s *florut*. There were many similarities:

Dynasty	Period	Person	<i>Florut</i>
Windsor	1837-present	Queen Victoria	1837-1901
<i>Ch’ing</i> 清	1644-1911	The Empress Dowager Tz’u-hsi 慈禧	1861-1908

IRELAND

IRELAND

The Queen is dead. Long live the King.



1902

April 15, Tuesday: Arnold Schoenberg received the following postcard message at his Berlin address: "Dear Sir, you can see me every day from three till four at home. Yours sincerely, Richard Strauss."

A 20 year-old Social Revolutionary student shot to death at point blank range Russian Minister of the Interior D.S. Sipiagin, in the Mariinsky Palace of St. Petersburg.

Mounting anti-British protests induced the British government to declare a state of emergency in nine counties of [Ireland](#).

The children's operetta Fairy Pantomime of Cinderella was performed for the initial time, at St. Mary's School, and was conducted by its composer Gustav Holst.



Two airs from John Knowles Paine's unperformed opera Azara were performed for the initial time, in Steinert Hall, Boston.

[Ellery Channing](#) having died in the previous year (which rendered it somewhat less convenient for him to be difficult), Franklin Benjamin Sanborn completed an enlarged edition of Channing's 1853/1863/1873 effort titled THOREAU THE POET-NATURALIST WITH MEMORIAL VERSES BY WILLIAM ELLERY CHANNING (the original Channing editions had been of course a total mess — and this Sanborn edition, you will find, printed in November for the firm of Charles E. Goodspeed in Boston at the Merrymount Press of D.B. Updike, would not be all that much of an improvement).

[READ THE FULL TEXT](#)

INTRODUCTION

ELLERY CHANNING's biography of his most intimate friend, Thoreau, had a peculiar history. Soon after Thoreau's death in May, 1862, Channing began to write his life, for which he had long been making preparation, both consciously and unconsciously. In 1853, when a plan was formed, which never was fully carried out, for collecting into a book under Channing's editing a series of walks and talks about Concord and its region, in which Emerson, Thoreau, Channing, and Alcott should be the recorders and interlocutors, Mr. Channing, who had then been for ten years a resident of Concord, with occasional absences in New York and Europe, had access to the journals of Thoreau, and made various copies therefrom. Later, and during Thoreau's last illness, he copied from them still more specifically; and the books, now in my possession, in which these extracts were entered, were borrowed by Emerson in revising for publication his funeral eulogy of Thoreau, which now appears as an introduction to the volume called "Excursions." Other portions were copied while Channing was assisting Sophia Thoreau to edit the "Maine Woods"; so that the manuscript volume finally contained many pages from Thoreau's journals for the last ten or twelve years of his life. In 1863 very few of these had been published, although a few appeared in Thoreau's contributions to the "Atlantic Monthly," and in Emerson's eulogy. Had the book appeared then, early in 1864, as Channing expected, it would have been a fresh and varied addition to what the public had of Thoreau's original and carefully written observations on nature and man.

With all this preparation, Channing in 1863 composed a hundred and thirty-four large manuscript pages in a book now lying before me, his first draft of "Thoreau, the Poet-Naturalist"; copied it out, with omissions and additions, and sent me the first half of the copy for publication, week by week, in the "Boston Commonwealth" newspaper, which I had begun to edit in February, 1863, and to which Miss Thoreau had contributed several of her brother's unprinted poems. I copyrighted the work in my own name, as Mr. Channing desired, and began to publish it early in 1864. After several weeks, I omitted the weekly chapter of Thoreau (whose readers were much fewer forty years ago than now), in order to give my limited space for literary



matter to other contributors for a fortnight. At this omission my friend took offence, and recalled his manuscript, so that the work remained a fragment for nearly ten years, during which time much of the unprinted manuscript of Thoreau found its way into print, and stimulated the desire of readers to know more of the author. This suggested to me and to Channing that he might issue his work in a volume, as he had "The Wanderer" (1871), which proved in some degree popular. I made an arrangement with the late Thomas Niles, then the head of the house of Roberts Brothers, by which an edition of fifteen hundred copies of the biography should be published in the autumn of 1873; and the volume known to libraries and collectors as "Thoreau, the Poet-Naturalist" made its appearance, and sold moderately well. Indeed, it was the most popular of all Channing's nine volumes, published by him at intervals from 1843 to 1886. It escaped the Boston fires which had destroyed the unsold copies of "The Wanderer," and in twenty years was so completely sold out that it was with difficulty the publishers procured for me a single copy for presentation to our Plymouth friend, Marston Watson of Hillside, to whom Channing had omitted to send it, or who may have given away his copy. A copy now and then coming to market at present sells for five dollars. But the volume of 1873 (now out of print and its copyright expired) was very different from that composed in 1863. With the perversity of genius Channing had gone over his first draft, omitting much, making portions of the rest obscure and enigmatical, but enriching it with the treasures of his recondite learning in mottoes, allusions, and numberless citations, — the whole without much method, or with a method of his own, not easily followed by the reader, who had not the guide-board of an index to help him out. Withal, Channing had inserted here and there matchless passages of description, his own or Thoreau's, which made the book then, and ever since, a mine of citations for every biographer of the poet-naturalist who succeeded him, — beginning with the Scotch litterateur who called himself "H.A. Page," and whose little volume was soon reprinted in Boston by Thoreau's publishers. In my new edition, based upon a copy with the author's revision and notes, I have inserted here and there passages of no great length which I find in the original sketch, and which make the meaning plainer and the story more consecutive. At the end of this volume will be found some additions to the "Memorial Poems" which evidently belong there. But a still more singular peculiarity marked the volume of 1873. As its printing went on, the publisher (Mr. Niles) consulted me in regard to it, finding Mr. Channing not always responsive to his suggestions; and finally said to me, for the author's information, that the volume was about fifty pages smaller than he had expected to make it. Could not Mr. Channing, then, who seemed to have much material at his disposal, add the requisite pages to the work? Certainly, was the reply; and how was it done? From the long-deferred manuscript of 1853, "Country Walking" by name, containing long passages from the journals of Emerson and Thoreau with bits of actual conversation; sketches and snatches of character by Channing himself, and here and there a poem or fragment by Channing or Emerson, — from this medley of records,



meant for another purpose, Channing selected the required number of pages, – cut the original book open in the midst, and inserted the new-old matter. It makes the bulk of sixty-seven pages (old edition), from the hundred and twentieth to the hundred and eighty-seventh, inclusive, and is so printed that the authors themselves could hardly pick out their own share in this olio [sic]. In the revision Channing has indicated with some clearness (to my eyes) who is the spokesman in each colloquy, and I have prefixed or affixed the names of the interlocutors in most cases. This matter, though improperly given to the world thirty years ago, and occasioning Mr. Emerson, and possibly Miss Thoreau, some vexation, has now been public property so long that I reprint it without hesitation, but sometimes changing its order. I have also inserted occasionally passages out of Thoreau's journal or papers which have not yet been published, perhaps, but the printing of which will only add to the value of that great store of unprinted manuscript which Mr. E.H. Russell of Worcester now holds, and is preparing to publish in a more methodical form than Thoreau's good friend Blake did.

I have felt a strong personal interest in this biography, not only from my long friendship both with Thoreau and Channing, but because I have been so conversant, for nearly forty years, with the contents of the volume, and with the manuscripts out of which they were condensed. And I have prefixed to this edition a portrait, not of Thoreau, but Ellery Channing himself, taken as a photograph by that excellent artist, Mr. Henry Smith of the Studio Building, Boston, not long after the publication of the first edition in 1873. At the time, three sittings were given by Mr. Channing, all in one day, but presenting different views of the sitter. That chosen for this book is not his most poetic aspect, – which is reserved for the volume of Channing's "Poems of Sixty-five Years," now in press at Philadelphia, – but rather the shrewd, humorous face, with its ancestral resemblances and reminders of kinship, which seems most fitting for this prose volume. Those who remember Mr. Channing's cousin, the late John Murray Forbes, at the age (about fifty-six) when this portrait was made, will be struck, as I was, with a certain resemblance, – as also to the interesting Perkins family of Boston, from whom both Mr. Forbes and Ellery Channing derived many traits. Intellectually, the cousinship of John Forbes and Ellery Channing showed itself in that surprising quickness and perspicacity which, in the elder, the Merchant, was directed towards the secrets of Fortune and the management of men, – and in the younger, the Poet, towards every aspect of Man and of Nature, imaginatively transcribed in that volume which Shakespeare studied, saying,

"In Nature's infinite book of secrecy
A little I can read."

Channing read much therein: had his gift of expression been coequal with his extraordinary insight, none would ever think of denying to him the title which he modestly claimed for himself, – the high name of Poet. He had, in fact, more completely than any man since Keats, the traditional poetical temperament, intuitive, passionate, capricious, with by turns



IRELAND

IRELAND

the most generous and the most exacting spirit. One other trait he had, never seen by me in such force in any other, ?- the power to see and the impulse to state all sides of any matter which presented itself to his alert and discriminating intellect. He would utter an opinion, in itself pertinent, but partial; in a moment, if not disputed, he would bring forth the complementary opinion, and so go round his subject until its qualities had been exhausted; and this not with the formality of syllogisms or enthymemes, but as the poet's eye, in Shakespeare's phrase,

"Doth glance from heaven to earth, from earth to heaven."

The "Memorial Verses" at the end of the biography are here printed with some alterations and additions. Their connection with his friend Thoreau is sometimes slight, but the connection existed in his enduring memory and his tender heart, and among them are some of his best lines. The Cape poems, commemorative in part of his walks along the sands with Thoreau, and in part of earlier joys and sorrows at Truro, were, I believe, regarded by Emerson as the best of his middle-age verses, except the Ode at the consecration of the Cemetery, in 1855, where his ashes now repose. The "Still River" deals with a walk from Ayer to Lancaster, passing by a village or two, and the lonely farmhouse of "Fruitlands," where Alcott and his friends in 1843-44 played out their idyll of an ascetic community. I have added to this poem, which was written before 1853, a concluding passage describing the winter landscape in the valley of the Nashua, into which, not far from Fruitlands, the stream called Still River quietly flows. Nashua, into which, not far from Fruitlands, the stream called Still River quietly flows.

F.B. SANBORN.

1903

Land Purchase Act.

IRELAND

1904

Griffith founded "*Sinn Féin*" newspaper and political party.

IRELAND



1906

Liberal Party in power; no need for [Irish](#) Party support; no Home Rule Bill.

1907

October 17, Thursday: Regular, reliable transatlantic radiotelegraph service was inaugurated by Guglielmo Marconi from Cape Breton to Clifden, [Ireland](#) (10,000 words were sent and received on this 1st day).

Incidental music to Shakespeare's play (translated by Schröder) Was ihr wollt (Twelfth Night) by Engelbert Humperdinck was performed for the initial time, in the Deutsches Theater, Berlin.

1909

Completion of [Ireland's Land Purchase Act](#) process, that had been enacted in five successive stages by the British government since 1870 (further such acts would be initiated by the government of the Irish Free State after 1922).

1910

May 6, Friday: [Albert Edward, King Edward VII of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, Emperor of India](#), died at the age of 69. He had been staying at Biarritz, smoking a pack of cigarettes and a dozen cigars a day as per usual despite his bronchitis, until he had collapsed in March and had been brought home to Buckingham Palace. After arriving there he had suffered several heart attacks. Finally, on this day, after several moments of faintness, he lost consciousness at 11:30PM and was put to bed, where he soon stopped breathing. After a decent interval of three days, his son Prince George Frederick would be proclaimed King George V.

1911

Under the Parliament Act, the British House of Lords was no longer to have a veto on legislation.



IRELAND

IRELAND

September 23, Saturday: Vladimir Nikolaevich Kokovtsev replaced the late Pyotr Arkadyevich Stolypin as prime minister of Russia.

50,000 people rallied near Belfast against home rule for [Ireland](#).

1912

Third Home Rule Bill. Solemn League and Covenant. [Irish](#) Labour Party founded.

1913

Foundation of an Ulster Volunteer Force, an [Irish](#) Citizen Army, and the [Irish](#) National Volunteers.

July 7, Monday: The Third Home Rule Bill for [Ireland](#) was approved by the House of Commons.

July 15, Tuesday: Turkey sends its army into Thrace to attack Adrianople (Edirne).

The Third Home Rule Bill for [Ireland](#) was rejected by the House of Lords.

1914

Curragh mutiny. Gun-running. First World War started. Home Rule passed with provisos for Ulster. Implementation of Home Rule postponed because of outbreak of World War I.

IRELAND

March 3, Tuesday: A letter in [The Times of London](#) protested the granting of home rule to [Ireland](#) was signed by 20 prominent Englishmen including Edward Elgar.



IRELAND

IRELAND

September 28, Monday: Japanese troops breach the outer defenses of the [German](#) outpost of Tsingtao.

[German](#) forces counterattack against the Russians along the Vistula River on a wide front between Krakow and Czestachowa.

[Germans](#) captured Malines, halfway between Brussels and Antwerp.

Home Rule for [Ireland](#) was granted the Royal Assent, but was suspended for the duration of the war.

WORLD WAR I

October 27, Tuesday: During target practice off the northeast coast of [Ireland](#) the British dreadnought *Audacious* hit a mine, blew up, and sank.

1915

May 7, Friday: The Germans captured Libau, a Russian Baltic port.

At 14:10 Greenwich Mean Time in the afternoon, the RMS *Lusitania*, a Cunard liner that was carrying not only civilian passengers but also munitions of war which had been loaded aboard her in full sight without any attempt at secrecy,²⁶⁴ was struck by the [German](#) U-boat U-20, Captain Schwieger, 14 miles off the Old Head of Kinsale on the [Irish](#) coast, a region of the ocean which was known by the British to be inhabited by German submarines, with the loss of (counting the three anomalous Germans who had been discovered aboard without tickets, being held in the ship's brig) 1,152 passengers, plus 49 crewmembers. Of the passengers, 102 had been Americans. After the torpedo struck the forward cargo hold, there had been a large secondary explosion and the ship went under in 18 minutes.²⁶⁵



The blackest count in the indictment against Germany is foreshadowed in the warning by the Imperial German Embassy at Washington to all Americans, of the crime which was to follow on May 7th, 1915.

Upon hearing the news of the *Lusitania*, a group of commuters at the Hanover Square Station of New York's Third Avenue Elevated Railroad, prompted by a nearby hurdy-gurdy, began spontaneously to sing In the Sweet Bye and Bye. One of the commuters was Charles Ives, an insurance executive, who would commemorate the event in his Second Orchestral Set.

At the invitation of Isabella Stewart Gardner, Harvard student Roger Sessions played some Richard Strauss on the piano at a musical evening in her Renaissance palazzo in Boston. Also in attendance were two friends of Sessions, ee cummings and Chandler R. Post.

WORLD WAR I

264. There have of course been allegations that this mingling of civilian and military was done as a purposed provocation, designed to create a win/win situation: if they elect to let such a vessel through, we have transported the armaments, while if they elect to sink the vessel, they have granted us a provocation for righteously entering a state of war with them.

August 19, Thursday: 250 Armenians were killed in the city of Urfa in a massacre by Turks inaugurating the first attempt to uproot the Armenians of Urfa. The Armenians of Urfa began the defense of their city.

Lord Bryce reported that 500,000 Armenians had been murdered in Turkey.

ARMENIAN GENOCIDE

German forces captured Kaunas.

German forces captured Novo-Georgiewsk (Modlin) and 90,000 Russian prisoners.

Turks attacked the Armenians of Urfa, killing 250. The Armenians put up a defense.

The White Star liner *Arabic* was sunk by a German submarine off Fastnet Rock, the most southerly point of Ireland, with the loss of 44 of the 423 passengers and crew, two of whom were American citizens.

WORLD WAR I

265. This shifted American opinion far enough for the country to seriously entertain the possibility of joining World War I, and the general reaction in Germany was fear of causing the US to become involved. The Kaiser therefore called a halt to unrestricted submarine warfare in British waters, and for the better part of two years Britain would obtain a respite from the U-boat offensive, giving it an opportunity to recoup its losses and build up both merchant and naval shipping tonnage.



«La guerre est une série de catastrophes qui produisent la victoire.»

– Georges Clemenceau





SARDEL



1916

April 12, Wednesday: [Irish](#) revolutionary Roger Casement was spirited into [Ireland](#) by a [German](#) U-boat. American sources had provided rifles and funding for a revolution.

An American scouting party, 300 kilometers inside [Mexico](#) in the town of Parral, was fired upon by civilians. Mexican federal troops soon joined the engagement on the side of the civilians. The Americans withdrew. There were 42 dead.

Symphony in Yellow op.3/2 to words of Wilde from Tone-Images for solo voice and piano by Charles T. Griffes was performed for the initial time, in the Punch and Judy Theater, New York.

April 14, Friday: By this date, 70,000 Armenians were reported massacred at Ras-el-Ain (Ras ul-Ain).

[ARMENIAN GENOCIDE](#)

Russian forces made one final attempt to dislodge the [Germans](#) at Lake Naroch. It failed. The offensive had cost 130,000 casualties.

A combined Russian land and sea attack on Kara-dere sent Turkish troops into retreat toward Trebizond.

[WORLD WAR I](#)

April 15, Saturday: The Russian Army occupies Trebizond. With the exception of a few Armenian orphans and widows secretly sheltered by Greeks, no Armenians were found in the city.

A battalion of the Turkish 4th Army Engineers arrives in Ras-el-Ain (Ras ul-Ain) from Damascus to assist in massacring the Armenians.

19,000 Armenian deportees arrived near the Khabur River.

[ARMENIAN GENOCIDE](#)

April 18, Tuesday: Russian forces captured Trebizond (Trabzon) on the Black Sea from Turkey without opposition. Of the large Armenian population there, they found only a few widows and orphans.

US President Wilson threatened [Germany](#) with a break in relations if submarine attacks on passenger ships were not stopped.

Two of the Trois M elodies by Erik Satie to words of Godebska and Chalupt, were performed for the 1st time, at the Soci et  Lyre et Palette, Paris.

April 19, Wednesday: President Woodrow Wilson issued a warning to [Germany](#), that it had better not persist in its current submarine policy.

WORLD WAR I

50 to 100 Armenian deportees were reported to be dying of starvation every day in Meskene, Abu Herir (Abuharar), Sabkha (Sebka), and Hammam (Hamam).

ARMENIAN GENOCIDE



April 20, Thursday: Russian troops landed at Marseilles for service on the French front.

WORLD WAR I

April 23, Sunday: Sir Roger Casement came ashore from a [German](#) U-boat at Tralee. He was arrested by British authorities.

The Finnish Senate awarded a professorship to Jean Sibelius.

April 24, Monday: Padraic Pearse, at the head of about 1,500 volunteers, proclaimed the [Irish](#) Republic on the steps of the Dublin Post Office, beginning five days of fighting with British troops. The Republicans seized 14 of the city's important buildings.

WORLD WAR I



IRELAND

IRELAND

April 25, Tuesday: In an effort to support the [Irish](#) Easter Rebellion, [German](#) ships bombarded Lowestoft and Yarmouth. They were chased away by the Royal Navy. Three submarines were sunk — two [German](#) and one British.

April 26, Wednesday: The British gunboat *Helga* bombarded Dublin, destroying the Liberty Hall headquarters of the Labour Party and other buildings. Shells from the *Helga* and British artillery killed many [Irish](#) civilians and started fires in the city. When British troops landed at Kingstown and marched toward Dublin, an ambush could not prevent their arrival.

April 27, Thursday: Goffredo Mameli, an azione storica by Ruggero Leoncavallo to words of Belvederi and the composer, was performed for the initial time, at the Teatro Carlo Felice, Genoa, conducted by the composer. The response was lukewarm and the press found many faults.

British artillery set the General Post Office in Dublin on fire. The newly arrived British soldiers began gunning down [Irishmen](#) on sight.

April 28, Friday: When the Irish Republican rebels abandoned the General Post Office in Dublin, the British troops following them down King's Street indiscriminately shot or bayoneted any [Irishman](#) they could.

The Moslem government of Turkey again rejected foreign relief for the Armenian Christians.

[ARMENIAN GENOCIDE](#)

April 29, Saturday: After a 5-month siege, the starving, diseased British defenders of Kut-al-Imara (Al Kut), 9,000 men under General Townshend, surrendered to the Turks.

Padraic Pearse announced the unconditional surrender of Republican rebel forces in [Ireland](#).

April 30, Sunday: Claude Shannon was born in Gaylord, Michigan. Claude's father was also named Claude Elwood Shannon, and his mother was Mabel Catherine Wolf Shannon.

The [Irish](#) Easter Rebellion ended with the unconditional surrender of President Patrick Pearse and various other leaders, who would be tried by British courts-martial and of course executed.

August 3, Thursday: In London, [Irish](#) revolutionary Roger Casement was hanged (after a wave of such executions, public opinion would favor independence).



1917

The English released [Irish](#) prisoners. Eamonn de Valera was elected to represent East Clare. A new *Sinn Féin* political party was formed.

1918

Toward the end of the 1st First World War, *Sinn Féin* achieved political victory in [Ireland](#).

May 16, Thursday: A Sedition Act passed by the United States Congress prohibited any criticism of the government, or criticism of the draft, or labor action.

WORLD WAR I

The politician Eamonn De Valera and most of the leadership of *Sinn Féin* were arrested after leading a successful campaign against conscription in [Ireland](#).

1919

In [Ireland](#), *Dáil Éireann* met. Collins began to organize the killing of policemen. There would be a state of war between Britain and the Irish Republican Army, a war that would be fought to a stalemate, until in 1921 Britain would offer freedom to the 26 southern counties while retaining “temporary” control of the 6 northern counties.

January 21, Tuesday: 27 of the 106 [Irish](#) members of the British Parliament constituted themselves as the 1st *Dáil Éireann* in Dublin and announced the establishment of the Irish Republic. Only 27 of the 73 *Sinn Féin* MPs took part because most of the others were in jail. The same day, fighting began as nine republicans killed two policemen in Solloghobeg, County Tipperary.

25,000 dock workers in Seattle went on strike in a wage dispute.

April 1, Tuesday: Eamon de Valera became prime minister of [Ireland](#).

The Krupp armaments factory in München closed and its 4,000 workers were added to the unemployment rolls.

The State Bauhaus was founded in Weimar by Walter Gropius.



IRELAND

IRELAND

June 15, Sunday: John Alcock and Arthur W. Brown completed the initial non-stop transatlantic flight, flying from St. John's Newfoundland to Derrygimla Bog, [Ireland](#) in 16 hours and 12 minutes.

Incidental music to Claudel's (after Aeschylus) play Les Choéphores, by Darius Milhaud was performed for the initial time, in a concert setting, in Paris.

Nuit de Walpurgis classique op.38, a symphonic poem by Charles Koechlin, was performed for the initial time, in Salle Gaveau, Paris.

Horatio Parker's cantata A.D. 1919, to words of Hooker, was performed for the initial time, at Yale University, New Haven, Connecticut, in memory of students and alumni of Yale killed in the Great War.

September 7, Sunday: [Irish](#) nationalists attacked a party of 16 British soldiers in Fermoy. They shot four, killing one, and, seriously injuring the remainder with clubs, took their weapons.

Birkenfeld became once again part of Oldenburg.

September 8, Monday: After a coroner's jury found the killing of a British soldier on the previous day not to have been premeditated, British soldiers from a local station ransacked Fermoy, [Ireland](#).

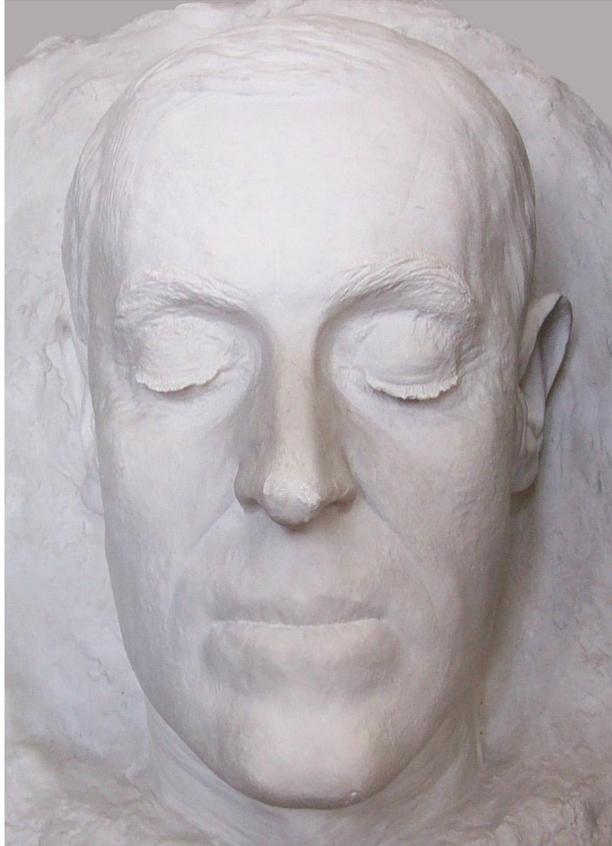
When the Police Commissioner for Boston suspended 19 leaders of the policemen's union, the police voted almost unanimously to go on strike.

Charles T. Griffes signed a contract with the Aeolian Company to create piano rolls of his compositions.

President Woodrow Wilson spoke at Sioux Falls, commenting that "Sometimes people call me an idealist. Well, that is the way I know I am an American. America is the only idealistic nation in the world." James Ferguson Conant has remarked this in his essay "Cavell and the Concept of America" (CONTENDING WITH STANLEY CAVELL, ed. Russell B. Goodman, Oxford UP, 2005, page 55):

Is there, as President Woodrow Wilson thought, an internal relation between the concept of America and a certain ideal? Or is it that, as Chesterton thought, there is nothing the matter with Americans except their ideals? Or does America stripped of its ideals amount to nothing more than President Coolidge's view of the matter? Or is there a distinction to be drawn, as [Waldo Emerson](#) thought, between the ideal and its debasement by those

who most loudly proclaim it?



(deathmask)

September 11, Thursday: [Adolf Hitler](#) inspected the *Deutsche Arbeiterpartei*. He would join this group.

PROTO-NAZISM

Viscount French, Lord-Lieutenant of [Ireland](#), banned the *Dáil Éireann* as dangerous. The government then instituted searches and seizures throughout the country.

Great Britain announced that it would withdraw its troops from Murmansk and Arkhangelsk.

United States Marines landed in Honduras.

HMS *Hermes* was launched on the River Tyne (this was the initial vessel constructed expressly to be an aircraft carrier but would not be commissioned for four years).

Troops in Boston were attacked when they tried to make arrests. One person was killed. The riots essentially came to an end on this day. When the police union leaders suggested to Governor Calvin Coolidge that they would return to work while negotiating, he replied that there was nothing to negotiate and endorsed a plan to fire all strikers.



IRELAND

IRELAND

September 16, Tuesday: Ethel Smyth met Edith Somerville, an author, artist, and farmer, for the 1st time, at a railroad station in [Ireland](#). They would be lovers.

December 19, Friday: When Irish nationalists ambushed the car of Lord French, Viceroy for [Ireland](#), in Dublin, he escaped without injury but his guards killed one of the attackers.

Three orchestral works by Charles T. Griffes, Notturmo, Bacchanale and Clouds were performed for the initial time, in Philadelphia.

1920

March 10, Wednesday: The Netherlands was admitted to the League of Nations.

The British Parliament passed a Home Rule bill which divided [Ireland](#) into two parts.

The Hymn of Jesus op.37 for chorus and orchestra by Gustav Holst to words from the Apocryphal Acts of St. John, was performed for the initial time, privately, at the Royal College of Music, London.

March 25, Thursday: The initial organizational meeting of the American Orchid Society at Horticultural Hall in [Boston](#).

The 1st elements of the so called “Black and Tans” arrived in [Ireland](#). These were mostly unemployed war veterans recruited by the British to swell the ranks of the Royal Irish Constabulary. They would become notorious for brutal retaliations against civilians in response to Irish Republican Army provocations.

The Hymn of Jesus op.37 for chorus and orchestra to words from the Apocryphal Acts of St. John was performed publicly for the initial time, in Queen’s Hall, London, with Gustav Holst himself conducting.

September 2, Thursday: The last Italian troops left Albania.

Longshoremen in Brooklyn refused to offload British ships until all British troops evacuated [Ireland](#).

November 21, [Bloody Sunday](#): On this day in Dublin, [Ireland](#), great violence erupted between the Irish Republican Army and the Royal Irish Constabulary — I’d describe it if I could do that with glee, but it’s just too utterly stupid and annoying.

December 23, Thursday: The British Parliament passed the Government of [Ireland](#) Act granting home rule. Most of the Irish nationalists who had fought so long for this no longer favored it, having moved on to demand independence.



1921

May 25, Wednesday: The [Irish](#) Republican Army destroyed the Dublin Customs House.

June 25, Saturday: Aaron Copland reached the school at Fontainebleau.

Eamonn de Valera, leader of the [Irish](#) Republicans, accepted an invitation from British Prime Minister Lloyd George to a conference to discuss a settlement in Ireland.

July 11, Monday: In [Germany](#), [Adolf Hitler](#) resigned from his *Nationalsozialistische Deutsche Arbeiterpartei* (National Socialist German Workers' Party, or NSDAP) in a move designed to prevent Anton Drexler from merging the party with Julius Streicher's *Deutschsozialistische Partei* (the German Socialist Party or DSP).

[PROTO-NAZISM](#)

A communist government took power in Mongolia.

A truce between [Irish](#) and British forces went into effect in Ireland.

At the Liberty Theater in New York, George White's "Scandals of 1921," a revue with book by Baer and White, lyrics by Jackson, and five new songs by George Gershwin, was performed for the initial time.

December 6, Tuesday: Said Halim was assassinated in Rome.

[ARMENIAN GENOCIDE](#)

Qazim Kaculi replaced Pandeli Evangjeli as prime minister of Albania.

British and [Irish](#) negotiators agreed to dominion status for Ireland, and created the Irish Free State (*Saorstát Éireann*). The nation was to be self-governing but its citizens would swear allegiance to the British crown. The parliament for Northern Ireland would open with Craig as Prime Minister. An Irish Civil War would eventuate between "Free Staters" who accepted this treaty with Britain and "Republicans" who insisted on all 32 counties being united as one independent nation.

Composer and pianist Jean Wiéner opened his Concerts Wiéner new music series in the Salle des Agriculteurs, Paris. He programmed an hour of jazz with Billy Arnold and his band, a player piano version of Le Sacre du Printemps, and Darius Milhaud's Sonata for flute, oboe, clarinet, and piano op.47. Aaron Copland was in the audience. Wiéner would recall that Maurice Ravel enjoyed the performance very much but that Albert Roussel had walked out in protest.



1922

January 7, Saturday: The *Dáil Éireann* voted 64-57-3 to ratify the Anglo-[Irish](#) Treaty of 1921 creating the [Irish](#) Free State.

The *Quatre Poèmes* for baritone, flute, oboe, clarinet, bassoon and trumpet by Francis Poulenc to words of Jacob, was performed for the initial time, in Paris under the baton of Darius Milhaud, on the composer's 23rd birthday. The work would be destroyed by Poulenc.

Sonata for two flutes op.75 by Charles Koechlin was performed for the initial time, in Salle des agriculteurs, Paris.

January 10, Tuesday: The *Dáil Éireann* ratified the treaty creating the [Irish](#) Free State. Arthur Griffith was named to head a provisional government until elections could be held.

Two works for voice and piano by Aaron Copland were performed for the initial time, in the Salle des agriculteurs, Paris, with the composer himself at the piano: *Old Poem*, to anonymous Chinese words translated by Waley, and *Pastorale*, to anonymous Kafiristan words translated by Matthews.

Quatre poèmes de Paul Claudel pour baryton op.26 for voice and piano by Darius Milhaud was performed completely for the initial time, in Paris.

January 16, Monday: A provisional government for the [Irish](#) Free State took office under Chairman Michael Collins.

April 7, Friday: Jemal Azmi, the governor-general of Trebizond during the massacres, and Behaeddin Shakir were assassinated in Berlin.

ARMENIAN GENOCIDE

After Republican riots in Belfast, with 232 dead the Parliament of Northern Ireland had passed a [Special Powers Act](#), and on this day the act received Royal assent and went into effect. The British would create a military force of over 40,000 "special forces" and 16 Army divisions in the 6 northern counties of [Ireland](#). The Act allowed:

- Arrests & Searches without warrant or warning
- Detention without trial or arrest, and interrogation without cause for up to 48 hours, with no legal representation
- Outlawed public meetings or demonstrations
- Confiscation of private property without court order
- Outlawed membership in any "unapproved" organization
- Imposed curfews and allowed roadblocks at will.



IRELAND

IRELAND

April 14, Friday: Members of the Irish Republican Army, a group constituted to “safeguard the honor and independence of the Irish people,” occupied the Four Courts and other important buildings in Dublin. They opposed the Anglo-[Irish](#) Treaty and wanted to resume fighting against the British.

The [Wall Street Journal](#) reported that US Secretary of the Interior Albert B. Fall had leased the Teapot Dome oil reserve in Wyoming to his friend Harry F. Sinclair of the Mammoth Oil Corporation. President Warren Harding defended Fall by stating that the leases had his prior approval.

June 22, Thursday: Field Marshall Henry Wilson was shot and killed by two Irish Republican Army men outside his home in London. The [Irishmen](#) were captured, and would hang in August.

June 27, Tuesday: When members of the [Irish](#) Republican Army kidnapped [Irish](#) General Ginger O’Connell, the [Irish](#) government of Michael Collins ordered its troops to fire on the [Irish](#) Republican Army in the Four Courts building in Dublin (this is a convenient marker for the beginning of the [Irish](#) Civil War).

July 20, Thursday: The League of Nations granted a mandate over Ruanda-Urundi to Belgium.

Troops of the [Irish](#) Free State captured Limerick and Waterford from the [Irish](#) Republican Army.

August 10, Thursday: [Irish](#) Free State forces took Cork from the [Irish](#) Republican Army.

August 12, Saturday: Arthur Griffith, president of [Ireland](#)’s *Dáil Éireann*, died of a heart attack.

Claude Champagne got married with Jeanne Marchal, a Belgian woman he had met on the ship coming over to France in the previous year.

August 22, Tuesday: The head of the [Irish](#) government, Michael Collins, was shot and killed from ambush in Beal-na-Blath, Cork while on military inspection tour, presumably by Republicans opposed to the treaty of December 6, 1921.

August 25, Friday: William T. Cosgrave became Chairman of the Provisional Government of [Ireland](#).

September 2, Saturday: William Cosgrave replaced Arthur Griffith as prime minister of [Ireland](#).

September 9, Saturday: The advance guard of the Turkish Army entered Smyrna and pillaged Armenian and Greek homes and stores, killing Armenians and Greeks in the thousands. Religious institutions, including the Armenian Prelacy in Smyrna, were ransacked.

ARMENIAN GENOCIDE



When William T. Cosgrave was elected as President of [Ireland](#)'s *Dáil Éireann*, this reconciled the previously competing offices of Chairman of the Provisional Government and President of the *Dáil Éireann*.

October 25, Wednesday: [Japan](#) evacuated Vladivostok. The city and Pacific coastal region were annexed to the Far Eastern Republic.

The *Dáil Éireann* adopted a constitution for the [Irish](#) Free State.

November 17, Friday: Believing his life to be in danger, Ottoman Sultan Mehmet VI boarded a British warship to be conveyed to Malta.

The [Irish](#) Free State carried out the 1st 5 executions of Republican prisoners (the number would rise eventually be 77).

Sonata in G for viola and piano by Arnold Bax was performed for the initial time, in Aeolian Hall, London, the composer at the keyboard.

December 6, Wednesday: Having been approved by the *Dáil Éireann* and the British Parliament, the constitution of the [Irish](#) Free State went into effect for 26 of the 32 counties of [Ireland](#). Timothy Michael Healy became Governor-General. William Thomas Cosgrave was President of the Executive Council.

Mass in g minor for acappella chorus by Ralph Vaughan Williams was performed for the initial time, in Town Hall, Birmingham.



IRELAND

IRELAND

December 17, Sunday: Wladyslaw Eugeniusz Sikorski replaced Julian Ignacy Novak as prime minister of Poland.

The last British troops left the [Irish](#) Free State.

Angels for six trumpets by Carl Ruggles was performed for the initial time, at an International Composers' Guild concert in the Klaw Theater, New York. Also premiered were two works for piano by Dane Rudhyar: Luciferian Stanza and Ravissement.

1923

End of [Ireland's](#) Civil War; Pro-Treaty victory.

[Ireland's](#) Intoxicating Liquor Act increased restrictions on sales of [ether](#) and made the drinking of it an offense, but with minimal impact on practices.

1925

The Boundary Commission collapsed.

Nationalists sat for 1st time in the Northern [Ireland](#) Parliament.

1926

March 23, Tuesday: The *Sinn Féin* group having split, Eamon de Valera founded the *Fianna Fáil* Party to run republican candidates for office in [Ireland](#).

Two works for male chorus by Jean Sibelius were performed for the initial time, in Helsinki: Humoreski op.108/1, and Ne pitkän matkan kulkijat (Wanderers on the Long Way).



1927

General Election in Free State; *Fianna Fáil* entered *Dáil Éireann*.

Further restrictions on indulgence in [ether](#) in [Ireland](#) permitted registered sales only to doctors. This, combined with on the one side with greater availability of cheap [alcohol](#) and on the other with rising incomes, would bring about reductions in use.

The bans against [cigarettes](#) had by this point been rescinded in all states, and taxes upon [tobacco](#) products had become a major source of government revenue. A wave of mortality due to respiratory-system cancers was about to sweep over the nation.

March 5, Saturday: [Irish](#) opposition leader Eamon de Valera arrived in Rochester, New York to visit his mother.

May 21, Saturday, 10:52AM: Local time: 3:00PM. Charles Lindbergh spotted land to his left and veered toward it. Referring to his charts, he identified the land to be the southern tip of [Ireland](#). The *Spirit of St. Louis* was 2.5 hours ahead of schedule and less than three miles off course.

1929

June-December 10, 1929: Because of a money gift from Albert Bender, [Robinson Jeffers](#), Una Call Kuster Jeffers, and their twins Donnan and Garth were able to go on a 4,000-mile tour of [Ireland](#), and then on to Scotland and to England. Jeffers just missed meeting Yeats. They visited the George Moore estate of Virginia Woolf. In the Lake District of England, they visited the Bronte Home and the Wordsworth cottage. They visited Stonehenge and Iverness. The poet received \$500 for his CAWDOR manuscript. Horace Liveright published his DEAR JUDAS AND OTHER POEMS. He wrote his Noh play and the narrative of "The Loving Shepherdess." Louis Adamics put out a chapbook titled ROBINSON JEFFERS: A PORTRAIT.

1931

December 10, Thursday: Random House published [Robinson Jeffers](#)'s [Irish](#) poems as DESCENT TO THE DEAD.

December 11, Friday: [Japan](#) abandoned the gold standard.

The Statute of Westminster was given Royal Assent, to take effect December 31st. It granted sovereignty and equality to the British dominions and created the British Commonwealth of Nations. Original members were Australia, Canada, [Ireland](#), New Zealand, Newfoundland, South Africa, and the United Kingdom.



IRELAND

IRELAND

December 31, Thursday: The Statute of Westminster went into effect. It granted sovereignty to the British dominions and created the British Commonwealth of Nations. Original members were Australia, Canada, [Ireland](#), New Zealand, Newfoundland, South Africa, and the United Kingdom.

1932

General Election in the [Irish](#) Free State; *Fianna Fáil* in power. Treaty renounced; economic war with the United Kingdom. Northern [Ireland](#) Parliament Buildings opened at Stormont. Unemployment riots in Belfast.

February 9, Tuesday: A quasi-fascist paramilitary organization, the Army Comrades Association, was founded in the [Irish](#) Free State (this would be colloquially known as the Blueshirts).

Four works by Harry Partch for voice and viola are performed for the initial time, in San Francisco: Seven of the Seventeen Lyrics of Li Po to words translated by Obata, By the Rivers of Babylon to words of the Psalms, The Lord is My Shepherd to words of the Psalms, and Potion Scene from Romeo and Juliet to words of Shakespeare. Public and press were positive.

March 9, Wednesday: A constitution was proclaimed in the Mongolian capital of Changchun, renamed Hsinking, and [Henry Pu-yi](#) took office as the “Chief Executive of Manchukuo.”

[CHINA](#)

Eamon de Valera replaced William Thomas Cosgrave as President of the Executive Council of the [Irish](#) Free State.

Ford produced the initial V-8 engine in a commercially available automobile.

March 21, Monday: Amelia Earhart landed in Culmore, Northern [Ireland](#) at the completion of the 1st solo flight across the Atlantic by a woman. She had come from Harbour Grace, Newfoundland in 15 hours. This was also, at 3,261 kilometers, the longest uninterrupted flight by a woman.

Songs of Farewell, for chorus and orchestra by Frederick Delius to words of Whitman, was performed for the initial time, in Queen’s Hall, London.

1933

May 3, Wednesday: The oath of allegiance to the British crown was removed from the [Irish](#) constitution.

Joseph Wood Krutch wrote in “Walden Revisited” in [The Nation](#) that “When [Thoreau](#) retired to Walden in 1845 he was nearly a century ahead of his time. It is true that the [Concord](#) he left seems a village to us and true that we can hardly conceive of a society more simple than the one he chose to flee from, but Thoreau, with a prophet’s vision, was really running away from something which was yet to be. Refusing a rug with which a kind neighbor had offered to cover the bareness of his floor, he remarked that it was best to avoid the beginnings of evil, and it was upon that principle that he renounced our industrial society before the society itself had become firmly established.”

December 31, Sunday: [Simone Weil](#) met Leon Trotsky.



In Mohall, [Ireland](#) an anti-jazz parade is held, complete with banners reading “Down with jazz and paganism.”

1934

The quasi-fascist paramilitary organization, the Army Comrades Association, that had been founded in the previous year in the [Irish](#) Free State and had come to be known colloquially as the Blueshirts, quickly disappeared.

1935

Summer: Catholics and Protestants fought each other in the streets of Belfast after the Orange Order parade.

IRELAND

**1936**

June 18, Thursday: Maxim Gorky died at the age of 68, presumably poisoned by enemies of the government.

The [Irish](#) Free State enacted a Declaration of Unlawful Organization Order, outlawing the Irish Republican Army.

In Los Angeles, John Cage wrote an encouraging letter to Henry Cowell.

November: Any number of readers have been thrown off stride by the manner in which [Henry Thoreau](#) critiqued a hapless family of [Irish](#) ecological refugees in the “Baker Farm” chapter of [WALDEN](#), and have drawn an adverse conclusion as to Thoreau’s general sociability. But consider, this book had begun with a pointed discussion of household economy, of aims and manners of living. The record is more complex than what is contained in just this one chapter, in regard to Thoreau’s attitudes toward and dealings with people, common or otherwise, and such a mere excerpt should not be tendentiously taken out of its evocative context to make a point that could only be sustained by carefully disregarding other evidence. What comes to light in the aggregate, not only on the basis of Thoreau’s own reports but also on the basis of the testimonies of the many who knew him, is that he was a gentle and considerate man whose dealings with common people were predominantly marked by neighborly interest and fellow feeling. Although [WALDEN](#) happens to have become the primary repository of his cultural legacy, in fact Thoreau didn’t spend his whole life as a youth at Walden Pond, or crowing about that early experiment in living, or condemning others for failing to live as skillfully as he himself lived. He had found that he had several more lives to live, and had been in the process of living them, when snuffed by TB in 1862 — howevermuch the popular imagination seems intent upon containing this changing person at Walden Pond and in the years 1845-1846. There was so much more, and part of this is the nature and extent of Thoreau’s relations with his neighbors and passing strangers (including runaway slaves and poor Irishmen) during the years that he was no longer elaborating his early manuscript A WEEK ON THE CONCORD AND MERRIMACK RIVERS while in residence at Walden Pond.

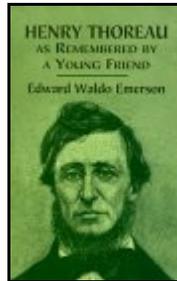
MEN OF CONCORD AS PORTRAYED IN THE JOURNAL OF HENRY DAVID THOREAU, ed. [Francis Henry Allen](#) with illustrations by [Newell Convers Wyeth](#), issued in this year, is simply a 240-page compilation of excerpts from the JOURNAL in which Thoreau is allowed to describe and discuss, and report his walks and talks with, various of his neighbors, as a corrective for this general misperception of Thoreau’s neighborliness:

Many readers, thinking of [Henry Thoreau](#) as the stanch individualist, the apostle of wild nature, the rebel against man-made institutions, the “hermit of Walden,” forget that he had any but the most formal relations with human beings outside of his own family. And yet his JOURNAL records many and many a conversation with fellow-townsmen, and its readers encounter much shrewd and understanding comment on the ways and manners of this and that individual or group. He talked familiarly with farmers, hunters, and fishermen — as familiarly as he did with his friend [Ellery Channing](#), with [Edward Sherman Hoar](#), [Friend Daniel Ricketson](#), and H.G.O. Blake. [Dr. Edward Waldo Emerson](#), in his

HENRY DAVID THOREAU AS REMEMBERED BY A YOUNG FRIEND

has testified to the regard in which Thoreau’s humbler neighbors

held him.... [A]fter speaking of Thoreau's propensity for taking the other side in conversation "for the joy of the intellectual fencing," Dr. Emerson goes on to say: "Thoreau held this trait in check with women and children, and with humble people who were no match for him. With them he was simple, gentle, friendly, and amusing." "His simple, direct speech and look and bearing were such that no plain, common man would put him down in his books as a fool, or visionary, or helpless, as the scholar, writer, or reformer would often be regarded by him.... He loved to talk with all kinds and conditions of men if they had no hypocrisy or pretense about them, and though high in his standard of virtue, and most severe with himself, could be charitable to the failings of humble fellow-men." A man who lived on a farm and had worked in the Thoreaus' [plumbago](#)-mill told Dr. Emerson that Thoreau was the best friend he ever had. "He was always straight in his ways: and was very particular to be agreeable.... When I saw him crossing my field I always wanted to go and have a talk with him.... He liked to talk as long as you did, and what he said was new."



Although the matter was not publicized, MEN OF CONCORD's pen-and-ink drawings had been done by his son Andrew Wyeth, rather than by the painter himself. Wyeth hoped to induce the [Concord Free Public Library](#) to pay him \$5,000 for the entire set of a dozen original painted panels that had been used to create this book, but that was something that would not come about. The paintings would be sold individually on the general market, and eventually the library would come into possession of five of them, "The Carpenters Repairing Hubbard's Bridge," "Thoreau and Miss Mary Emerson," "Johnny and His Woodchuck-Skin Cap," "Fishing Through the Ice," and "The Muskrat Hunters...." Other of the paintings would go to:

- pen-and-ink drawings — privately held
- jacket illustration — Brandywine River Museum



- endpaper illustration — Canajoharie Library and Art Museum
- "Mr. Alcott in the Granary Burying Ground" — Boston Athenaeum
- "A Man of a Certain Probity..." — privately held
- "Barefooted Brooks Clark Building Wall" — privately held
- "Thoreau and the Three Reformers" — privately held
- "Barefooted Brooks Clark Building Wall" — privately held

HDT

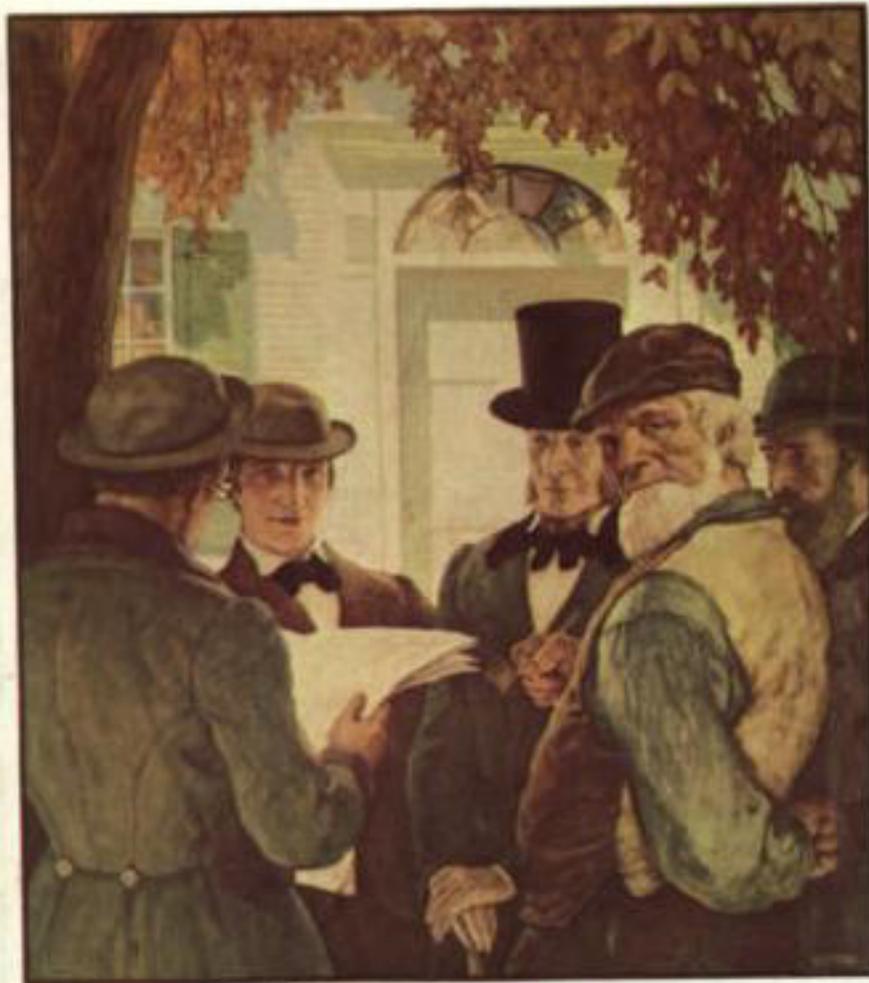
WHAT?

INDEX

IRELAND

IRELAND

MEN of CONCORD



By HENRY D. THOREAU

F. H. ALLEN: *Editor* N. C. WYETH: *Illustrator*

- “Thoreau Fishing” — location unknown

According to the Preface, “Wyeth was a lifelong admirer of Thoreau, whose spirit has become a part of him. His work for this book, therefore, is a tribute from an intellectual disciple to an author who has had an important formative influence on his character and work.” One of the pieces of material selected is from the journal of February 13, 1841:

A Lean Farm



February 13, 1841: My neighbor says that his hill-farm is poor stuff and “only fit to hold the world together.” He deserves that God should give him better for so brave a treatment of his gifts, instead of humbly putting up therewith. It is a sort of stay, or gore or gusset, and he will not be blinded by modesty or gratitude, but sees it for what it is; knowing his neighbor’s fertile land, he calls his by its right name. But perhaps my farmer forgets that his lean soil has sharpened his wits. This is a crop it was good for, and beside, you see the heavens at a lesser angle from the hill than from the vale.

December 12, Saturday: Attempting to force Chiang Kai-shek to take an anti-Japanese stand, warlord Chang She-liang attacked the general’s headquarters outside Sian. They managed to capture Chiang, killing most of his bodyguards in the process. Chang published eight demands, including a cessation of the civil war and [Chinese](#) unity against the [Japanese](#).

WORLD WAR II

Former King Edward VIII of Great Britain was created the Duke of Windsor. The government of the [Irish](#) Free State recognized the abdication of King Edward and the accession of King George, and then removed any mention of the crown from its constitution.

Rapsodie flamande, for orchestra by Albert Roussel, was performed for the initial time, in Brussels.

George Cukor’s film “Camille” starring Greta Garbo was viewed for the initial time, in Palm Springs, California.

1937

In Germany, Mohler found [M. tuberculosis](#) to be alive and virulent in butter that had been in cold storage for six months.

“Éire” constitution enacted in the [Irish](#) Free State, infamous Articles 2 and 3 included...

In this timeframe the [potato](#) variety “Virgil” was being introduced with great fanfare, as a “blightproof” cultivar — no more potato [famines](#) because the potato breeders (!) had obtained one R-gene from *Solanum demissum*. This was going to be the biggest thing since beer was put in cans! Well, events would reveal that the iron laws of epidemiology are not so readily to be overcome — the new potato would succumb to newly evolved varieties of the pathogen *Phytophthora infestans*, once again demonstrating the validity of the BIBLE’s commonsense observation that as food is increased, so is increased they that eat of it.



IRELAND

IRELAND

June [Robinson Jeffers](#) and Una Call Kuster Jeffers would be visiting [Ireland](#), until October 30th.

July 1, Thursday: In a joint letter Roman Catholic bishops in Spain expressed their support for the fascist rebels. These were God-fearing men.

Protestant theologian Rev. Martin Niemöller was arrested by the Gestapo for anti-state activities.

A referendum in [Ireland](#) approved a new constitution.

Sonata for flute, violin and piano by Bohuslav Martinu was performed for the initial time, over the airwaves of Radio-Paris.

Darius Milhaud's suite for two pianos Scaramouche was performed for the initial time.

The last performance of The Cradle Will Rock by Marc Blitzstein took place in New York. In its 2-week run, 13,000 people have heard 14 performances.

December 29, Wednesday: The constitution of Eire took effect and the [Irish](#) Free State became a sovereign nation within the British Commonwealth under a 3-man Presidential Commission. The office of Governor General was abolished. The Senate was reformed. The Taoiseach (Prime Minister) would be Eamon de Valera.

In bitter winter weather, Spanish fascist rebels launched an offensive to relieve the surrounded garrison of Teruel. This would fail.

1938

Entering into an agreement with the United Kingdom, [Ireland](#) gave up its rights in Treaty ports.

1939

Early in this year Great Britain would begin the mass manufacture of large quantities of stout and impermeable treated-cardboard coffins, and would begin the stockpiling of these grisly objects in case of national need for them. Better safe than sorry.

Éire declared itself neutral. There was an [Irish](#) Republican Army campaign in Great Britain. In *Éire*, army members were interned.

Senators [Harry S Truman](#) and Burton Wheeler introduced a bill to reorganize the railroads and place them under the regulation of the Interstate Commerce Commission. During this year, as a member of the Military Subcommittee of the Appropriations Committee, Senator Truman would visit defense installations in the United States, Panama, Cuba, and Puerto Rico. Be prepared.

WORLD WAR II

1940

When Craig died, Andrews became Prime Minister of Northern [Ireland](#).

1941

Communist activist Ho Chi Minh secretly returned to [Vietnam](#) after 30 years in exile to organize a nationalist organization known as the Viet Minh (Vietnam Independence League). After the [Japanese](#) had occupied Vietnam during [World War II](#), the US Office of Strategic Services (OSS) would ally with Ho and his guerrillas to harass Japanese troops in the jungles and to help rescue downed American pilots.²⁶⁶

The [Irish](#) potato catastrophe of the 1840s was re-enacted on a smaller scale in Kenya when, to obtain more [potatoes](#) to feed the Allied troops of [World War II](#), seed potatoes were sent into East Africa from the United Kingdom (previously, the small area devoted to growing potatoes in Kenya had been *P. infestans*-free).

April: Inauguration of naval patrols in the Atlantic Ocean to detect German submarines and report their locations to British warships. [President Franklin Delano Roosevelt](#) gave the US Navy permission to attack German submarines west of 25 degrees longitude.



American workers were dispatched to Northern [Ireland](#) to construct a naval base.

WORLD WAR II

December 14, Sunday: Calypso, a cabaret song by Benjamin Britten to words of Auden, was performed for the initial time, in Southold High School, Long Island, New York.

[Ireland](#) and Turkey declared neutrality.

An expedition under Rear Admiral F.J. Fletcher set out from Pearl Harbor, Oahu, Hawaii to relieve the beleaguered garrison of Wake Island.

266. The enemy of my enemy is my friend (I read that somewhere).



1942

January 26, Monday: The First United States Expeditionary Force to Europe in World War II arrived in Northern [Ireland](#): “overfed, oversexed, and over here,” as the Brits would become rather fond of remarking. The following headline raising public apprehension about a putative [Japanese](#) invasion of the North American continent appeared in [The Los Angeles Times](#):

**OLSEN SAYS WAR MAY HIT STATE.
Shift of Combat to California Possible, Governor Declares.**

WORLD WAR II



February 5, Thursday: United States Naval Operating Base, Londonderry, Northern [Ireland](#), was established.

FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover informed the US State Department that Peter Pears was either a radical or a Communist.

Incantation and Dance for oboe and piano by William Grant Still was performed for the initial time, in Elmira College Chapel, New York.

The National Naval Medical Center was established at Bethesda, [Maryland](#). (I would receive mandatory cosmetic surgery there in 1962 at government expense — because my commanding officer at Marine Corps Schools – Quantico was offended by my appearance in Marine uniform.)

The following headline appeared in [The Los Angeles Times](#):

**LOYAL JAPS MUST AID FIGHT
AGAINST SABOTAGE, SAYS OLSON.
Governor Asserts Action Will be Taken
to Curb Spy and Fifth Columnist Activities.**

WORLD WAR II

1943

Basil Brooke became Prime Minister of Northern [Ireland](#).

June 23, Wednesday: Incidental music to Kron's play Detailed Reconnaissance by Aram Khachaturian was performed for the initial time, in Moscow.

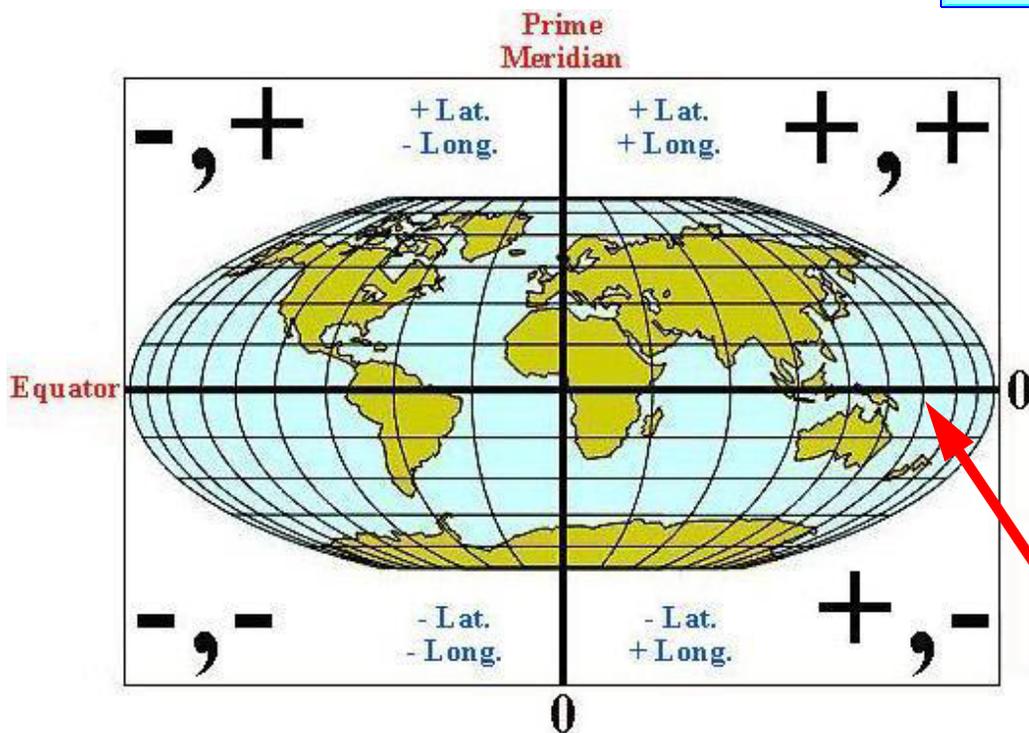
Prelude and Fugue for strings op.29 by Benjamin Britten was performed for the initial time, in Wigmore Hall, London.

American troops land on Kiriwina Island in the Trobriand group off Papua.

Elections in [Ireland](#) resulted in gains by smaller parties at the expense of the ruling *Fianna Fáil* and official opposition *Fine Gael*. *Fianna Fáil* would constitute a minority government.

United States Cargo Ships *Aludra* (AK-72) and *Deimos* (AK-78) were sunk by [Japanese](#) submarine torpedoes in the Solomon Islands, at 11 degrees 26 minutes South, 162 degrees 1 minute East.

WORLD WAR II





1944

May 30, Tuesday: American forces penetrated the last [German](#) defense line before [Rome](#).

WORLD WAR II

Less than a year after the previous election, voting in [Ireland](#) produced a majority for the ruling *Fianna Fáil* Party.

1946

The war is dead, long live war! In a [China](#) no longer facing an external threat, civil war erupted between the Kuomintang (KMT) and the Communist Party (CCP).

The Neutrals

Now the sordid tragedy crashes to a close,
Blood, fire and bloody slime, all the dogs in the kennel
Killing one dog: it is time to commend the neutrals.
I praise them first because they were honest enough
Not to be scared nor bought, and then I will praise them
That their luck held. I praise free [Ireland](#), horse-breeding, swan-haunted,
And high Switzerland, armed home of pure snows,²⁶⁷ and Sweden,
High in the north, in the twice-hostile sea: these three hold all
That's left, of the honor of Europe.

I would praise also
Argentina, for being too proud to bay with the pack,
But her case is not so clear and she faced no danger. I will praise Finland —
In one poem with the peace-keepers unhappy Finland —
For having fought two wars, grim, clean and doomed.

— [Robinson Jeffers](#)

1947

January 3, Friday: [Richard Milhous Nixon](#) was sworn in to the US House of Representatives to represent the 12th Congressional District of California. He would occupy this position at our nation's capital until November 1950.

The [Irish](#) government announced that bread and flour would be rationed.

267. This was written long before we discovered that [Switzerland](#), alleged land of liberty, alleged neutral, actually had functioned during the war not only as the 3d Reich's accountant but also its secret collaborator and money launderer, a mere channel for transforming the gold fillings from the mouths of gassed Jews into negotiable bullion.



1948

February 4, Wednesday: Ceylon (Sri Lanka) was declared independent of Great Britain, under Queen Elizabeth and Prime Minister Don Stephen Senanayake.

The Bulgarian Fatherland Front united with four other parties, making the nation a single-party state.

In general elections in [Ireland](#), the ruling *Fianna Fáil* Party lost eight seats and fell to an uneasy coalition led by *Fine Gael*.

Cuatro madrigales amatorios, a cycle for voice and piano by Joaquín Rodrigo to anonymous words, was performed for the initial time, in Circulo Medina, Madrid, with the composer himself at the piano. Also premiered was Rodrigo's Barcarola for voice and piano to words of Kamhi (Sra. Rodrigo), with the poet himself at the piano.

April 16, Friday: Elpidio Quirino y Rivera replaced Manuel Roxas y Acuña as president of the Philippines.

As British troops withdrew from Safed (Zefat) north of the Sea of Galilee, Arabs began bombarding the Jewish quarter.

ANTISEMITISM

The Greek army began an offensive against leftist rebels in the north of the country.

The Organization for European Economic Development was founded by Austria, Belgium, Denmark, France, [Germany](#) (western occupation zones), Greece, Iceland, [Ireland](#), [Italy](#), Luxembourg, the Netherlands, Norway, Portugal, Sweden, [Switzerland](#), Trieste, Turkey and the United Kingdom. It would become the Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development (OECD) in 1961.

The United Nations General Assembly opened an emergency session to deal with the situation in Palestine.

June: While in [Ireland](#), [Robinson Jeffers](#) had a severe attack of pleurisy.

December 21, Tuesday: The Allied Command was reconstituted in Berlin without the Soviet Union.

The *Dáil Éireann* passes the Republic of [Ireland](#) Act which separates [Ireland](#) from any connection with the British crown. It would take effect next April 29.

The Propaganda Section of the Central Committee of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union denounces Sergei Prokofiev's opera *The Story of a Real Man*.

Whittaker Chambers denies that he ever received any secret documents from Laurence Duggan.



1949

While *Éire* declared itself to be a “Republic” without any formal ties to Britain, Britain declared the 6 counties of Northern [Ireland](#) to be a permanent part of the Empire.

January 1, Saturday: New Zealand took possession of the Tokelau Islands from Great Britain.

A United Nations cease-fire between [India](#) and Pakistan went into effect.

The wartime rationing in Poland came to an end.

WORLD WAR II

The first five-year plan in Czechoslovakia began.

The British Nationality Act went into effect. All citizens of Great Britain, the Commonwealth, and [Ireland](#) were granted equal rights before the law.

Three [Egyptian](#) naval vessels bombarded Tel Aviv for 20 minutes.

The United States formally recognized the Seoul regime as the legitimate government of the entire [Korean](#) peninsula.

Michurin, a film with music by Dmitri Shostakovich, was shown for the initial time.

April 18, Monday: Eire reconstituted itself as the Republic of [Ireland](#) and withdrew from the Commonwealth.

Suite for strings by Ulysses Kay was performed for the initial time, in Baltimore conducted by the composer.

May 5, Thursday: A statute was signed in London creating the Council of Europe, establishing a Committee of Ministers and a Consultative Assembly seated in Strasbourg. Signing countries were Belgium, Denmark, France, [Ireland](#), [Italy](#), Luxembourg, the Netherlands, Norway, Sweden and the United Kingdom.

Ballad of the Two Mothers for chorus by Henry Cowell to words of Harald was performed for the initial time, in Redlands, California.



IRELAND

IRELAND

October 14, Friday: Nationalist troops retreating from Canton set fires and blew things up throughout the city. In blowing up the Pearl River Bridge they killed hundreds of civilians.

The [Irish](#) government announced plans to nationalize all road, rail, and water transportation.

In New York, when 11 leaders of the Communist Party of the United States were convicted, they were convicted not of conspiring to violently overthrow the United States government, nor of advocating this — but of conspiring to advocate it. The judge accepted the verdict and charged 5 defense lawyers with contempt of court, handing out sentences ranging from 30 days to 6 months.

1950

June 1, Thursday: [Ireland](#) nationalized all shipping systems, whether by truck, rail, or canal.

Senator Margaret Chase Smith (R-Maine) rose on the floor of the US Senate and, with the support of seven other Republican Senators, made a “Declaration of Conscience”:

Certain elements of the Republican Party have materially added to this confusion in the hopes of riding the Republican Party to victory through the selfish exploitation of fear, bigotry, ignorance, and intolerance.

One of the “certain elements” to whom she was referring, Senator [Joseph R. McCarthy](#) (R-Wisconsin), amused by all this conscience, responded by characterizing his colleagues as “Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs.”

France announced that all countries intending to join the European Coal and Steel Community would need to do so by 8:00PM tomorrow at the latest.

November 4, Saturday: The European Convention on Human Rights was signed in [Rome](#) by representatives of the members of the Council of Europe, Belgium, Denmark, France, Greece, Iceland, [Ireland](#), [Italy](#), Luxembourg, Netherlands, Norway, Sweden, Turkey, United Kingdom, and West [Germany](#).

The UN General Assembly voted to lift the diplomatic embargo against Spain.

1951

May 30, Wednesday: In [Irish](#) Parliamentary elections, the coalition leader *Fine Gael* increased its standing by nine seats but its partners faltered. *Fianna Fáil* formed a minority government with the support of some independents.

Wedding Dance for chorus by György Ligeti was performed for the initial time, over the airwaves of Hungarian Radio.



IRELAND

IRELAND

June 13, Wednesday: Eamon de Valera replaced John Aloysius Costello as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

Stabat mater for soprano, chorus and orchestra by Francis Poulenc was performed for the initial time, in Strasbourg.

In [Korea](#), UN forces captured Pyongyang for the 2d time, capping an offensive into the “iron triangle” (a staging area for Chinese offensives), and began to dig in on the 38th parallel.

[KOREAN WAR](#)

1953

January 31, Saturday: The government of Czechoslovakia was reorganized on the Soviet model.

Six days of storms, high tides, and floods caused death and destruction in the North Sea. The Netherlands would report 1,395 dead, Great Britain 546, and Belgium 23. The British ferry *Princess Victoria* sank between Scotland and Northern [Ireland](#) taking 132 with her. Only 44 survived.

[WALDEN](#): If we read of one man robbed, or murdered, or killed by accident, or one house burned, or one vessel wrecked, or one steamboat blown up, or one cow run over on the Western Railroad, or one mad dog killed, or one lot of grasshoppers in the winter, -we never need read of another. One is enough.

[TIMELINE OF ACCIDENTS](#)

Bruce Catton wrote in [The Nation](#): “So the Copland number was not heard, and if this was in the end something less than a fatal blow to the evil designs of the men in the Kremlin, it at least saved the assembled Republicans from being compelled to listen to Lincoln’s brooding words: ‘Fellow citizens, we cannot escape history. We of this Congress and this administration will be remembered in spite of ourselves.’”

A Garden Eastward, a cantata for solo voice and orchestra by Hugo Weisgall to words of Moses ibn Ezra (tr. Feist), was performed for the initial time, in Baltimore under the baton of the composer.

1954

Launch of the USS *Nautilus*, a [nuclear-powered submarine](#). President Dwight David Eisenhower was under pressure from the US military to mount a [pre-emptive nuclear strike](#) against the USSR, before it could develop the capability to make an equivalent nuclear response, and struggled to find some way to explain to the other generals that from his point of view such a pre-emptive strike would be –and this is his word– “un-American.”

In [Japan](#), [Sadako Sasaki](#) of [Hiroshima](#), who had been two when we dropped one of our [atomic bombs](#) on her, fell to the ground while preparing for a school foot race. She had developed “A-bomb survivor disease,” the well-known leukemia (everybody immediately understood, she was another goner).

[THE QUAKER PEACE TESTIMONY](#)



[Friend Floyd Schmoe](#) went to [Korea](#) to rebuild homes destroyed during the war.

Ernest Hemingway received a Nobel Prize (no, it wasn't the Peace Prize).

[Robinson Jeffers](#) edited his deceased wife Una's diaries, and they were published by Theodore Lilienthal and printed at the Ward Ritchie Press as VISITS TO [IRELAND](#).

May 18, Tuesday: Parliamentary elections in [Ireland](#) resulted in a 10-seat gain for the opposition *Fine Gael*. They formed a three party coalition to rule.

Prelude and Fugue for string quartet by Pauline Oliveros was performed for the initial time, at San Francisco State College.

June 2, Wednesday: John Aloysius Costello replaces Eamon de Valera as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).



1955

December 14, Wednesday: 16 nations were admitted to the United Nations: the People's Republic of Albania, the Republic of Austria, the People's Republic of Bulgaria, the Kingdom of Cambodia, the Republic of Ceylon (Sri Lanka), the Republic of Finland, the People's Republic of Hungary, the Republic of [Ireland](#), the Republic of Italy, the Hashemite Kingdom of Jordan, the Kingdom of Laos, the Kingdom of Libya, the Kingdom of Nepal, the Republic of Portugal, the People's Republic of Romania, and the Spanish State.

Prime Minister Said el-Mufti of Jordan and four other ministers resigned over British insistence that Jordan join the Middle East Treaty Organization. When King Hussein appointed pro-western Hazzah Mahali to form a new government, riots broke out almost immediately in Amman.

1956

[Robinson Jeffers](#) made his final trip to [Ireland](#), while Merle Armitage and the Ward Ritchie Press were publishing his THE LOVING SHEPHERDESS with illustrations by Jean Kellogg.

The beginning of the IRA "Border Campaign."

RAND Corporation began a study of detonating [atomic bombs](#) on the moon.

ASTRONOMY

December 12, Wednesday: The United Nations General Assembly voted 55-8-13 to denounce the Soviet Union and demand that it withdraw its troops from Hungary.

After three days of anti-Soviet demonstrations, workers in Poznan adopted resolutions demanding the withdrawal of Soviet troops from Hungary.

The Irish Republican Army began a campaign of violence for the unification of [Ireland](#).

Pablo Casals announced that he would move from France to Puerto Rico. He was in self-imposed exile from Spain because of the Franco regime.



1957

March 5, Tuesday: [Egypt](#)'s Gamel Abdel Nasser barred Israeli ships from the [Suez Canal](#).

Algerian rebel leader Larbi ben M'hidi, captured by the French on February 25, died in custody.

Four Jordanians on a military mission were killed by Israelis in southern Israel.

Parliamentary elections in [Ireland](#) resulted in a strong victory for *Fianna Fáil*. They won a majority of seats.

March 20, Wednesday: Eamon de Valera of *Fianna Fáil* replaces John Aloysius Costello of *Fine Gael* as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

Jean-Jacques Servan Schreiber is indicted in Paris for undermining army morale. As editor of *L'Express* and recently an army officer in Algeria, he has claimed excesses perpetrated by the French Army in articles since March 8.

1959

June 23, Tuesday: Sean Francis Lemass replaced Eamon de Valera as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

Klaus Fuchs was released from Wakefield Prison in Yorkshire after serving 9 years of a 14-year sentence for passing [nuclear secrets](#) to the Soviet Union. He would be granted citizenship in East Germany.

June 25, Thursday: Eamon de Valera replaced Sean Thomas O'Kelly as president of [Ireland](#).



1960

November 8, Tuesday: The outcome of the US presidential election was that the Republican contender, [Richard Milhous Nixon](#), had been defeated and the Democratic contender, John Fitzgerald Kennedy, elected. It had been a close scrape. “Thank God!” would be the attitude of a large segment of the voting public, “We’ve dodged the bullet and won’t need to find out what our nation might have become under an asshole like Nixon!”

Eight UN ([Irish](#)) soldiers were killed in an ambush in northern Katanga.

The legislature of the State of Louisiana passed 28 laws to protect the public schools from the evils of racial integration.

About 500,000 transportation workers struck in Brazil, closing down ports and railroads.

Elections in the United States ensured the victory of John Kennedy as President. His Democratic Party lost one seat in the Senate and 20 in the House of Representatives, but retained its majorities. The popular vote was the closest for any presidential election in the history of the nation.

1961

September 13, Wednesday: In Katanga, a secession movement was being led by white mercenaries. To end this secession and to remove these foreign mercenaries, UN troops (Sudan, Sweden, [Ireland](#)) attacked Katangan forces in Elisabethville.

János Kádár replaced Ferenc Münich as Prime Minister of Hungary.

The Lincoln Center for the Performing Arts announced that William Schuman had been elected president of the center effective January 1st.

Because four African ambassadors had recently been “humiliated by private restaurant owners” in Maryland, the US Department of State appealed to that state’s legislature to end racial segregation in public facilities.

September 18, Monday: United Nations Secretary-General Dag Hammerskjöld and twelve other UN officials were killed in a plane crash near Ndola, Northern Rhodesia (Zambia). They had been on their way to arrange a cease-fire between Katangan and UN forces in the Congo with Katangan President Moise Tshombe to arrange a cease fire. A survivor related that there had been explosions just before the plane went down.

The 158 UN ([Irish](#)) soldiers in Jadotville were surrounded by Katangans, disarmed, and interned.

Blood Moon, an opera by Norman Dello Joio to words of Hoffman after A.I. Mencken, was performed for the initial time, in San Francisco.



IRELAND

IRELAND

October 4, Wednesday: In national elections in [Ireland](#), the ruling *Fianna Fáil* lost their overall majority (but would manage to form a minority government).

December 1, Friday: Regular television service began in [Ireland](#), serving the vicinity of Dublin.

Four [civil disobedience](#) Freedom Riders arrived from New Orleans at the bus terminal in McComb, Mississippi. Protected by the town's entire 15-man police force, they made their way through 700 taunting white citizens without injury. They returned later to board an outgoing bus under the protection of the police force, which by this point had been reinforced by two sheriffs and ten deputies. The Freedom Riders were able to depart without injury, but the white citizens beat and threatened four journalists.

Incidental music to Brecht's play *The Exception and the Rule* (translated by Bentley) by Stefan Wolpe was performed for the initial time, in Wollman Auditorium, New York.

1962

The [Irish](#) Border Campaign wound down, with 19 dead. The Irish Republican Army, rejected by the nationalist community, retreated into Marxist ideology.

The Pentagon presented to Defense Secretary Robert McNamara its "Remember the Maine" plan to kill innocent Americans and blame Fidel Castro as a pretext for invading Cuba: "We could blow up a US ship in Guantánamo Bay and blame Cuba... Casualty lists in U.S. newspapers would cause a helpful wave of national indignation," quote unquote. Despite the fact that each and every Joint Chiefs of Staff had signed off on on this "Operation Northwoods" plan, it would be nixed by our civilian leadership. "The whole point of a democracy is to have leaders responding to the public will," author James Bamford would relate to ABC News in May, 2001, "and here this is the complete reverse, the military trying to trick the American people into a war that they want but that nobody else wants."

CUBAN MISSILE CRISIS

February 26, Monday: The Irish Republican Army announced that it is ending its violent campaign against British occupation of Northern [Ireland](#).

Europeans with machine guns mowed down 13 Moslems on a street in Algiers.

The United States Supreme Court ruled racial segregation of public transportation to be unconstitutional.

At a UN press conference, Soviet Deputy Foreign Minister Valerian A. Zorin pointed out that in Vietnam the US was getting "bogged down in a very disadvantageous and politically unjustified war."

Astronaut John Glenn addressed a joint session of the US Congress.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1963

Terence O'Neill became the Prime Minister of Northern [Ireland](#).

June 2, Sunday: The organization "Lambrakis Youth" was set up at a meeting of 20 Greek scientists, artists, workers, students and journalists in Athens, to continue the work of murdered peace activist Grigoris Lambrakis. Mikis Theodorakis would be the organization's president.

In Gartan, County Donegal, [Ireland](#), birthplace of St. Columba, Hymn of St. Columba for chorus and organ by Benjamin Britten, commissioned to mark the 1,400th anniversary of the saint's mission to Iona, was performed for the initial time.

1964

The Divis Flats riots in Belfast. The Civil Rights movement founded in Dungannon.

IRELAND

1965

January 7, Thursday: President Sukarno publicly announced the withdrawal of Indonesia from the United Nations.

The Irish Republican Army set off an explosion at Ballacolla, [Ireland](#) while Princess Margaret and her husband, the Earl of Snowdon, were vacationing there. No royals or commoners were injured.

Monologe for two pianos by Bernd Alois Zimmermann was performed for the initial time, over the airwaves of Westdeutsche Rundfunk originating in Cologne.

January 14, Thursday: Prime Ministers Sean Lemass of [Ireland](#) and Terence O'Neill of Northern Ireland met in Belfast. This was the 1st such meeting since the partition of the island in 1922. "Hey, we should do this more often, we've got a lot in common!"



IRELAND

IRELAND

April 7, Wednesday: At Johns Hopkins University, President Lyndon Baines Johnson proposed to stop the fighting and provide truly massive economic assistance in the modernization of [Vietnam](#). All the warmongers of [Hanoi](#) would need to do would be to sit back and watch the money roll in. Nobody turns down free money. “Old Ho can’t turn that down,” Johnson supposed to aides.

Parliamentary elections in [Ireland](#) gave the ruling *Fianna Fáil* Party two more seats and an overall majority.

Der junge Lord, a comic opera by Hans Werner Henze to words of Bachmann, after Hauff, was performed for the initial time, at the Deutsche Oper, Berlin.

1966

Due to continued violence, it was recommended that most of the railway lines in Northern [Ireland](#) be closed.

March 8, Tuesday: Prime Minister Holt announced that Australia would increase its contingent in [Vietnam](#) from 1,500 to 4,500 men.

An explosion brought down the top 20 meters of the 31-meter high Nelson Column in Dublin, including the statue of Lord Nelson. Police blamed the [Irish](#) Republican Army (the Irish considered the column as a symbol of British domination of their island).

April 1, Friday: Flan O’Brien’s last and perhaps greatest work was left unfinished at his death on April Fool’s Day of this year. In this comic masterpiece, the protagonist blames everything that is wrong in Ireland upon the [potato](#) plant, including putative [Irish](#) personality characteristics such as baseness, grovelingness, and backwardness. A wealthy American widow of Irish extraction, in SLATTERY’S SAGO SAGO, is allowed to essay to convert the island into a paradise by the plantation of vast plantations of the sago palm. Not only will this introduced species feed the multitudes, she offers, it is going to soften the climate. We will have monkeys and exotic birds frolicking in the treetops. Freed from the downward growth of the tuber, the Irish are going to grow straight and true. The manuscript reminds me of a German who opinioned after the end of the Second World War, that the only problem with the *Führerprinzip* had been that we had selected a crazy man as our *Führer* — let’s do it again, he implied, but this time we need to get it right by selecting a sane guy to be our *Führer*.

November 10, Thursday: John Mary Lynch replaced Sean Francis Lemass as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

1967

The Northern [Ireland](#) Civil Rights Association was founded.



IRELAND

IRELAND

May 11, Thursday: Over the next eleven days, thousands would participate in pro-communist riots in Hong Kong with sympathetic demonstrations in Macao. One person would get killed, around 100 would be injured, and 800 would be arrested.

Israel advised the UN that if Arab aggression was not stopped it would consider itself entitled to self-defense. Secretary-General U Thant deplored recent Arab raids on Israel.

Jozua Naude was named acting President of South Africa hours after Theophilus Ebenhaezer Donges suffered a brain hemorrhage just prior to his inauguration.

Great Britain, [Ireland](#), and Denmark applied for membership in the European Economic Community.

Riots by black students took place at Jackson State College in Mississippi. Police fired on them, killing one and injuring two.

1968

October 5, Saturday: Police in Londonderry, Northern [Ireland](#) battled Roman Catholic citizens who had been denied a parade permit to march through Protestant areas in protest against discrimination in voting and housing.

Newspapers in Czechoslovakia denounced inaccurate accounts of events in their country in the Soviet news media.

The American Jewish Committee in Paris reported that the [Egyptian](#) government had refused to allow the emigration of some 1,000 Jews left inside the nation's borders.

ANTISEMITISM

1969

January 11, Saturday: 5,000 civil rights demonstrators riot and clash with police in Newry, Northern [Ireland](#).



IRELAND

IRELAND

April 30, Wednesday: At 543,400, US troop levels in the [Vietnam](#) theater of war peaked. To date 33,641 Americans had been killed — a total that finally had been brought to exceed the total of Americans who had been killed in our [Korean](#) War.

[Egyptian](#) and Israeli forces began heavy artillery exchanges across the [Suez Canal](#) along a 100-kilometer front from Qantara to Port Taufiq.

Lebanese troops relieved an army post between Merj Ayun and Hasbeya that had been under siege by Palestinian terrorists.

Terence O'Neill resigned as Prime Minister of Northern [Ireland](#) and head of the Unionist Party because his party refused to support efforts to redress the grievances of the province's Catholics.

Rioting broke out in Amsterdam when the Socialist Youth were prevented from broadcasting their take on Queen Juliana's 60th birthday. Police battled 2,000 demonstrators.

From Here on Farther for clarinet, bass clarinet, violin, and piano by Stefan Wolpe was performed for the initial time, at the Young Men's Hebrew Association, New York.

May 1, Thursday: Laotian government troops captured the communist stronghold of Xieng Khouang northeast of Vientiane.

May Day was celebrated with civilian parades in all Warsaw Pact countries except East Germany.

James Chichester-Clark replaced Terence O'Neill as Prime Minister of Northern [Ireland](#) and head of the ruling Unionist Party.

June 18, Wednesday: Parliamentary elections in [Ireland](#) resulted in a 3d straight victory for *Fianna Fáil*, which increased its majority by two seats.

Igor Stravinsky was released from New York Hospital having fully recovered from three operations to correct problems arising from a blood clot on his knee.

August 15, Friday: The unmanned Soviet space probe "Zond 7" returned to earth south of Kustanay, Kazakhstan after orbiting the moon.

Communal violence intensified in Belfast. Three people were killed. The [Irish](#) government mobilized 2,000 army reservists.

The Woodstock Music and Art Fair opened near Bethel, New York.



IRELAND

IRELAND

August 16, Saturday: British troops restored relative calm in Belfast, [Ireland](#). In the past 24 hours 236 people had been injured, 66 of them by gunshot.

Israel and Romania agreed to establish full diplomatic relations.

Time's Encomium for synthesized and processed synthesized sound by Charles Wuorinen was performed completely for the initial time, at Tanglewood, Lenox, Massachusetts.

August 19, Tuesday: About 1,000 demonstrators marking the 1st anniversary of the invasion of Czechoslovakia battled with police, who were throwing tear gas, in Wenceslas Square, Prague.

The British army took responsibility for security in Northern [Ireland](#).

September 11: Israeli jets shot down 11 [Egyptian](#) warplanes.

The report of an inquiry into recent violence commissioned by the Northern [Ireland](#) government and chaired by the Scottish High Court judge Lord Cameron supported Roman Catholic claims of official discrimination and police misconduct.

The Chamber Music Society of Lincoln Center was inaugurated at the new Alice Tully Hall.

October 10, Friday: As the last US forces were removed from [Saigon](#), the defense of the city came to be entirely in the hands of Saigon government forces.

The recommendation of a 3-man commission chaired by Lord Hunt was that the Royal Ulster Constabulary be disarmed and relieved of its military duties, that the parttime B Special Force be disbanded, and that more Roman Catholics be recruited into the police force in order better to reflect the population of Northern [Ireland](#).

Ramifications by György Ligeti is performed for the initial time, in the setting for twelve solo strings, in Saarbrücken.

October 11, Saturday: In response to the previous day's report of the 3-man commission chaired by Lord Hunt, Protestants with guns and gasoline bombs attacked police and British troops protecting a Catholic district in Belfast, [Ireland](#). Three were killed and 53 injured.

Trio for violin, cello and piano op.428 by Darius Milhaud was performed for the initial time, in Lincoln Center, New York.



IRELAND

IRELAND

October 29, Wednesday: A military court in Athens began trials against 43 alleged opponents of the regime.

In the case of *Alexander v. Holmes*, the United States Supreme Court ordered that school districts end racial discrimination “at once.”

In the trial of the “Chicago 8,” Judge Julius Hoffman ordered that the defendant Bobby Seale be bound and gagged on account of his persistent outbursts in the courtroom.

Anti-government violence moved from the Central University of Venezuela to other cities throughout the country.

Nature’s Concord for trumpet and piano by Charles Wuorinen was performed for the initial time, in the studios of [Irish](#) State Radio.

A news item relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology: The letters “l,” then “o,” then “g” were typed into a computer at UCLA by student Charley Kline. The computer had been wired to a computer some 300 miles to the northwest, at the Stanford Research Institute. What was supposed to happen was, the computer at the SRI was to recognize this as an attempt to log in, disregarding entirely the fact that the message was coming from another computer a long distance away, it was to complete the command as “login,” and it was to issue the usual login response (what actually happened was, there was a buffer overflow and the system crashed — nevertheless this “l” “o” “g” entry was received and constitutes the 1st message sent and received over ARPANET, predecessor to the Internet).

1970

In the movie “Little Big Man,” an adaptation of a Thomas Berger novel, the native American headman Old Lodge Skins (the role was played by Chief Dan George after Marlon Brando turned it down) figures he has lived long enough and goes up to the top of the hill and lies down in his robes to die. It starts to rain and the cold rain begins to pool up in his deep eye sockets as he lies there on his back, trying to die. Finally he asks Jack Crabbe (played by Dustin Hoffman) “Am I still in this world?” “Yes, Grandfather.” He groans and wipes the rain out of his eye sockets. “I was afraid of that. Well, sometimes the magic works, sometimes it does not.” He gives up and goes back down to his tipi.

A Social Democratic and Labour Party was formed in Northern [Ireland](#).

March 29, Sunday: Palestinian terrorists sent rockets and bombs against a US library and the Bank of America in Beirut. They also attacked an oil refinery near Sidon, doing a little damage.

Violence began again in several cities in Northern [Ireland](#) as Catholics march to commemorate the Easter Rebellion of 1916.

August 11, Tuesday: South [Vietnamese](#) troops took over the defense of border positions from US troops.

Two Northern [Ireland](#) policemen were killed by a booby-trapped car in County Armagh.



IRELAND

IRELAND

October 30, Friday: A bomb destroyed an [Irish](#) airline office in Belfast, sparking four hours of battles between Catholics and British soldiers.

Sicut umbra for mezzo-soprano and twelve instruments by Luigi Dallapiccola to words of Juan Ramón Jiménez was performed for the initial time, at the Library of Congress, Washington.

October 31, Saturday: Battles between Catholics and British troops resumed in Belfast, [Ireland](#). Bombs were thrown at the soldiers, injuring five, and the soldiers then respond with tear gas. After an incendiary speech by Protestant extremist Ian Paisley, Catholics and Protestants battled in Londonderry.

Ancient Voices of Children for soprano, treble, oboe, mandolin, harp, electric piano, and percussion by George Crumb to words of Garcia Lorca was performed for the initial time, in the Library of Congress, Washington. The work received a standing, cheering ovation from those assembled. Also on the program was the premiere of the String Quartet no.4 of Milton Babbitt and Sappho for mezzo-soprano, harp, piano, guitar, and percussion by R. Murray Schafer.

1971

A Democratic Unionist Party was formed in Northern [Ireland](#). Internment was introduced. The Provisional Irish Republican Army began campaign to oust British troops from [Ireland](#) and the 1st British soldier was killed by the Provisional Irish Republican Army.

January 22, Friday: Khmer Rouge commandos strike Phnom Penh and its airport for the initial time. The airport is heavily damaged and the Cambodian air force is destroyed.

Cambodian and Saigon government forces link up at the Pitch Nil Pass on Route 4, opening the road from Phnom Penh to the sea.

A strike by workers takes place at Szczecin, Poland.

Western press sources report that Soviet cellist Mstislav Rostropovich has been banned from foreign travel for six months.

An electrical transformer near Armagh, Northern [Ireland](#), was destroyed by a bomb.

President François Duvalier of Haiti names his son to be his successor.

January 23, Saturday: [Washington Post](#) correspondent Anthony Astrachan was beaten by unknown men as he met a Soviet friend for dinner in Moscow. The friend was seized by the men.

British troops used gas and rubber bullets to prevent a Protestant mob from entering the Catholic Crumlin Road district of Belfast, [Ireland](#).



IRELAND

IRELAND

February 7, Sunday: Male voters in Switzerland granted women the right to vote in federal elections and the right to hold public office.

Former First Secretary Wladyslaw Gomulka and three others were suspended from the Politburo of the Communist Party of Poland. Two others resigned.

Republicans and British troops engaged in gun battles in two districts of Belfast. Catholics threw rocks at British troops in Londonderry. Bombs exploded in three towns near the [Irish](#) border.

February 9, Tuesday: Norwegian reporter Per Egil Hegge was expelled from the Soviet Union (Alyeksandr Solzhenitsyn had dictated his Nobel acceptance speech to a group that included Hegge).

Members of the European Economic Community agreed on plans to create an economic and monetary union within ten years.

Five civilians were killed on a mountain road near Enniskillen, Northern [Ireland](#) by a booby trap apparently intended for British soldiers.

Speaking in Carlisle, Pennsylvania, Senator Sam Ervin announced that the United States Passport Office kept a secret file containing more than 240,000 American citizens. The government acknowledged the existence of this file but claimed that it was entirely innocent in that it contained only American citizens “known or suspected” to be “communists or subversives.”

When the three astronauts of Apollo 14, Alan Shepard, Stuart Roosa, and Edgar Mitchell, splashed down in the Pacific Ocean south of Samoa, they brought home with them 44 kilos of Moon rocks.

February 15, Monday: The [Saigon](#) government claimed to have cut the Ho Chi Minh trail.

Great Britain and [Ireland](#) switched to a decimal system for currency.

[Egypt](#) told UN mediator Gunnar Jarring that it would sign a peace treaty with Israel if the Israelis would withdraw from all occupied territories.

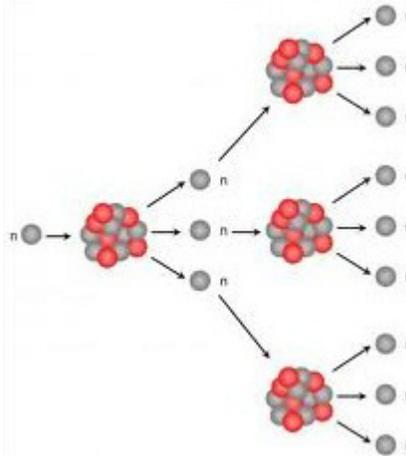
The Polish government announced a roll-back of the increases in food prices that had created such unrest in December.

Lassus ricercare for ten instruments by Betsy Jolas was performed for the initial time, in Paris.

Mise en musique du Corticalart by Pierre Henry and Roger Lafosse was performed for the initial time (this was an attempt to turn brain waves into art).

For the 23d time in the history of the nuclear agenda, this time at the [Kirchatov Institute](#) in Russia, some fissile material unexpectedly went beyond [criticality](#) into [prompt-criticality](#), the final stage before an [atomic](#)

explosion.



TIMELINE OF ACCIDENTS

Not to worry, however, for in the more than half century of our nuclear era there have been only a couple of dozen such incidents that we know of. We are told that a full A-bomb nuclear-weapon-like blast is a real engineering success story and very difficult to create, and therefore it is really really unlikely that any such prompt-criticality incident will ever produce a full A-bomb nuclear weapon-like blast without our really having intended for that to happen (even at Chernobyl the molten “corium” stuff in the “Elephant’s Foot” formation in the basement failed to go off like a bomb). Just about the worst thing that might happen in a prompt-criticality situation is that the nuclear material in question goes off like what one might term a big “dirty” bomb –which is not at all in the same ballpark in terms of blast-effect although it is in the same ballpark in terms of contamination-effect– except that we must bear in mind that at the Fukushima Daiichi site, unfortunately, there are some 2,000 **tons** of such materials available within a few thousands of yards, in the six reactor cores and seven cooling pools.

WALDEN: If we read of one man robbed, or murdered, or killed by accident, or one house burned, or one vessel wrecked, or one steamboat blown up, or one cow run over on the Western Railroad, or one mad dog killed, or one lot of grasshoppers in the winter, –we never need read of another. One is enough.

March 20, Saturday: North Vietnamese and Pathet Lao forces began to fire mortar shells and rockets at the airport of Luang Prabang.

Prime Minister James Chichester-Clark of Northern Ireland resigned, in a dispute about the tactics used against the Irish Republican Army, and was replaced by Brian Faulkner.

July 16, Friday: When the British government refused to investigate the killing of Catholic civilians by British troops, the Social Democratic and Labour Party announced it was going to boycott the Northern Ireland Parliament (other opposition members indicated they would join this boycott).



IRELAND

IRELAND

August 9, Monday: India and the Soviet Union initialed a 20-year friendship treaty in New Delhi.

The government of Northern [Ireland](#) invoked emergency measures to try and halt violence in the country. 300 were arrested in dawn raids. Violence erupted in Belfast as Catholics set fire to buildings and threw fire bombs at British troops. One woman was killed. Catholics battled troops in Londonderry with bombs and guns. 4,000 army reservists were called to duty.

August 10, Tuesday: Violence between Catholics, police and British troops continued in Northern [Ireland](#).

August 11, Wednesday: East Pakistan leader Sheikh Mujibur Rahman went on trial in West Pakistan.

Northern [Ireland](#) authorities released 70 of those arrested two days earlier. The remainder were interned aboard a Royal Navy ship. Gun battles and arson continued in Belfast, Londonderry, and Armagh. At least four were killed.

September 12, Sunday: As part of ongoing, daily violence in Northern [Ireland](#), riots erupted in Londonderry following the funeral of a 3-year-old run over by a British Army truck. Troops used rubber bullets and nausea gas. Riots also broke out in Belfast.

October 7, Thursday: The Sultanate of Oman was admitted to the United Nations.

The British government announced that it would send 1,750 more soldiers to Northern [Ireland](#).

October 12, Tuesday: Police raids throughout Northern [Ireland](#) netted 15 suspected Irish Republican Army members.

A former New York City health official reported to a medical meeting in Minneapolis that a liberal abortion law had cut the maternal death rate in the city by half.

Messe Gib uns den Frieden for chorus and orchestra by Ernst Krenek was performed for the initial time, in Hauptkirche St. Nikolai, Hamburg.

Jesus Christ Superstar, with music by Andrew Lloyd Webber, opened in New York.

October 30, Saturday: Indian forces conducted a three-day incursion into East Pakistan to silence the Pakistani guns that had been shelling Tripura.

The Irish Republican Army destroyed eight British customs posts on the border with [Ireland](#).

Women voted in federal elections in Switzerland for the 1st time. Eleven women won seats in Parliament.

November 3, Wednesday: When the police threatened to go on strike, the Northern [Ireland](#) government ordered arming of the Royal Ulster Constabulary reserve force.



December 12, Sunday: Drazen Budisa, head of the Croatian Student Federation, was arrested. The resignations of Croatian leaders Savka Dabcevic-Kucar and Miko Tripolo were announced.

Irish Republican Army gunmen killed John Barnhill, a right-wing Protestant member of the Northern [Ireland](#) parliament, and destroyed his country home.

1972

The Provisional Irish Republican Army staged a bomb campaign in Northern [Ireland](#) while the Official Irish Republican Army declared itself in opposition to further violence. The Stormont Parliament was suspended and Direct Rule introduced as a temporary measure.

January 22, Saturday: Representatives of ten nations sign treaties in the Egmont Palace, Brussels for the entry of Denmark, [Ireland](#), Norway, and the United Kingdom into the European Economic Community, the [European Atomic Energy Community](#) and the European Coal and Steel Community (this came at the culmination of 19 months of negotiations).

January 30, Sunday: Upon learning that Great Britain, Australia, and New Zealand planned to recognize Bangladesh, Pakistan withdrew from the Commonwealth.

At the beginning of the period that would be known as “The Troubles,” British troops killed 13 unarmed civilians during a demonstration by Catholics in Londonderry, [Ireland](#). The event, termed “Bloody Sunday,” would spark retaliation attacks by Republican guerrillas.

January 31, Monday: Roman Catholics in Northern [Ireland](#) observed an Irish Republican Army call for a general strike until the victims of the previous day were buried. After being refused permission to give an eyewitness account of the events on the floor of the House of Commons, Bernadette Devlin, MP physically attacked Home Secretary Reginald Maudling, calling him a “murdering hypocrite.” [Ireland](#) withdrew its ambassador from London.

North [Vietnam](#) made public its 9-point plan for ending the war.

Canzona for twelve instruments by Charles Wuorinen was performed for the initial time, in Town Hall, New York, the composer conducting. The work was dedicated to the memory of Igor Stravinsky.

February 1, Tuesday: British European Airways halted flights to [Ireland](#) after Irish airport workers refused to service British planes.

Kontakion, a ballet with music by Tylman Susato arranged by Peter Maxwell Davies, was performed publicly for the initial time, in London.

52/3 for piano and electronics by John Cage, David Tudor, and Gordon Mumma was performed for the initial time, in Brooklyn, to a dance by Merce Cunningham.



February 2, Wednesday: 25,000 people surrounded the emptied British embassy building in Dublin, [Ireland](#) and burned it to the ground (after two days of fire bombs, its staff had already been evacuated).

Czechoslovak journalist Jiri Lederer was sentenced to two years in prison for criticizing Wladyslaw Gomulka, former head of the Polish Communist Party.

February 6, Sunday: 15,000-30,000 Roman Catholics marched peacefully in Newry to protest British policy in Northern [Ireland](#).

February 25, Friday: US President Richard Nixon and his party toured the Forbidden City in Peking.

Israel began four days of reprisal raids into southern Lebanon. About 60 Palestinian guerrillas were killed and more than 100 injured.

The Soviet space probe Luna 20 returned to earth with specimens from the lunar surface.

A group of Maoists tried to force its way into a Renault plant in Boulogne-Billancourt to protest the sacking of workers there. A security guard shot Rene-Pierre Overney and, when charged with murder, would offer the defense that it had been an accident.

In Armagh, John Taylor, minister for home affairs in Northern [Ireland](#), was shot and seriously injured by the Irish Republican Army.

The Manchester [Union Leader](#) published an anonymous letter alleging that Democratic presidential candidate Edmund Muskie had slurred New Hampshire voters of French Canadian descent. The letter had been created by deputy White House Communications Director Kenneth Clawson.

March 24, Friday: British Prime Minister Edward Heath announced his plan to impose direct rule on Northern [Ireland](#).

Aura for orchestra by Bruno Maderna was performed for the initial time, in Chicago.

March 27, Monday: Protestants staged a 2-day general strike to protest the imposition of direct rule over Northern [Ireland](#).

The new president of Boston University, John R. Silber, had invited the United States Marine Corps onto his campus to recruit straight male students. When protesting BU students and faculty blocked the entrance, President Silber asked the city police to arrest them — with the explanation that such a protest was violating the **civil liberties** of Marine recruiters.²⁶⁸

The actors in the Boston University affair could not be better cast. The United States Marine Corps, whose business abroad is mass murder, played a benign employment agency. The Boston Tactical Police, whose

268. Presumably the civil liberties of USMC recruiters include **believing what they are told to believe by their superiors**, and include **saying what they are told to say by their superiors** — and, I am sure, any number of other items too numerous to imagine. I can vividly remember what was said to one USMC enlisted man in my presence, once, by his Commanding Officer, when said enlisted man had requested leave to get married: “When we want you to have a wife, we’ll issue you one.”



IRELAND

IRELAND

business is brutality, played the role of the protector of the community. And Boston University's President John Silber, whose business is obfuscation, played the role of educator.

– Professor Howard Zinn

March 30, Thursday: The North Vietnamese Army began its “Easter” attack on Quang Tri. South Vietnam's Army had performed very poorly during Operation Lam Son 719 in 1971. From March into September, in what would be known as the Easter offensive, General Vo Nguyen Giap's 200,000 soldiers would be waging an all-out attempt to conquer the South. The offensive was a tremendous gamble for General Giap but was being undertaken because US troop withdrawals, and the strength of the anti-[Vietnam](#) movement in America, were likely to prevent any US retaliatory response. They were attempting to capture of Quang Tri in the northern part of South Vietnam, Kontum in the mid-section, and An Loc in the Mekong Delta. North Vietnam's leaders were hoping that a successful offensive would harm President [Richard Milhous Nixon](#) politically during this presidential election year in America, much as President Lyndon Baines Johnson had suffered as a result of the 1968 Tet Offensive, as they believed that Nixon's removal would disrupt American assistance to South Vietnam.

Great Britain imposed direct rule over Northern [Ireland](#) to try to bring order to the beleaguered province. Prime Minister Heath appointed William Whitelaw to the newly created post of Secretary of State for Northern [Ireland](#).

April 7, Friday: A North Vietnamese tank force drove Saigon government forces from Loc Ninh near the Cambodian border north of Saigon.

The Palestine National Council organized a Jordan Affairs Committee to plan the overthrow of King Hussein of Jordan.

Secretary of State for Northern [Ireland](#) William Whitelaw freed 73 Catholics from detention signaling a “phasing out of internment.”

Dies natalis for concert band by Howard Hanson was performed for the initial time, in Eastman Theater, Rochester, New York.

May 10, Wednesday: President Nguyen Van Thieu of the Saigon government declared martial law throughout South [Vietnam](#).

When the Soviet freighter *Grisha Akopyan* was struck by US planes in the port of Campha, North [Vietnam](#), one sailor was killed and two injured.

A national referendum in [Ireland](#) approved entry into the European Economic Community.



IRELAND

IRELAND

May 29, Monday: The official wing of the Irish Republican Army ordered an immediate ceasefire in Northern [Ireland](#), characterizing its future military actions as defensive only.

Blind Man's Buff, a masque for soprano, mezzo-soprano, mime and orchestra by Peter Maxwell Davies to his own words after nursery rhymes and Büchner, was performed for the initial time, at Round House, London, conducted by Pierre Boulez.

June 26, Monday: The US military completed a transfer of 2,000 pilots and 150 planes from Danang to Thailand.

A five-month Italian government crisis ended with the swearing in of a 3-party coalition led by Giulio Andreotti.

A cease fire called by the provisional wing of the Irish Republican Army went into effect in Northern [Ireland](#).

July 31, Monday: Saigon government troops began a preemptive offensive near Kompong Trabek, Cambodia.

British forces destroyed barricades and occupied areas of Belfast and Londonderry designated as [Irish](#) Republican Army strongholds.

Senator Thomas Eagleton withdrew as the candidate of the Democratic Party for Vice President of the United States of America when the media found out that that once upon a time he had been treated for depression.

The [Washington Post](#) reported that a check from President Nixon's campaign committee had been deposited in the account of one of the Watergate burglars.

August 22, Tuesday: The International Olympic Committee forbade Rhodesia from taking part in the upcoming games after a threatened boycott by African nations.

A bomb exploded prematurely at a customs station in Newry, Northern [Ireland](#). Nine were killed, five injured.

September 12, Tuesday: Michael Morris, Baron Killanin of [Ireland](#) replaced Avery Brundage of the United States as President of the International Olympic Committee.

John Tilbury gave a performance of Cornelius Cardew's piano music in the Sale Apollinee of Teatro La Fenice, Venice. At a discussion afterwards, statements by Tilbury and Cardew about the lack of class-consciousness of the avant-garde and the parasitic nature of avant garde composers caused a near riot among the 400 listeners (Cardew and Tilbury were unhurt). John Cage was in the audience.



IRELAND

IRELAND

September 16, Saturday: Quang Tri was recaptured by South [Vietnamese](#) troops as North Vietnamese troops began a new offensive in Quangngai Province.

Israeli forces began a major incursion into Lebanon against Palestinian guerrilla bases.

Protestant mobs attacked Catholics with gasoline bombs in Larne, Northern [Ireland](#). One person was killed by gunfire.

Double Concerto for flute, oboe and orchestra by György Ligeti was performed for the initial time, in Berlin.

September 21, Thursday: William Whitelaw, British administrator for Northern [Ireland](#), announced the end of internment without trial. All 241 current detainees would be tried before a special court.

Gabriel Aranda, who used to be press secretary for former French Minister of Housing and Equipment Albin Chalandon, produced in a Paris court photocopies of 136 documents allegedly showing 48 politicians to be corrupt. President Pompidou denounced Aranda as emotionally unstable and criticized him for revealing secret documents.

Symphony no.3 by Arvo Pärt was performed for the initial time, in Tallinn.

Enchantress for soprano, flute and eight cellos by R. Murray Schafer was performed for the initial time, in Vancouver.

September 26, Tuesday: The [Irish](#) Parliament voted to impose the European Economic Community's value-added tax.

November 27, Monday: Irish Republican Army leader Martin Meehan was convicted in a Belfast, [Ireland](#) court, without jury, of being a member of the Irish Republican Army, and sentenced to three years in prison.

November 28, Tuesday: Martial law was lessened in South [Korean](#), enough to allow schools and universities to reopen.

The Irish Republican Army began a new offensive with rocket attacks in Belfast, Londonderry, and at the border with the [Irish](#) Republic.

In the Santé prison in France at 4:45AM, Roger Bontemps and Claude Buffet, who had during a mutiny at the Clairvaux prison slain guard Guy Girardot and nurse Nicole Comte, were walked toward the [guillotine](#).

December 6, Wednesday: As part of a genealogical obsession characteristic of [Mormons](#) (members of the Church of Jesus Christ of the Latter-Day Saints) dating to 1841 –that obsession being to force famous dead white people to have been saved and sent to Heaven to fulfil the fantasies of their putative Mormon descendants—[Henry David Thoreau](#) was on this day sealed by baptism (the “reasoning” process evidently being that unless such a ceremony were at least retroactively accomplished, he couldn’t be in Heaven to await any Mormons who happened to be his descendants, for them to be reunited there with him).



IRELAND

IRELAND

December 7, Thursday: At a public event in Manila, Carlo Dimailig attacked Philippine 1st lady Imelda Marcos with a knife and managed to slash her hands. The knife wounds would require 75 stitches. His gunshot wounds, from her guards, were immediately fatal.

India and Pakistan reached agreement on a truce line in Kashmir and the withdrawal of forces behind it.

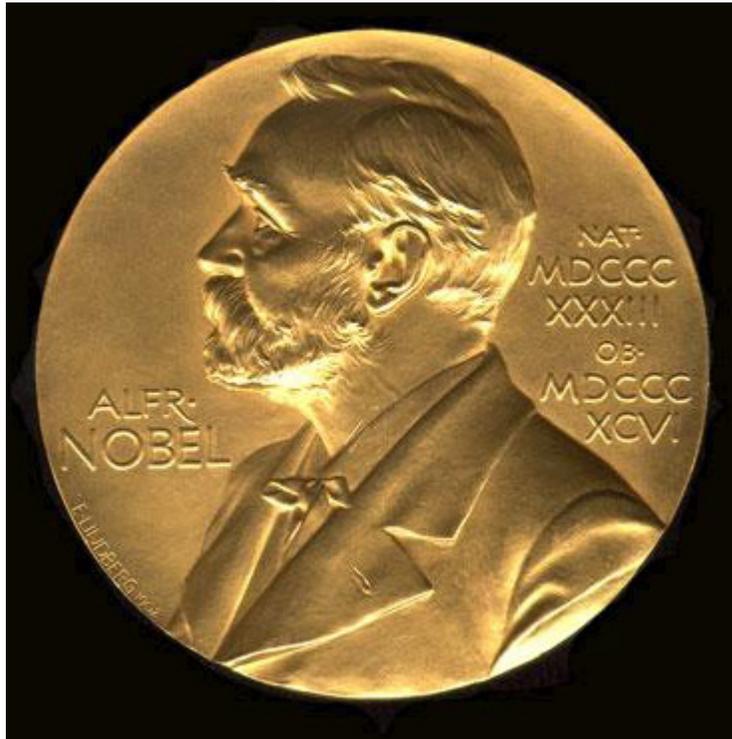
At 12:33AM, with three astronauts aboard, Apollo 17 blasted off from Cape Kennedy.

The Belgian Parliament approved the expansion of the EEC to include Great Britain, [Ireland](#), and Denmark.

Voters in [Ireland](#) overwhelmingly agreed to remove the Roman Catholic Church from special status in the constitution.

1973

The US Congress enacted a War Powers Act which would soon be being ignored by presidents both of the Republican and of the Democratic persuasion. A joint [Nobel Peace Prize](#) was awarded to Henry Kissinger and North [Vietnam](#)'s chief negotiator, Le Duc Tho — who would indignantly repudiate an award that was being given also to a man of the likes of Kissinger.



In this year of great hypocrisy there would be no Anniversary dinner of the [War Resisters League](#).

The United Kingdom and the Irish Republic joined the European Economic Community. The Sunningdale agreement; a power-sharing assembly was proposed for Northern [Ireland](#). Local Government was re-organized in Northern [Ireland](#): 6 Counties were abolished and 26 Districts were created with minimal powers. De Valera retired from the Presidency of the Republic and Erskine Childers was elected President. The government of the Republic fell and a *Fine Gael*/Labour coalition came into power. The Council of [Ireland](#) was agreed to by Northern [Ireland](#) and the Irish Republic, with limited powers. Faulkner became the leader of the Northern [Ireland](#) Assembly. Britain passed a Northern Ireland Emergency Powers Act which updated the “1922 Special Powers Act” to allow for one-judge Diplock Courts to hear “terrorism cases” without normal civil protections.

January 1, Monday: Bangladeshis protesting the bombing of North [Vietnam](#) set fire to the US Information Service in Dacca. During the demonstration two people were killed by the police.

Great Britain, [Ireland](#), and Denmark entered the European Common Market.

British Honduras was renamed “Belize.”



January 29, Monday: Prime Minister Lon Nol of Cambodia declared a unilateral cease fire.

The two groups charged with overseeing the [Vietnam](#) cease fire, the ICCS and the JMG, held their 1st meetings in Saigon. The ICCS discussed procedures while the JMG was crippled by a refusal by the Viet Cong delegation to submit a list of its members.

Violence began anew in Northern [Ireland](#) when two Catholics were shot to death by Protestant terrorists.

Busing to achieve racial integration in schools went into effect peacefully in Prince Georges County, Maryland (suburban Washington DC).

Mikis Theodorakis advised reporters in London that he could no longer describe himself as a Communist.

February 3, Saturday: Nine people were killed in two days of violence in Northern [Ireland](#) sparked by Protestant terrorist atrocities.

February 7, Wednesday: Protestant terrorists fired on the funeral in Belfast of three Catholics killed in recent violence in Northern [Ireland](#). Two people were wounded. A strike called by Protestants brought Belfast to a standstill. Protestants rampaged through Catholic districts of Belfast, attacking police stations, churches, and Catholic homes.

Dwight Chapin, a former White House aide, confessed to the FBI that he had instructed Herbert Kalmbach, President Nixon's personal attorney, to pay Donald Segretti for a campaign of sabotage against Democratic presidential candidates.

The US Senate approved the creation of a select committee to investigate irregularities in the Presidential campaign of 1972.

Canada formally recognized North [Vietnam](#).

February 28, Wednesday: 29,000 railroad engineers went on strike in Britain, halting all rail and subway traffic.

Parliamentary elections in [Ireland](#) resulted in a loss of overall majority for the ruling *Fianna Fáil* Party. The second largest party, *Fine Gael*, would form a coalition with Labour.

Five Songs of Experience on Poems of William Blake for chorus, percussion, and string quartet by John Harbison was performed for the initial time, in Sanders Theater of Harvard University.

String Quartet no.4 op.122 by Vincent Persichetti was performed for the initial time, at Pennsylvania State University.



IRELAND

IRELAND

March 8, Thursday: Two Irish Republican Army bombs exploded in London, after warnings and exact locations had been telephoned to the London Times. One went off in front of the army recruiting office in central London near Trafalgar Square, the other in front of the Old Bailey. One person was killed and about 200 injured. Another bomb, near the British Forces Broadcasting System, was made safe by police.

A referendum in Northern [Ireland](#) voted in favor of continued ties with Great Britain. Less than one percent of the Catholics in the province cast votes. During the day, six bombs exploded in Belfast and Londonderry, injuring several people. One British soldier was shot dead.

March 14, Wednesday: 140 US prisoners of war would be released in Hanoi between this day and March 16th.

Liam Cosgrave of *Fine Gael* replaced John Mary Lynch of *Fianna Fáil* as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

Voice and Instruments, a vocalise for soprano and orchestra by Morton Feldman, was performed for the initial time, over the airwaves of Sender Freies Berlin.

March 20, Tuesday: A Japanese court found Chisso Corporation negligent in discharging methylmercury in its wastewater, causing over 2,200 victims of “Minamata disease” in 1956. They would be required to pay a total of ¥937,000,000 to victims and their survivors.

Approximately 100 Cambodians, including newspaper editors and opposition politicians, were arrested by the US-backed government.

Shah Mohammed Reza Pahlevi of Iran announced the nationalization of his nation’s oil industry.

A British White Paper called for an 80-member assembly in Northern [Ireland](#) with proportional representation and power shared by Protestants and Catholics. Moderates welcomed the proposals, but hard liners rejected it.

About 800 students who had gathered to press demands for greater civil liberties were forcibly evicted from Athens University by Greek police.

A strike by French air traffic controllers, begun February 20th, was suspended.

William Merriam, a vice-president of International Telephone and Telegraph, testified before a US Senate committee that ITT, together with the CIA, had worked against the election of Salvador Allende as president of Chile.

Acting FBI Director L. Patrick Gray informed a Senate committee that as instructed by Attorney General Richard Kleindienst he would refuse to answer any questions about the Watergate case.



IRELAND

IRELAND

May 14, Monday: The House of Commons voted to abolish the death penalty in Northern [Ireland](#) (it had been retained in that region when in 1969 it had been banned in the rest of Britain).

William Ruckelshaus, acting director of the FBI, announced that lost files of 17 wiretaps on reporters and government employees had been located, in a safe in the office of former advisor to President Nixon John Ehrlichman.

When Skylab 1 was launched from Cape Kennedy, Florida, a couple of its solar panels failed to deploy. NASA postponed a manned launch scheduled for the following day.

June 25, Monday: White House Counsel John W. Dean admitted that President [Richard Milhous Nixon](#) had taken part in the Watergate cover-up.

Cambodian government troops abandoned Batheay, north of Phnom Penh.

Erskine Hamilton Childers replaced Eamon de Valera as President of [Ireland](#).

In a statement lasting six hours, former Counsel to the President John Dean laid bare his knowledge of the Watergate break-in and subsequent cover-up, and President Nixon's complicity in the crimes.

June 28, Thursday: Elections to a 78-member legislative assembly took place in Northern [Ireland](#).

Senator Lowell Weicker revealed that when he became a member of the Senate Watergate committee, highly placed members of the [Nixon](#) administration attempted to intimidate him.

Fanfare for chamber orchestra and folk instruments by Lukas Foss was performed for the initial time, in Istanbul.

July 31, Tuesday: All 249 Canadian members of the ICCS departed South [Vietnam](#). The US announced that Iran has agreed to take their place.

Thailand reported that its troops have begun to withdraw from Laos.

Protestant hard liners disrupted the 1st meeting of the newly elected Northern [Ireland](#) legislative assembly, forcing it to adjourn.

November 4, Sunday: The Netherlands banned Sunday pleasure driving.

[Ireland](#) ordered heat lowered in all public buildings.

Greek police attacked and beat anti-government demonstrators in Athens.

Both Republican Senator Edward Brooke and [TIME Magazine](#), in its 1st editorial ever, called on President Nixon to resign.



IRELAND

IRELAND

November 21, Wednesday: Leaders in Northern [Ireland](#) worked out a compromise for a power-sharing executive between the two communities.

President Richard Milhouse Nixon's attorney, J. Fred Buzhardt, revealed the existence of an 18¹/₂-minute critical gap in one of the White House tape recordings related to Watergate. The lawyers for the White House explained to the federal judge in Washington DC that this accidental erasure had been a "terrible mistake," committed somehow very innocently by the President's elderly secretary Rose Mary Woods. (Ms. Woods would offer a demonstration for the benefit of reporters of precisely how she had, with great agility given her age and physical condition, leaned over backward and sideways and stretched in her swiveling office chair to perpetrate this accidental, innocent, terrible blunder.)

December 9, Sunday: Nine Arab oil-producing countries met in Kuwait and agreed to a further cutback in production, by 750,000 barrels a day effective January 1st.

The governments of Great Britain, the Republic of [Ireland](#), and Northern Ireland created a Council of Ireland to improve communications between Northern Ireland and the Republic of Ireland.

Following the resignation of Vice President Spiro T. Agnew, House Speaker Gerald Ford became the US's 1st appointed Vice President. Later, upon the resignation of President [Richard Milhouse Nixon](#), he would become our nation's initial non-elected President.

1974

January 22, Tuesday: Protestants disrupted the Northern [Ireland](#) Assembly in an attempt to destroy the power-sharing agreement.

US Vice President Gerald Ford alleged that the White House was in possession of information that would "exonerate the President." Have faith, stand by, because just as soon as they decide to reveal this information, it will "totally undercut" the sworn testimony of that nasty little liar, President [Richard Milhouse Nixon](#)'s former personal attorney John Dean!



IRELAND

IRELAND

May 15, Wednesday: Three Palestinian terrorists attacked a high school in Maalot, Israel, killing 21 children and four adults. The terrorists were killed by security forces.

A general strike began in Northern [Ireland](#), organized by the Protestant Ulster Workers' Council. They opposed the Sunningdale agreement which provided greater cooperation between Great Britain, Northern Ireland, and the Republic of Ireland.

Walter Scheel replaced Gustav Heinemann as President of West Germany.

Antônio Sebastião Bibeiro de Spínola replaced Américo de Deus Rodriguez Tomás as President of Portugal. He named a 15-man cabinet from across the political spectrum.

Zeitlieder, two songs for mezzo-soprano and string quartet by Ernst Krenek to words of Pandula, was performed for the initial time, in Augsburg.

Three works by Ellen Taaffe Zwilich were performed for the initial time: Sonata in Three Movements for violin and piano, Einsame Nacht, a cycle for baritone and piano, and Im Nebel for alto and piano.

May 17, Friday: Four car bombs exploded in [Ireland](#) (three in Dublin, one in Monaghan) killing 28 and injuring about 200.

Police engaged in a shootout with members of the Symbionese Liberation Army holed up in a frame home in Los Angeles. Six members were killed during the gun battle or ensuing fire.

May 28, Tuesday: The Petroleum Association of [Japan](#), 12 oil companies, and 17 oil company executives were indicted in Tokyo on charges of conspiracy to fix prices and control production.

Jacques René Chirac replaced Pierre Messmer as Prime Minister of France.

After two weeks of a general strike by Protestants, the new power-sharing executive in Northern [Ireland](#) collapsed. Having achieved their goal, Protestants suspended the strike.

A bomb exploded at an anti-fascist rally in Brescia, Italy, killing 7 and injuring 94.

June 13, Thursday: The Radio City Music Hall Ballet Company disbanded.

Four Palestinian terrorists attacked a kibbutz in northern Israel and killed three women. One of the attackers was killed by members of the kibbutz and the other three killed themselves with explosives.

The Irish Republican Army bombing campaign resumed in Northern [Ireland](#) as four bombs exploded in Belfast department stores.



IRELAND

IRELAND

October 15, Tuesday: Three days of rioting by Irish Republican Army members erupted at Maze Prison in Northern [Ireland](#). Extensive fires were set by prisoners.

Ethiopian warplanes began an offensive against Eritrean rebels.

A black student stabbed a white student at Hyde Park High School in Boston, precipitating a general racial melee. Police were called in to quiet the situation. Massachusetts Governor Francis Sargent called out the National Guard but President Ford refused his call for federal troops.

Lumen in Christo for chorus and orchestra by Howard Hanson was performed for the initial time, at Nazareth College of Rochester, New York.

October 16, Wednesday: Women prisoners rioted in prisons in Londonderry and Belfast. In sympathy with the prisoners, barricades were put up and Catholics clashed with police throughout Northern [Ireland](#).

Noomena for large orchestra by Iannis Xenakis was performed for the initial time, in Paris.

November 17, Sunday: Mahmut Sadi Irmak replaced Mustafa Bülent Ecevit as Prime Minister of Turkey, thus ending a 2-month government crisis (he was to serve until elections could be held).

Mengistu Haile Mariam replaced Aman Mikael Andom as Chairman of the Military Council of Ethiopia.

In the 1st free Greek elections since the 1967 coup, the conservative New Democracy Party of Konstaninos Karamanlis was victorious. Mikis Theodorakis was defeated in his run for Parliament.

President Erskine Childers of [Ireland](#) died after a heart attack in Dublin and was replaced by a 3-man Presidential Commission.

Garden Rain for brass ensemble by Toru Takemitsu was performed for the initial time, in Nissei Theater, Tokyo.

John Tavener got married with Victoria Maragopoulou, a Greek dancer, in the Russian Orthodox Cathedral in London.

Metamorphosis/Dance op.36 for orchestra by Alexander Goehr was performed for the initial time, in Royal Festival Hall, London.

November 21, Thursday: The [Birmingham pub bombings](#).



IRELAND

IRELAND

November 24, Sunday: After two days of meetings in Vladivostok, Soviet General Secretary Leonid Brezhnev and US President Gerald Ford reached a preliminary agreement to limit the number of [nuclear weapons](#) and delivery systems, including those capable of launching multiple independently targeted warheads (MIRV).

American anthropologists Donald Johanson and Tom Gray discovered the remains of AL 288-1, a female *Australopithecus afarensis*, near Hadar, Ethiopia. Over the following three weeks their team, which included French geologist Maurice Taieb and French paleontologist Yves Coppens, would unearth almost half of a skeleton estimated to be 3,200,000 years old. The skeleton showed characteristics of both human and ape. They would refer to this prehistoric person as “Lucy.”

Despite denials by the Irish Republican Army, six men from Northern [Ireland](#) were charged with the [Birmingham pub bombings](#) of November 21st.

November 27, Wednesday: As Spanish forces withdrew in the Spanish Sahara, Moroccan troops took over the town of Smara in the north of the province.

Ross McWhirter, co-editor of the Guinness Book of World Records, was shot to death, presumably by [Irish](#) Catholic terrorists. He had recently offered a \$100,000 reward for information leading to the arrest of those responsible for the recent [Birmingham pub bombings](#) in England. He had also been leading an organization devoted to bringing back the death penalty for terrorists.

Film directors Carlo Ponti and George Pan Cosmatos, and author Robert Katz, were found guilty of criminal libel by an Italian court, for having defamed Pope Pius XII in their film “Massacre in Rome,” and awarded suspended sentences. (The film, and the book it had been based on, had asserted that Pope Pius had neglected to do enough to prevent the killing of 335 Italians by the Germans in 1944.)

November 29, Friday: Ulrike Meinhof was sentenced by a West Berlin court to eight years in prison for having helped Andreas Baader escape from jail in 1970 (an accomplice received two years).

The National Assembly of France voted to allow abortion during the 1st ten weeks of pregnancy.

To deal with recent bombings, the British Parliament passed the Prevention of Terrorism Act. This outlawed various organizations including the [Irish](#) Republican Army, excluded from the nation anyone suspected by the government of supporting terrorism, and allowed for arrest without warrant and detention for up to five days without charge of anyone suspected by a law officer of supporting terrorism.

Two bombs exploded in Catholic pubs in Newry and Crossmaglen, injuring 58.

The UN Security Council voted to extend the Disengagement Observer Force on the Golan Heights.

Little Concerto for percussion and strings by Karl Amadeus Hartmann was performed publicly for the initial time, in Brunswick.

Concerto on Old English Rounds for viola, female chorus, and orchestra by William Schuman was performed for the initial time, in Boston.



IRELAND

IRELAND

December 19, Thursday: Cearbhall O'Dálaigh became president of [Ireland](#), replacing Erskine Childers (who had died on November 17th).

The [Wall Street Journal](#) reported that the last independent companies in Algeria had been nationalized.

Nelson Rockefeller was sworn in as Vice-President of the United States, filling the vacancy left by Gerald Ford's accession to the presidency.

1975

The Provisional Irish Republican Army staged a bomb campaign in Great Britain. De Valera died. Merlyn Rees became Secretary of State for Northern [Ireland](#). A new Northern [Ireland](#) convention was proposed.

An integrated pest management program named BLITECAST, running on mainframe computers at the University of Maine, began to attempt to forecast whether weather conditions were likely to be such as to cause the [late potato blight](#) to become a problem in the current potato-growing season. This was intended to assist farmers in deciding whether to complete the traditional routine series of six serial weekly applications of expensive and dangerous fungicides (farmers could hope to increase profits through reducing spraying; for instance if a farmer growing 50 hectares of potato crop would be able with confidence to skip three of his six sprayings, he would have his potato cash crop worth \$144,000 while putting an additional \$2,850 in foregone costs directly into his pocket as profit, the only question being how he was going to be able to fall sleep until this crop was safely harvested and sold).

The virus section of the US Army's Center for Biological Warfare Research at Fort Detrick, Maryland was renamed as "The Fredrick Cancer Research Facilities" to suggest falsely to American voters that this facility was engaged in research into saving the lives of people by developing a cure for cancer rather than in research into how to kill people by causing them to develop cancer. For extra-deep "cover," this bio-war facility was placed under the supervision of the National Cancer Institute — an agency not normally associated in the public mind with the taking of human life. It would be at that facility that a special virus cancer program would be initiated by the US Navy, purportedly to develop new sorts of virus that would cause cancer. It would also be there that retrovirologists would isolate HTLV (Human T-cell Leukemia Virus), a virus for which we have no present immunity.



February 10, Monday: The Irish Republican Army began a unilateral ceasefire in Northern [Ireland](#).

May 1, Thursday: The elections for an assembly intended to write a new constitution for Northern [Ireland](#) were won overwhelmingly by Protestant hard-liners.



June 9, Monday: The trial of six [Irish](#) Catholics charged with the [Birmingham pub bombings](#) of the previous November began in Lancaster.

July 17, Tuesday: The Popular Democratic Party left the Portuguese government. There remained only two parties in power: the Communists and their close ally, the Portuguese Democratic Movement.

An Irish Republican Army bomb killed four British soldiers in Armagh, Northern [Ireland](#).

At 1709 on the UTC clock, Soviet and American spacemen linked their Apollo and Soyuz crafts and joined hands in low orbit around the planet Earth.

Satiric Dances for a Comedy by Aristophanes for band by Norman Dello Joio was performed for the initial time, in Concord, Massachusetts (the work had been commissioned by the Concord Band in honor of the bicentennial of the Battle of Concord).²⁶⁹

August 9, Saturday: FNLA and UNITA withdrew from a 3-part transitional coalition in Angola. In the absence of the Portuguese High Commissioner, Angola was without an effective government.

The worst violence in two years in Northern [Ireland](#) erupted on the 4th anniversary of the policy of internment.

Dmitri Dmitriyevich Shostakovich died in the Kremlin Hospital, Moscow of lung cancer at the age of 68 years (although his heart ailment had been well known, Shostakovich had kept his cancer a secret).

August 15, Friday: When President Sheikh Mujibur Rahman, his wife and five of their children were killed in a coup by right-wing army officers, Khandaker Moshaque Ahmed became president of Bangladesh.

A court in Lancaster, England found six [Irish](#) Catholics guilty of the [Birmingham pub bombings](#) of the previous year.

September 8, Monday: Protestant leaders in Northern [Ireland](#) voted to oppose any form of power sharing with Catholics in the province.

The 2d year of racial desegregation of the public schools began in [Boston](#). Police battled white demonstrators at Charlestown High School. 300 whites marched up Breed's Hill, overturning cars and setting them on fire. That night the Warren Prescott school in Charlestown was firebombed and whites stoned firemen as they arrived to battle the blaze. Gangs in South Boston began nightly mayhem.

269. In certain circles, a battle is considered something to commemorate (go figure).



IRELAND

IRELAND

October 22, Wednesday: Two members of the US mission to Lebanon were kidnapped off the streets of Beirut.

Three gunmen burst into the Turkish embassy in Vienna and killed Danis Tunaligil, ambassador of Turkey to Austria. They escaped.

The Soviet space probe Venera 9 made a soft landing on Venus and sent back the 1st pictures taken from the surface.

Four of the [Irish](#) Catholics convicted of the [Birmingham pub bombings](#) in Guildford, England during the previous year were sentenced to life in prison.

December 5, Friday: After four years, the British government suspended its policy of detention without trial in Northern [Ireland](#).

South Moluccans holding hostages in the Indonesian consulate in Amsterdam released all but four of the children among the hostages.

Prelude in Memory of D.D. Shostakovich by Alfred Schnittke was performed for the initial time, in Moscow.

Air Music for orchestra by Ned Rorem was performed for the initial time, in Cincinnati.

1976

January 4, Sunday: Christian militiamen blockaded two Palestinian refugee camps east of Beirut.

Protestants murdered five Catholics in South Armagh, Northern [Ireland](#).

A Wisconsin Symphony for orchestra by Otto Luening was performed for the initial time, in Milwaukee.

February 11, Wednesday: The Indonesian government announced that East Timor had come to be completely under their control.

UNITA military headquarters at Silva Porto was taken by the MPLA. The Organization of African Unity recognized and admitted to membership the MPLA government of the Peoples Republic of Angola.

Prime Minister Aldo Moro announced a new coalition minority government for Italy.

The London [Times](#) reported that in the year since the “cease fire” declaration in Northern [Ireland](#) 289 people have been killed by terrorists in the province.

March 5, Friday: The British government announced that the 78-member assembly designed to bring constitutional change to Northern [Ireland](#) had failed and would be disbanded. Direct rule from London would continue.



IRELAND

IRELAND

May 15, Saturday: The Irish Republican Army attacked a police station at Belcoo, Northern [Ireland](#), killing 5 policemen.

The 1st public performance of Studies for Player Piano no.27, 35, 36, 40 by Conlon Nancarrow took place, in Bremen.

Monument, Selbstportrait, Bewegung for two pianos by György Ligeti was performed for the initial time, in Cologne.

Epigrams and Hymn for chorus and organ by Ulysses Kay to words of Whittier, Murray and Longfellow was performed for the initial time, in New York.

May 17, Monday: There were artillery and rocket duels in Beirut that killed 239 and injured 346.

Protestants attacked Catholic pubs in four towns in Northern [Ireland](#), killing 5 and injuring 40.

July 21, Wednesday: Christopher Ewart-Biggs, the British ambassador to [Ireland](#), and his secretary, were killed when a mine exploded beneath their car near Dublin.

September 2, Thursday: A report by the European Commission on Human Rights in Strasbourg found Great Britain guilty of torture in Northern [Ireland](#).

In downtown Cape Town, South Africa, 3,000 colored and black demonstrators clashed with police.

After two weeks in the custody of the Argentine authorities, Father James Weeks reported that clergy and lay workers helping the poor in Argentina were in constant fear of their lives from conservative death squads linked to the police and military.

October 22, Friday: Faced with criticism for having sent an anti-terrorism bill to the Supreme Court for their opinion, President Cearbhal O'Dalaigh of [Ireland](#) resigned.

Mi-Parti for orchestra by Witold Lutoslawski was performed for the initial time, in the Concertgebouw, Amsterdam, and was conducted by the composer.

December 3, Friday: Patrick John Hillery replaced a presidential commission to become President of [Ireland](#).



IRELAND

IRELAND

December 5, Sunday: In national elections in Japan the ruling Liberal Democratic Party for the 1st time lost their majority (they remained the largest party).

The Irish Republican Army bombed about half the shopping district in Londonderry, causing something like \$2,500,000 in damage.

At a new bridge crossing the River Boyne at Drogheda, [Ireland](#), 10,000 Catholics and Protestants marched for peace.

The Danish government announced that wages, prices, and rents would be frozen for three months.

American Te Deum for vocal soloist, chorus and winds by Karel Husa, to words of various sources, was performed for the initial time, in Cedar Rapids, Iowa, and was conducted by the composer.

1977

June 16, Thursday: King Juan Carlos of Spain called on Prime Minister Adolfo Suarez to form a new government after his party won a plurality of seats in the 1st democratic election in Spain in 41 years.

Leonid Illyich Brezhnev replaced Nikolai Viktorovich Podgorny as Chairman of the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet of the USSR.

Parliamentary elections in [Ireland](#) ended in a crushing defeat for the ruling *Fine Gael*/Labour coalition. *Fianna Fáil* won a majority unprecedented in Irish politics.

Electronic Sonata for four-channel tape by Lejaren Hiller was performed for the initial time, in Buffalo.

July 5, Tuesday: The Pakistani military, led by General Mohammed Zia ul-Haq, overthrew the government of Prime Minister Zulfikar Ali Bhutto.

John Mary Lynch replaced Liam Cosgrave as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

Bow Down, a music theater by Harrison Birtwistle to words of Harrison, was performed for the initial time, in London.

1978

January 18, Wednesday: In Jerusalem, President Sadat withdrew the [Egyptian](#) delegation from political talks with Israel one day after they began.

The European Court of Human Rights ruled in the case of [Ireland](#) v. United Kingdom that Great Britain had, in its interrogation of those it suspected of terrorism, degraded them and subjected them to inhuman treatment.



February 17, Friday: An [Irish](#) Republican Army bomb exploded in a restaurant in a Protestant section of Belfast, killing 12 and injuring 30.

In Copenhagen, after a trial lasting three-and-a-half years, Mogens Gilstруп, leader of the anti-tax Progress Party, was convicted of tax evasion and fined \$250,000 plus court costs and back taxes amounting to \$750,000.

Three chamber works by Anton Webern were performed for the initial time, at the sixth International Webern Festival, Baton Rouge, Louisiana: Scherzo and Trio in a minor for string quartet (1904), Trio Movement for clarinet, trumpet and violin (1920), and a String Trio Movement (Ruhig) (1925).

June 1, Thursday: The French government began removing price controls.

An Amnesty International report accused British authorities of employing brutal interrogation techniques in Northern [Ireland](#).

The East Wing of the National Gallery in Washington, designed by IM Pei, opened to the public.

Joaquín Rodrigo was enrolled in the Royal Academy of Sciences, Letters, and Fine Arts of Belgium to fill the vacancy left by the death of Benjamin Britten.

July 6, Thursday: After seven days of attacks by Syrian forces on Christians in Beirut, 450 people were dead and 1,700 injured.

Protesters demanding withdrawal of British troops from Northern [Ireland](#) heaved bags of manure from the visitors' gallery onto the floor of the House of Commons. Two were arrested.

Fall: George E. Ryan's "Shanties and Shiftlessness: The Immigrant [Irish](#) of [Henry Thoreau](#)" ([Éire-Ireland: A Journal of Irish Studies](#) 13: 54-78).



I suppose it is only natural that an article written by someone of Irish descent for an Irish magazine might be a bit biased, but how can you take someone seriously who writes,

Torn from their homeland by famine and subjugation, as well as a desperate passion to survive, these fugitives from an unsophisticated and alien culture [the Irish] indulged in habits of speech, dress, and deportment, to say nothing of values both religious and personal, that were causes for local amusement if not outright wonder and amazement.

Ryan seems to enjoy quoting everything Thoreau ever wrote about the Irish in order to decide exactly what his opinion was. Was he exasperated by them, Ryan asks. Indifferent? Or supportive? Before we can learn the answer we are forced to plow through twenty-four pages of quotes by, not only Thoreau himself, but also by Emerson, [Hawthorne](#), Channing (who were prejudiced against them), Fuller, Alcott, Whittier, and Whitman (Irish



supporters). Ryan quotes from Emerson's journal,

I think it cannot be maintained by any candid person that the African races have ever occupied or do promise ever to occupy any very high place in the human family. Their present condition is the strongest proof that they cannot. The Irish cannot; the American Indian cannot; the Chinese cannot. Before the energy of the Caucasian race, all other races have quailed and done obeisance.

After quoting praises by Fuller and Alcott, Ryan quotes passages from poems by Whittier to prove that he had "a familiarity with Ireland's culture and a sympathy with her people" (and then remembering his subject) "ingredients rarely found in the writings of Thoreau."

Moving right along, Ryan describes all of Thoreau's Irish acquaintances and his attitudes towards each. A few he liked - Johnnie Riordan and Michael Flannery- and a few he did not like. After quoting Thoreau on his visit to John Field's hut, Ryan draws the conclusion that "Thoreau's language is unsympathetic and hostile, his detail too consciously adverse to suggest irony or genuine objectivity." Following the quotations about the important Irish in Thoreau's life, Ryan gives examples of "relatively insignificant" Irish references and then digresses to cite one critic who claims that the hound, bay horse, and turtle-dove metaphor may have its origins in an old Irish fairy tale called "The Story of Conn-eda; or the Golden Apples of Lough Erne." However, he observes that the myth does not include turtle-doves or bay horses, and none of the animals is lost in quite the same way as in Thoreau's version.

Parable

Even if Thoreau did not like the Irish, the Irish liked him, according to Ryan. Both Yeats and the artist-author Paul Henry were inspired after reading [WALDEN](#). So what was Thoreau's attitude towards the Irish? Ryan quotes Walter Harding's theory that at first Thoreau was scornful of the Irish but his opinions changed as he became better acquainted with them. Finally he could appreciate their industry, cheerfulness, camaraderie, and honesty.

November 14, Tuesday: A wave of bombings throughout Northern [Ireland](#) indicated the beginning of a new campaign by the Irish Republican Army.

Olivier Messiaen and his wife, along with Mstislav Rostropovich, were received at the White House by President and Mrs. Carter.



IRELAND

IRELAND

November 19, Sunday: In Madrid, 100,000 conservatives grieved at the 3d anniversary of the death of Francisco Franco.

At Jonestown near Port Kaituma, Guyanan soldiers came upon the bodies of 911 members of an American religious cult, who have apparently committed suicide. They also came upon the dead bodies of American Congressman Leo Ryan and four others in his visiting party, apparently killed by cult members.

Palestinian terrorists exploded a bomb on a tourist bus near Jerusalem, killing 4 and injuring 40.

Irish Republican Army firebombs exploded throughout Northern [Ireland](#), bringing the total of blasts to more than 50 since the latest offensive began on November 14th (not counting 13 bombs diffused by the police).

November 30, Thursday: In 11 towns of Northern [Ireland](#), 19 Irish Republican Army bombs were detonated.

1979

Margaret Thatcher became Britain's first known female Prime Minister. Being female, of course she would bring decency and compassion to public life.

When the [Irish Republic](#) joined the European Monetary System, the Irish Pound and the British Pound became no longer equivalent.

June 7, Thursday: The Iranian government nationalized all 37 private banks in the country. They seized all assets of the Shah's family and supporters.

Pope John Paul II visited his native village, and the death camp at Auschwitz.

Denmark, [Ireland](#), the Netherlands, and the United Kingdom held the 1st direct elections for the European Parliament.

US President Carter announced that trade sanctions on Zimbabwe-Rhodesia would not be lifted.

August 27, Monday: Earl Mountbatten of Burma, cousin to Queen Elizabeth, was killed when a bomb planted by the [Irish](#) Republican Army exploded aboard his fishing boat off County Sligo, [Ireland](#). Three others on the boat were also killed, and three injured.

Forces of the [Irish](#) Republican Army ambushed British troops at Warrenpoint south of Belfast, killing 18.

Piccola serenata, a vocalise for voice and piano by Leonard Bernstein, was performed for the initial time, in Salzburg.



IRELAND

IRELAND

December 11, Tuesday: Charles James Haughey replaced John Mary Lynch as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

The government of Zimbabwe Rhodesia voted to dissolve in preparation for the arrival of Lord Soames.

Extreme leftists entered a business school in Turin and rounded up 200 students and faculty, shooting 10 in the legs. After delivering an oration, they departed.

Bilude for piano and tape by Pierre Schaeffer was performed for the initial time, at Musée Guimet, Paris.

Earthrise for taped narration, alto, tenor, chorus and orchestra by Ross Lee Finney to words of Thomas and Teilhard de Chardin, was performed for the initial time, in Ann Arbor, Michigan.

1980

During the decade of the 1980s, the organization “Witness for Peace” would be sending thousands of Americans to Nicaragua as a “shield of Love,” to help stop violence by US-backed Contras. 80,000 US citizens would sign a “pledge of Resistance” promising to deploy the tactics of [civil disobedience](#) at home if there should be an invasion by US forces.

The Irish Republican Army campaigned in Northern [Ireland](#). Hunger strikes began in Maze prison.

April 18, Friday: [Pawtucket, Rhode Island](#), began a [baseball](#) game against Rochester. The game would end in a tie — several days later.

SPORTS

Lebanese Moslems kidnapped 3 UN soldiers, a reporter, and a photographer. They executed two of the [Irish](#) soldiers and injured the third. The 3 still alive were released.

The Inter-American Commission for Human Rights of the OAS reported that over the previous decade at least 6,000 people had been kidnapped, tortured, and murdered in Argentina, by the government.

Ländler for thirteen strings by Wolfgang Rihm was performed for the initial time, in Baden-Baden. Also premiered was Rihm’s Nature Morte -- Still Alive for thirteen strings.



IRELAND

IRELAND

May 20, Tuesday: The government of South Korean Prime Minister Shin Hyon Hwack resigned because it was unable to maintain order in the country.

The Italian Olympic Committee voted against the wishes of its government, to attend the Moscow games. Five other Olympic Committees decide to attend: Austria, Belgium, [Ireland](#), the Netherlands, and Sweden.

Gunther Schuller was inducted into the American Academy of Arts and Letters.

Voters in Quebec decided overwhelmingly against separation from Canada.

Soft Morning, City! for soprano, double bass and computer generated tape by Tod Machover to words of Joyce was performed for the initial time, in St. John's Smith Square, London.

August 4, Monday: After a break of six weeks the United Nations resumed food shipments to rebel-held areas of Cambodia.

Juan Antonio Samaranch of Spain replaced Michael Morris, Baron Killanin of [Ireland](#) as President of the International Olympic Committee.

Klavierstück Nr.7 by Wolfgang Rihm was performed for the initial time, in Darmstadt.

1981

At Fort Lewis, Washington, the United States Army unveiled MILES, the first military training system to simulate bullet strikes by the use of low-energy laser pulses. Meanwhile, outside Henniker, New Hampshire, twelve middle-class, middle-aged men invented The Survival Game, also to be known as Paintball Wars. "I thought it was silly at first," admitted one urban executive. "But once I got started, it was a fantastic experience. I never thought it was so much fun shooting people."

In the Maze prison in [Ireland](#), hunger strikes ended.

February 12, Thursday: The Reverend Ian Paisley, M.P. was suspended from the House of Commons when he refused to retract after terming Humphrey Atkins, Secretary of State for Northern [Ireland](#), a liar.

April 10, Friday: In Geneva, 35 nations signed a convention banning the use of napalm against civilians (the United States of America was, of course, not one of the signatories to this convention).

Irish Republican Army member Bobby Sands, currently imprisoned, won a by-election for the British Parliament in Northern [Ireland](#).

The Polish Parliament voted a 2-month ban on strikes.

Winter Variations for chamber ensemble by Tod Machover was performed for the initial time, in Carnegie Recital Hall, New York, with the composer conducting.



April 23, Thursday: Catholics rioted in four cities in Northern [Ireland](#), including Belfast, battling with police and troops.

Concerto for violin, cello and chamber orchestra by Arvo Pärt was performed for the initial time, in London.

June 11, Thursday: The New York State Health Department reported that ex-[Love Canal](#) residents were failing to exhibit any abnormally high cancer rate. Admittedly it did look bad, the publicity had been horrible, the public fear was epidemic, but see, this whole thing has been blown way out of proportion — unexpectedly, it has turned out that there’s actually no harm done at all when we build our homes and schools on top of seeping toxic waste! It’s OK, we just lucked out on this one. Who would have supposed?

An earthquake in southeast Iran killed 3,000.

Parliamentary elections in [Ireland](#) failed to produce a majority. The ruling *Fianna Fáil* party lost 7 seats, even though the *Dail Eireann* was increased by an overall 18 seats. *Fine Gael* and Labour would form a coalition government.

June 30, Tuesday: The [Chinese](#) Communist Party criticized the policies that Mao Zedong had implemented during the Cultural Revolution, while alleging that overall, his contributions had been more important than his errors.

At the inauguration of President Ferdinand Marcos in Manila, US Vice President George Bush praised Marcos and his government for its “adherence to democratic principles and to the democratic processes.”

Syrian forces lifted the siege of the Christian town of Zahle.

In Israeli parliamentary elections, the ruling Likud Party won a 1-seat plurality over Labor, but not a majority. Likud would put together a new coalition.

Garret FitzGerald of *Fine Gael* replaced Charles James Haughey of *Fianna Fáil* as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

A court in Düsseldorf sentenced 8 former death camp guards to prison terms for their activities at Majdanek during World War II.

July 8, Wednesday: Over the following week, 40 supporters of the deposed President Abulhassan Bani-Sadr would be executed in Teheran.

Joseph McDonnell became the 5th IRA hunger striker to succumb in Maze Prison, renewing violent clashes in Northern [Ireland](#).

CIVIL DISOBEDIENCE

Rioting in London and Liverpool spread to Manchester.



IRELAND

IRELAND

July 13, Monday: Martin Hurson became the 6th [Irish](#) Republican Army hunger striker to succumb in Maze Prison.

[CIVIL DISOBEDIENCE](#)

British Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher met with city and community leaders in Liverpool and told them that the rioting was not to be explained by the level of unemployment — upon leaving the meeting Mrs. Thatcher was rewarded for her insights by being the recipient of a couple of tomatoes and several rolls of toilet paper.

August 20, Thursday: President Ronald Reagan flexed the mental muscles of the crew of the aircraft carrier USS *Constellation*, by telling them: “Let friend and foe alike know that America has the muscle to back up its words. Ships like this and men like you are that muscle.”



Just imagine all those strong American young men, in their swaying bunks and berths aboard that vessel on that night, dozing off to dreamland while ruminating earnestly about how friend and foe alike could know that they were Americans, American men who had the muscle, American men who had the muscle to back up the mighty words of other men. You too can stand at attention in neat formation and be told what to think. You too can lie in a swaying bunk alone and doze off to dreamland while ruminating earnestly about what you have been told to ruminate about. All it requires is that you declare your willingness to kill people you have never met, when you are informed by people in authority over you that they do not deserve to be alive.

Akhmatova: Requiem for soprano, bass and orchestra by John Tavener was performed for the initial time, in Usher Hall, Edinburgh.

In a by-election in Northern [Ireland](#), IRA supporter Owen Carron won a seat in Parliament. In Maze Prison, Michael Devine became the 10th IRA hunger striker to succumb.

CIVIL DISOBEDIENCE



1982

Worldwide ban on whaling. Argentina invaded the Falkland Islands and Britain and Argentina went to war. On its way down the Atlantic toward the conflict, the British fleet killed every whale it detected — to ensure that no Argentinian submarine was lurking behind it. During the conflict the British employed what they termed “dazzle sights” (direct-fire laser weapons) to blind Argentine pilots.

“Rolling devolution” was proposed for Northern [Ireland](#).

March 9, Tuesday: The Reagan administration released intelligence photographs supposedly showing a massive military buildup by Nicaragua, supported by Cuba and the USSR.

Fu for vocal soloists and twelve instruments by Tan Dun was performed for the initial time, in Beijing.

Charles James Haughey of *Fianna Fáil* replaced Garret Fitzgerald of *Fine Gael* as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

La vera storia, an opera by Luciano Berio to words of Calvino and the composer, was performed for the initial time, in Teatro alla Scala, Milan.

October 20, Wednesday: When voters in Northern [Ireland](#) elected an advisory assembly, the great majority of the seats were won by opponents of compromise.

The Seven Words for cello, bayan, and strings by Sofia Gubaidulina was performed for the initial time, in Malyi Hall of Moscow Conservatory. This was programmed under the title “Partita” after the Soviet censor refused to allow the Christian nature of the title. The piece not well received.

November 4, Thursday: Ruud Lubbers of the Christian Democratic Appeal replaced Andries van Agt as Prime Minister of the Netherlands at the head of a center-right coalition.

The government of [Irish](#) Prime Minister Charles Haughey fell when it lost a confidence vote.

Spanish General Victor Lago Roman was shot to death in Madrid (Basque separatists suspected).

November 24, Wednesday: In the 3d parliamentary election in [Ireland](#) in 15 months, the ruling *Fianna Fáil* Party lost 6 seats. *Fine Gael* and Labour would once again form a governing coalition.

¿Donde estas hermano? for two sopranos, mezzo-soprano and alto by Luigi Nono was performed for the initial time, in the Musikhochschule, Cologne. The work was dedicated to the “disappeared of Argentina.” Also premiered was Mit geschlossenem Mund for eight voices by Wolfgang Rihm.

Concerto for piano and orchestra no.2 by Gunther Schuller was performed for the initial time, in Mainz, the composer conducting.



IRELAND

IRELAND

December 14, Tuesday: Garret Fitzgerald of *Fine Gael* replaced Charles James Haughey of *Fianna Fáil* as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

1983

Bill Cronon's CHANGES IN THE LAND: INDIANS, COLONISTS, AND THE [ECOLOGY](#) OF NEW ENGLAND.

Northern [Ireland](#) Assembly formed. During this year, while the [Irish](#) Republican Army was stepping up its Catholic terrorist violence, David R. MacKenzie was publishing "Application of Modern Approaches to the Study of the Epidemiology of Diseases Caused by *Phytophthora*" in D.C. Erwin's *PHYTOPHTHORA: ITS BIOLOGY, TAXONOMY, [ECOLOGY](#), AND PATHOLOGY*. St. Paul MN: The American Phytopathological Society, pages 303-13: According to these plant pathologists, the causal agent of potato late blight, *Phytophthora infestans*, has a quite narrow host range in being limited to the potato and to the tomato plants. Epidemics of blight have long been associated with persistence factors such as potato cull piles and transmission factors such as infected seed pieces; nevertheless, by tradition, potato sanitation has not been considered to be greatly helpful in controlling the outbreaks of this infection. Why this is so is not known, but in the northeastern United States, reduction of initial inoculum by cull pile destruction was practiced for like half a century with results that were not really worth the effort (my hypothesis would be that this might be because tomato plants have also been acting as reservoirs of infection, as carriers and perpetrators of the inoculum — that if these sanitation measures had been extended from the potato fields into tomato fields as well, they might have been more effective).

August 5, Friday: A 4-month trial in Belfast ended with 4 [Irish](#) nationalists awarded life sentences for terrorism, 18 others lesser prison terms, 13 sentences suspended — and 3 acquittals.

September 7, Wednesday: Three French soldiers were killed by artillery in Beirut.

In [Ireland](#), 67% of voters approved a constitutional amendment banning abortion.

November 20, Sunday: Gunmen opened fire in a Protestant church in Darkley, South Armagh, Northern [Ireland](#), killing 3 and injuring 7 (the Irish Republican Army disavowed the attack).

Glamour for voice and piano by Arnold Bax was performed for the initial time, over the airwaves of BBC Radio 3, 62 years after it was composed, during the centennial of the composer's birth.

Mass for chorus, violin, three trombones and organ by Charles Wuorinen was performed for the initial time, in St. Ignatius of Antioch Episcopal Church, New York, the composer conducting.



1984

The US Secret Service commissioned the development of “pumpkin-head” or “bulletman” foam-padded training suits. The idea was to allow for opponents in training scenarios to provide more resistance, thereby increasing training realism.

The book I RIGOBERTA MENCHÚ: AN INDIAN WOMAN IN GUATEMALA detailed the struggle of Guatemalan women in the face of a US-supported military government that killed more than 100,000 people.

President Ronald Reagan went on TV to ask the USers to support the “freedom fighters” of Nicaragua. (Two years later, the Reagan administration would be forced reluctantly to admit that in order to fund these Nicaraguan “Contras” it had been illegally selling weapons to enemies of America, in Iran.)

Douglas Hurd became Secretary of State for Northern [Ireland](#). The New [Ireland](#) Forum advocated a federal Ireland based on the four Provinces. In the general election in the United Kingdom, Gerry Adams was elected for West Belfast but would not in fact take a seat at Westminster.

1985

June 23, Sunday: A bomb brought down an Air India flight from Toronto to Bombay southwest of Cork, [Ireland](#).

Piano Trio by Mauricio Kagel was performed for the initial time, in the Concertgebouw, Amsterdam.

August 7, Wednesday: Broadcast journalists of the British Broadcasting Corporation staged a 24-hour strike, blacking out news on domestic airwaves and the World Service. The strikers were protesting an order urged by the Thatcher government upon the BBC Board of Governors, not to broadcast a documentary on Northern [Ireland](#).

Ted Turner formally ended his attempt to take over CBS, Inc.

November 15, Friday: An agreement was signed by the United Kingdom and the Republic of [Ireland](#) that although Northern [Ireland](#) would remain a part of the United Kingdom, the Republic of [Ireland](#) would be allowed to play a consultative role in the province.

The United States sent its 3d secret ransom shipment to Iran, consisting of 18 Hawk missiles.

Harpsichord Sonata no.8 by Vincent Persichetti was performed for the initial time, in the Cathedral of St. John the Divine, New York.



IRELAND

IRELAND

December 17, Tuesday: All 15 Ulster unionist members of Parliament resigned their seats to protest the Anglo-[Irish](#) Agreement of the previous month.

Cäcilia: Ausgeplündert, Ein Besuch bei der Heiligen a Hörspiel by Mauricio Kagel, was performed for the initial time, over the airwaves of Westdeutscher Rundfunk 3.

1986

June 12, Thursday: The South African government declared a nationwide state of emergency in preparation for the upcoming 10th anniversary of the Soweto uprising, and immediately arrested 1,000 citizens.

The British government dissolved the Northern [Ireland](#) assembly.

The New York [Times](#) reported links between Panama's Chief of Staff General Manuel Noriega and drug and arms trafficking, not to mention murder of political opponents.

The management of Wal-Mart Stores Inc. banned 32 specific rock and pop music publications as well as recordings by certain popular music performers.

Fratres for string quartet by Arvo Pärt was performed for the initial time, in London.

Rain Dreaming for harpsichord by Toru Takemitsu was performed for the initial time, at the Library of Congress in Washington DC.

June 26, Thursday: [Irish](#) voters rejected a proposal that would end the constitutional ban on divorce.

A bomb exploded at the El Al counter in Madrid, injuring 18.

The Nicaraguan government closed [La Prensa](#), the sole independent newspaper in the nation.

Concerto for piano and orchestra by Ellen Taaffe Zwilich was performed for the initial time, in Detroit.

1987

February 17, Tuesday: In the [Irish](#) general elections, the opposition *Fianna Fáil* party defeated the government of Prime Minister Garrett FitzGerald but failed to win a majority. *Fianna Fáil* would form a minority coalition government.

Tashi for clarinet, two violins, viola, cello and piano by Lukas Foss was performed for the initial time, at the Kennedy Center, Washington, with the composer at the piano.

March 10, Tuesday: Forty people, including airline employees, were arrested in New York City as part of a \$1,500,000,000 [cocaine](#) smuggling ring.



Charles James Haughey of *Fianna Fáil* replaced Garret Fitzgerald of *Fine Gael* as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

Awake, Thou Wintry Earth for clarinet and violin by William Schuman was performed for the initial time, in New York.



IRELAND

IRELAND

April 25, Saturday: South African commandos raid Livingstone, Zambia, killing four people and injuring another. South Africa claims the dead are terrorists. Local Zambian claim they had nothing to do with the African National Congress.

The Provisional Irish Republican Army explodes a car bomb on the main road from Dublin to Belfast, one kilometer inside Northern [Ireland](#). They kill a prominent Northern Ireland judge and his wife, and injure seven other people.

In parliamentary elections in Iceland, the ruling center-right coalition loses its majority.

Caminantes...Ayacucho for alto, bass flute, organ, two choirs, orchestra and electronic instruments by Luigi Nono to words of Bruno is performed for the initial time, in München.

The electroacoustic version of Vertigo for electronic sound generators by Roger Reynolds is performed for the initial time, in San Francisco.

November 8, Sunday: The Provisional Irish Republican Army explodes a bomb at a war memorial ceremony in Enniskillen, Northern [Ireland](#). Eleven people are killed, over 60 injured.

Duetto concertante for oboe/english horn, cello and orchestra by Isang Yun is performed for the initial time, in Rotweil.

Chaconne for guitar and tape by Lukas Foss is performed for the initial time, in New York.

Lyric Intermezzo for 15 players by George Perle is performed for the initial time, in Seattle.

1988

January 25, Monday: British Attorney General Sir Patrick Mayhew indicated that his office had no intention to prosecute any Northern [Ireland](#) policemen in regard to the “shoot to kill” policy of 1982, despite there being evidence that this alleged police policy had led to serious offenses.

In Medellin, drug traffickers kidnapped and killed the Attorney General of Colombia, Carlos Mauro Hoyos Jimenez.

A revised version of Le visage nuptial for soprano, alto, female chorus and orchestra by Pierre Boulez to words of Char was performed, although incompletely, for the initial time in London, and was conducted by the composer.



IRELAND

IRELAND

June 15, Wednesday: The Armenian Supreme Soviet officially requested unification with Nagorno-Karabakh.

The Provisional Irish Republican Army blew up 6 British soldiers in their car in Lisburn, Northern [Ireland](#).

Water Out of Sunlight, Michael Tippett's String Quartet no.4 arranged for string orchestra by Meirion Bowen, was performed for the initial time, in Royal Festival Hall, London.

A revised version of the String Quartet no.1 op.5 by Alexander Goehr was performed for the initial time, in London (the previous version of this work dated to 1959).

August 20, Saturday: President Lazarus Saliu of Palau was found shot to death in his living room (although an intruder was suspected, suicide was not ruled out).

A ceasefire between Iran and Iraq went into effect as UN truce observers took up positions along the front.

In the face of spreading coal mine strikes, the Polish government began to conscript draft-age miners.

An Irish Republican Army bomb exploded near Omagh in Northern [Ireland](#) killing 8 British soldiers and injuring 28.

Passacaglia for orchestra by Krzysztof Penderecki was performed for the initial time, in Lucerne (the composer would make this part of the Symphony no.3).

October 26, Wednesday: When local elections were held in South Africa, they were for the 1st time open to all races. The vast majority of blacks, however, were boycotting the voting.

Roussel Uclaf SA announced it would discontinue distribution of the abortion pill RU486 due to protests and threatened boycotts in France and the United States.

The European Court of Human Rights ruled that [Ireland](#) must eliminate its laws against homosexuality.

Départ for chorus and 22 players by Wolfgang Rihm to words of Rimbaud was performed for the initial time, in Vienna.

November 25, Friday: Great Britain had been seeking extradition of Father Patrick Ryan from Belgium on charges of terrorism. When the Belgian authorities released the Father, they flew him to [Ireland](#).

Sonata for violin and piano by Charles Wuorinen was performed for the initial time, in Coolidge Auditorium at the Library of Congress in Washington DC.

December 13, Tuesday: Acting President Ghulam Ishaq Khan of Pakistan was inaugurated for a full 5-year term.

Representatives of Angola, Cuba, and South Africa signed an agreement in Brazzaville providing for the independence of Namibia and the withdrawal of Cuban troops from Angola.

The government of [Ireland](#), fearing terrorism suspect Father Patrick Ryan wouldn't get a fair trial in Great Britain, decided they couldn't allow him to be extradited.



1989

June 15, Thursday: Three laborers were sentenced to death in Shanghai for setting fire to a train during pro-democracy protests.

After a couple of weeks of ethnic violence in Uzbekistan, 90 people had been killed.

Belgian Dr. Jan Cools was freed by Arab terrorists in Lebanon after 13 months in captivity.

The ruling *Fianna Fáil* Party lost seats in the [Irish](#) parliamentary elections. It would form a coalition government along with the Progressive Democrats.

Under the Double Moon, an opera by Anthony Davis to words of Atherton, was performed for the initial time, in St. Louis.

July 12, Wednesday: Charles Haughey was reelected as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#) after forming a coalition between his *Fianna Fáil* Party and the Progressive Democrats.

1990

April 9, Monday: The Irish Republican Army killed 4 British soldiers in Downpatrick, Northern [Ireland](#).

August 25, Saturday: The 7th Marine Expeditionary Brigade began its Persian Gulf buildup (Operation Desert Shield).

The United Nations Security Council voted 13-0-2 to grant member states the right to use force in the embargo of Iraq.

Lebanese terrorists released [Irishman](#) Brian Keenan after 4 years in captivity.

200,000 Bosnian Moslems gather in Foca to pay tribute to Moslems killed by Serbs during World War II.

October 24, Wednesday: In elections to the lower Pakistani house, the Islamic Democratic Alliance won 105 of 217 seats. Former Prime Minister Benazir Bhutto's Pakistan Peoples Party won 45 seats. Bhutto alleged that the government has engaged in election fraud.

Irish Republican Army car bombs killed 7 in Northern [Ireland](#).



IRELAND

IRELAND

November 9, Friday: King Birendra of Nepal gave royal assent to a new constitution limiting his powers, guaranteeing civil liberties, and creating a multiparty democracy.

Mary Robinson was the 1st woman to be elected President of [Ireland](#).

December 3, Monday: The Russian Congress of Peoples Deputies approved private ownership of farms.

Mary Robinson replaced Patrick John Hillary as president of [Ireland](#).

A coup attempt by several hundred army troops against the government of Argentina was suppressed.

1992

January 6, Monday: After 16 days of battling rebels, Georgian president Zviad Gamsakhurdia fled his bunker as rebels stormed the Parliament building in Tbilisi. He left the country with about a hundred supporters, probably to Armenia, as the rebels took over the capital. A military council took up the government. Tengiz Ipolitovich Sigua was named Prime Minister.

Bulgarian General Stoyan Savov, former deputy interior minister and chief suspect in the murder of Georgi Markov, committed suicide by firearm two days before going to trial.

Macedonia amended its constitution to give up any territorial demand on Greece.

In Northern [Ireland](#), an Irish Republican Army bomb killed 8 Army base workers and wounded 5, as they were riding home from work.

January 10, Friday: Russia placed an embargo on consumer goods leaving the country.

An [Irish](#) Republican Army bomb exploded near the Prime Minister's office in London.

January 30, Thursday: Tiit Vähi replaced Edgar Savisaar as Prime Minister of Estonia.

In the wake of a wiretapping scandal, Prime Minister Charles Haughey of [Ireland](#) resigned.

Two5 for trombone and piano by John Cage was performed for the initial time, in Frankfurt-am-Main.

February 11, Tuesday: Albert Reynolds replaced Charles James Haughey as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

US President Bush ordered US companies to cease producing ozone-depleting chemicals by the end of 1995.

April 10, Friday: Serbian forces took Zvornik.

An [Irish](#) Republican Army bomb killed 3 and injured 91 in the financial district of London.



May 3, Sunday: US military planes evacuated American citizens from Sierra Leone, where military leaders had overthrown the government.

After five days of pro-democracy demonstrations in Dushanbe, Tajik authorities began a violent crackdown.

Acting President Ganic made it to UN General Mackenzie's headquarters and pled with him to intervene for the release of President Izetbegovic. Mackenzie and European Community representative Major Colm Doyle of [Ireland](#) drove to Lukavica where the surrounded federal army units held the president. Izetbegovic and General Kukanjac agreed to a swap, the president for the besieged army troops. Soon, a convoy carrying Izetbegovic, Kukanjac, and the federal troops, led by Mackenzie, headed for the Serb lines. Within five minutes, Bosnian militia troops, believing their president to be kidnapped or dead, set upon the convoy cutting it in half, shooting and grabbing guns and ammunition. Mackenzie has Izetbegovic pop out of his APC to show that he was safe. The shooting stopped and the militia joyously welcomed their president back (7 federal soldiers were killed, and several wounded; 100 federal troops were still trapped but their release would be negotiated later).

La déesse Athéna for baritone and twelve instruments by Iannis Xenakis to words of Aeschylus was performed for the initial time, in Athens.

June 18, Thursday: [Irish](#) voters ratified the Maastricht European Union treaty by a 2-1 vote.

August 10, Monday: The British government banned the largest Protestant paramilitary organization in Northern [Ireland](#), the Ulster Defense Association.

November 25, Wednesday: The Czechoslovak National Assembly passed a constitutional amendment allowing the dissolution of the country without a referendum and stipulating that the split was to take place at midnight, December 31st.

93 nations agreed in Copenhagen to speed up the phaseout of ozone-depleting chemicals.

Algirdas Mykolas Brazauskas replaced Vytautas Landsbergis as President of Lithuania.

In national elections in [Ireland](#), the two largest parties each lost ten seats, with strong gains being made by leftist parties. Voters approved constitutional changes allowing greater freedom to travel abroad for abortions, but simultaneously rejected abortion in [Ireland](#) itself. *Fianna Fáil* would form a coalition with Labour.

Annunciation for vocal soloists and chorus by John Tavener to words from the Bible was performed for the initial time, in Westminster Abbey.

Jo-Ha-Kyu for three performers on water, metals, and earth by Tan Dun was performed for the initial time, in New York.



IRELAND

IRELAND

1993

January 12, Tuesday: A right-left coalition government of the *Fianna Fáil* and the Labour Party was approved by the [Irish](#) Parliament.

The *Braer* broke up in heavy seas off the Shetland Islands, its entire cargo of crude oil dumped in the ocean.

April 24, Saturday: The Provisional [Irish](#) Republican Army set off a huge bomb in the London financial district, killing 1 and injuring 45.

October 30, Saturday: 10,000 people marched through Budapest protesting press censorship.

Protestant paramilitaries killed 7 in a bar in the predominantly Catholic town of Greysteel, Northern [Ireland](#).

Witold Lutoslawski received an honorary doctorate from McGill University in Montréal. He gave two lectures, one in English and one in French.

November 28, day: British Prime Minister John Major confirms press reports that his government has made secret contacts with the Provisional [Irish](#) Republican Army.

December 15, Wednesday: The General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade announced that after 7 years, the Uruguay round of trade talks were complete. It has resulted in massive reductions in tariffs.

After meetings in London, British Prime Minister John Major and Irish Prime Minister Albert Reynolds released a 7-page “framework for lasting peace” in Northern [Ireland](#).

Moslem terrorists killed 15 technicians from Croatia and Bosnia at a construction site southeast of Algiers.

Witold Lutoslawski was admitted to the Ministry of the Interior Hospital in Warsaw for apparently minor skin surgery.

1994

Allen, Theodore W. THE INVENTION OF THE WHITE RACE, VOLUME ONE: RACIAL OPPRESSION AND SOCIAL CONTROL. London: Verso, 1994

In this year there would be no Anniversary dinner of the [War Resisters League](#).

The Director of Resource Management for the Department of the Army laid a plan to “establish civilian prison camps on [military] installations,” plans by which the military could, in the name of stopping terrorism, arrest categories of Americans and hold them in rural detention facilities indefinitely, and somehow news of this leaked to the press. Following the September 11th terror attacks, the Sydney Morning Herald checked out these rumors, and their reporter James Mann uncovered a top secret government program to circumvent the Constitution in case of national crisis. A county commissioner in the state of Washington claimed to be in possession of a secret federal document indicating that his county has been pegged as one potential location for such a “concentration camp.”

The European Union was born out of the European Economic Community. After the Father Brendan Smyth affair, the government of the [Irish](#) Republic fell. When Albert Reynolds resigned, Bertie Ahern was elected as the leader of *Fianna Fáil*. The Provisional Irish Republican Army, UVF, UDA, and RHC declared a ceasefire. The Irish Republican Army declared a ceasefire against British and Loyalist targets. Government would be by a coalition of *Fine Gael* with Labour and the Democratic Left. Peace Declaration.

May: In regard to the [Enola Gay](#) exhibit, Director Harwit answered John T. Correll’s April story in [Air Force Magazine](#): “War Stories at Air and Space” offered, among other things in defense of the NASM, that the magazine article was “opt[ing] for silence” on central matters.

WORLD WAR II

The Famine Museum opened in Strokestown, County Roscommon, [Ireland](#), where in 1847 Major Denis Mahon had evicted thousands of tenants, forcing them to live in hastily dug out “scalps” in the roadside ditches — and had then been assassinated.

IRISH POTATO FAMINE

June 8, Sunday: About a century and a half too late to help the sufferers of the [Irish Potato Famine](#), researchers at Purdue University discovered that a gene found in another member of the nightshade family (*Solanaceae*), [Nicotiana tabacum](#), could be transferred to [Solanum tuberosum](#) to help them resist the sort of blight which caused the catastrophe of the mid-19th Century. Well, gee, **too bad** we didn’t figure this out as of 1845! The tobacco gene in question codes for osmotin, a molecule produced by many plants when under stress. These scientists not only found a way to implant this gene within the [potato](#) genetic materials, but also had been able to transfer it multiple times so as to multiply the production of that protein molecule. These large amounts of osmotin would enable genetically altered potatoes to resist late blight infections for an additional day or two (this blight organism being still endemic around the world), which, the researchers alleged, might well be all that is required to have a significant impact upon world nutrition — better living through genetic chemistry. Reassuringly, their press release indicated that although the health impact of starvation upon humans is **not unknown** (emphasis added), osmotin as a naturally occurring chemical has no **known** (emphasis added) health impact upon humans.





THE NIGHTSHADES (SOLANACEAE)

- — [Solanum tuberosum](#)
- — [Tomato Lycopersicon esculentum](#)
- — chili peppers
- — eggplant
- — deadly nightshade
- — [Nicotiana tabacum](#)
- — henbane
- — Jimson weed
- — petunia
- — plus some 2,000 other species grouped into 75 genera

During this year the government of Ireland established a committee to fund events and works commemorating the Famine's 150th anniversary. In a recently republished "Transactions of the Society of Friends during the Famine in Ireland" the [Irish](#) Government minister in charge of the National Commemoration of 150th Anniversary of the Great Famine had this to offer:

On behalf of the Government, I wish to tender our thanks to the Society of Friends for their effort -past and present- in constructing a dignified Christian society in Ireland. We greatly value and cherish your presence here and we acknowledge with heartfelt gratitude your enormous contribution during the famine.... I note too how modern the Quakers were in their attitudes to poverty – seeing it as a structural problem, rather than blaming the poor for their own poverty. Such enlightened attitudes powered the moral imperative to feed the hungry and clothe the naked which constitutes the Quakers glowing achievement in those bitter years.

August 31, Wednesday: The Provisional Irish Republican Army declared a unilateral ceasefire in Northern [Ireland](#).

Russia withdrew its last troops from Berlin, Estonia, and Latvia.

October 13, Thursday: Lonnie L. Willis was having Terry Tempest Williams sign a copy of her book, AN UNSPOKEN HUNGER: STORIES FROM THE FIELD, and asked this Naturalist-in-Residence at the Utah Museum of Natural History if she would sign the volume to Henry David Thoreau. She wrote:

October 13, 1994
Dearest Henry
Because of you
I can stay home
Because of you
I crossed the line in the name of civil disobedience
Because of you
I am less lonely in the world
Thank you
(and by the way, Henry, how do we simplify?)
Terry Tempest Williams



IRELAND

IRELAND

Protestant paramilitaries in Northern [Ireland](#) announced a cease fire and expressed remorse for all the innocent victims of their violence over the previous quarter century.

Fragment for string quartet by Elliott Carter was performed for the initial time, in Merkin Hall, New York. Also premiered was Ned Rorem's Somewhere... for voice and piano, with the composer at the keyboard, Spirit Quartet for string quartet and electronics by Tod Machover, and Quartet Movement in Memoriam D.H. by Robin Holloway.

November 17, Thursday: The historians' letter to NASM Director Martin Harwit had contained a list of minimum issues the [Enola Gay](#) exhibit should include. Professor Noam Chomsky, one of the signatories, wrote in addition that "as a strong opponent of totalitarian tendencies I naturally oppose the efforts of interested pressure groups to alter the decisions of the Smithsonian."

[WORLD WAR II](#)

After a split in his 2-party coalition, Albert Reynolds resigned a Prime Minister of [Ireland](#).

Sonata for cello and piano no.2 by Alfred Schnittke was performed for the initial time, in the Barbican Center, London.

In Kathryn Bache Miller Theater, New York, last things, I think, to think about for bass-baritone, piano, electronic sound generators and slide projections by Roger Reynolds to words of Ashberry was performed for the initial time.

December 15, Thursday: John Gerard Bruton of *Fine Gael* replaced Albert Reynolds of *Fianna Fáil* as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#) at the head of a new 3-party coalition. Labour left the ruling coalition with *Fianna Fáil* to join with *Fine Gael* and the Democratic Left.

The Republic of Palau was admitted to the United Nations.

In the December 28 letter, John T. Correll had mentioned that there would be a meeting with NASM on this day. NASM Director Martin Harwit met with the Physicians for Social Responsibility who make recommendations to restore balance in the [Enola Gay](#) exhibit: "As it now stands, the display takes a one-sided, dehumanized, and somewhat celebratory tone unsuited to the National Air and Space Museum.... The NASM must make a formal commitment to mount an exhibit on the post-war nuclear arms race, its environmental and health consequences, and opposition to it that has led to various attempts to control, limit and now reduce nuclear arms."

[WORLD WAR II](#)

1995

February 16, Thursday: Burt Bledstein, Co-Editor of the list H-Ideas, wrote us about his perception of [Henry Thoreau](#)'s prejudice against the [Irish](#), citing various culled proof texts:

Date: Thu, 16 Feb 1995 07:10:34 CST
From: Burt Bledstein <bjb@uic.edu>
Subject: Reply: Inclusive Thoreau



Austin Meredith wrote about Thoreau: "I am dealing with a guy here who despite his status as a dead white male could be said to be absolutely the most sensitive to all issues of race and gender and class, the very best that anyone could ever hope, and yet in Thoreau studies it remains very common for him to be presumed to have been both sexist and elitist." If Austin is telling us that passing judgement on Thoreau based either on a sociological category or repressing Thoreau on his race and class observations is shallow, gratuitous, and/or "academic crap," I would agree with him. This scholarship tells us more about the "sensitivities" of today than Thoreau. Thoreau was an observer and commentator of his time. Humanizing Thoreau by seriously listening to his words—and not falling short by means of the social categories and conventional wisdom ("common sense is common nonsense")—requires the contemporary scholar to address Thoreau's self-conscious "sensitivity." "The very best that anyone could ever hope!" comments Austin.

Listen to Thoreau in his journals on the "shiftless Irishman, John Field," the thirsty Hugh Quail or the simple MacCarty ("a gray-headed boy, good for nothing but to eat his dinner. These Irishman have no heads.")

The "shovel-handed Irish" work hard and mean well, but "this fellow (MacCarty) was sure to do the wrong thing from the best motives."

John Field's wife, "with round, greasy face and bare breast, still thinking to improve her condition one day; the never absent mop in hand, and yet no effects of it visible anywhere. The chickens, like members of the family, stalked about the room, too much humanized to roast well."

(See Dale T. Knobel, PADDY AND THE REPUBLIC: ETHNICITY AND NATIONALITY IN ANTEBELLUM AMERICA: Wesleyan 1986)

Listen to an "elitist" Thoreau on vocations, professions, careers, even making a living. (See Nicholas K. Bromell, BY THE SWEAT OF THE BROW: LITERATURE AND LABOR IN ANTEBELLUM AMERICA: University of Chicago, 1993). In conclusion, a humanized Thoreau has played a role in my recent work as an historian because his sensual perceptions were strenuous, biased, and timely. Indeed, "sensitivity" is best double edged, a reason to include not exclude.

Burt Bledstein, Co-Editor: H-Ideas

February 17, Friday: I responded to the email of the previous day from Burt Bledstein, Co-Editor of the list H-Ideas, about his citing of proof texts in regard to [Henry Thoreau's](#) prejudice against the [Irish](#), asking for permission to publish his comments — and he responded in the affirmative:

Date: Fri, 17 Feb 1995 09:17:07 -0800 (PST)
To: Burt Bledstein <bjb@uic.edu>
Subject: Thoreau on the H-IDEAS list on the Internet

Professor Bledstein, would it be allright for us to insert your comments into the "Stack of the Artist of Kouroo" hypertextspace, perhaps in our file "ThoreauOnTheIrish.frame"? I think some of the sources which you cite have not yet been mentioned in this context, and of course we are attempting to be as very inclusive as is humanly possible.



IRELAND

IRELAND

Date: Fri, 17 Feb 1995 11:30:15 CST
From: "Burt Bledstein" <bjb@uic.edu>
Re: Thoreau on the H-IDEAS list on the Internet
Austin: Of course you have my permission. Burt Bledstein

February 18, Saturday: I provided Burt Bledstein, Co-Editor of the list H-Ideas, with alternative proof texts suggesting that [Henry Thoreau](#) had not been prejudiced against the [Irish](#), and spoke in general terms about the tendency in current scholarship to "cherry-pick" those proof texts that justify one's own position:

Date: Sat, 18 Feb 1995 07:24:41 -0800 (PST)
To: Burt Bledstein <bjb@uic.edu>
Subject: Your snips of Thoreau comments about the Irish

I might mention that one of the functions that this "Stack of the Artist of Kouroo" is designed to fulfill is the function of making the sort of scholarship which goes through an author looking for "proof texts" so easy as to become trivial, with the hope that as it becomes trivial and mechanical it will of necessity fall into disfavor and disuse. I really do not favor such scholarship, and hope that we will soon see the end of it. Thoreau in fact wrote each and every one of those words you quoted. Yet putting those snippets together with the exclusion of other remarks, and omitting the context of the Irish ecological disaster of the 1840s (I am also a veteran of a similar ecological disaster, as I began life as a fugitive from the Dust Bowl of the 1930s and in my childhood in San Diego encountered the vicious California prejudice against its victims, the "Okies") and omitting the fact that persecution by the English, and starvation and humiliation, had had the most unfortunate impact upon Irish social life and morals and character and probity (for instance omitting to consider the very serious problem which New England was having at that time with the violent hatred of and contempt for free black Americans which was all too typical of the besotted street-roaming, cudgel-waving Irish mob in places like Boston), really does put Thoreau at serious jeopardy of being misunderstood. In blunt words, I didn't think your presenting such snippets arbitrarily to the list out of context while suppressing other favorable remarks was very much at all by way of a scholarly contribution. Were you to enter the hypertextspace of this project, you would encounter a Thoreau who, when presented at greater length and with greater thoroughness within his context, turns out to have been the most considerate gentleman, who gave people his full and undivided attention even when, or particularly when, they were in a socially unfavored category. One of the little factoids you would learn is that when a particular fabric had become associated in the public mind with the Irish, so that the non-Irish residents of the Boston area would not be caught dead wearing an item of apparel made of that particular fabric for fear of being suspected of being in sympathy with those people, Thoreau deliberately chose to wear pants made of that particular fabric. This I take to be a public gesture of solidarity with the oppressed which must have been at some personal cost in that social context. I cite here only one small token of the many



IRELAND

IRELAND

examples given within this 20,000,000-link hypertextspace. Within this research tool you would also be able to learn of a loan made by Thoreau to help a local laborer send home to Ireland to bring his wife over, a touching poem written about a lad to whom Thoreau gave some of his clothing, etc. Thoreau even placed the needs of the Irish ahead of the ecological needs of his beloved Walden Woods.

Yes indeed, Thoreau was frustrated at the fact that some of the problems of the impactful Irish hordes flowing through Concord were problems which they themselves were causing. Yet in a very heart-warming manner he never permitted himself to establish any sort of social stand-off distance between himself and these new people whom he came to know so intimately, and this refusal to establish any arbitrary social distance was, so far as I have been able to determine, utterly unique for his time and place. Were you to disagree with this material in the hypertextspace, you would of course be entirely free to establish your own nodes and links tagged with your own name, in which you could explore a contrary hypothesis. I might suggest, however, that the competition would be severe, and that the old sort of scholarship – scholarship in which what one does is simply go through a large corpus of writings and abstract out any little snippets which seem to be supporting one's case while ignoring other materials the effect of which would be to contest one's case – would be scholarship which would impress no-one, scholarship which in such an environment would simply *not wash*.

Be of good cheer, we are raising the scholarship ante here at this project.

November 24, Friday: Most public sector workers in France staged protest strikes against government plans to cut welfare.

Voters in [Ireland](#) decided by a vote of 50.3-49.7% to end the ban on divorce in their nation.

Flute Concerto by John Harbison was performed for the initial time, in Minneapolis.

1996

February 9, Friday: A Provisional Irish Republican Army bomb went off under an elevated railway station near South Quay, London, killing 2 and injuring more than 100 (thus ended the 18-month ceasefire in the [Irish](#) conflict).



IRELAND

IRELAND

July 14, Sunday: A bomb destroyed a hotel in Enniskillen, Northern [Ireland](#) injuring 17 (no one claimed responsibility).

Form/2 Formen for 20 instrumentalists and 5 players by Wolfgang Rihm was performed for the initial time, in Darmstadt.

Three Songs op.60 for voice, clarinet in A and viola by Alexander Goehr to words of Frazer after Ovid, was performed for the initial time, in the Almeida Theater, London.

October 7, Monday: Two Irish Republican Army bombs injured 31 at British Army headquarters in Lisburn, Northern [Ireland](#).

1997

February 27, Thursday: Following a 1995 referendum, divorce becomes legal in [Ireland](#).

Thoughts That Sing, Breathe and Burn for orchestra by Leslie Bassett was performed for the initial time, in Orchestra Hall, Detroit.

Olympic Dances, a ballet by John Harbison, was performed for the initial time, in Atlanta.

June 6, Friday: In the [Irish](#) parliamentary elections, *Fine Gael* gained nine seats but its coalition failed. A ruling coalition was formed by *Fianna Fáil* and the Progressive Democrats.

June 26, Thursday: Turkish troops withdrew from northern Iraq after a 6-week offensive against Kurdish guerrillas.

Bartholomew Patrick (Bertie) Ahern of *Fianna Fáil* replaced John Gerard Bruton of *Fine Gael* as Prime Minister of [Ireland](#) at the head of a conservative coalition.

The United States Supreme Court, in the cases of *Washington v. Glucksberg* and *Vacco v. Quill*, ruled that citizens do not have an absolute right to doctor-assisted suicide.

July 19, Saturday: Ahmed Daqamseh, a Jordanian soldier, was sentenced to life in prison by a Jordanian court for having killed 7 Israeli schoolgirls the previous March.

The Provisional Irish Republican Army declared a ceasefire in its war against British rule in Northern [Ireland](#).

Former warlord Charles Taylor was elected President of Liberia.

September 15, Monday: For the 1st time, representatives of *Sinn Féin* participated in multiparty talks on peace in Northern [Ireland](#).

Parliamentary elections in Norway resulted in a loss for the ruling Labor Party. Right wing parties made gains.



IRELAND

IRELAND

September 23, Tuesday: To battle Kurdish guerrillas, 10,000 Turkish troops with 100 tanks and warplanes entered Iraq.

Approximately 85 were killed by persons unknown south of Algiers.

For the 1st time since the partition of [Ireland](#) in the 1920s, the most important Protestant Unionist leader participated in a meeting which included the leader of *Sinn Féin*. David Trimble and Gerry Adams met at the parliament building in Belfast.

A Gentle Little Fanfare for orchestra by William Bolcom was performed for the initial time.

November 11, Tuesday: Mary McAleese became President of [Ireland](#), succeeding the 4-man commission which had taken over following the resignation of Mary Robinson in September.

Apolytikion of St. Martin for chorus by John Tavener was performed for the initial time, at St.-Martin-in-the-Fields, London.

December 11, Thursday: An international conference in Kyoto, attended by 150 nations, tentatively agreed on a plan to limit the emission of greenhouse gases. Under the agreement, 38 industrialized countries were required to reduce their greenhouse emissions to below 1990 levels. Developing countries were to set voluntary goals. Industrialized nations that created or protected domestic or foreign forests would receive emission credits.²⁷⁰

For the 1st time in 76 years, an [Irish](#) republican leader visited the British Prime Minister at 10 Downing St. Gerry Adams and Tony Blair both termed the meeting constructive.

1998

January 12, Monday: Hutu rebels killed 9 Roman Catholic nuns in Rwerere, Rwanda, a village near the Congo border.

The British and [Irish](#) governments produced a “blueprint” for peace in Northern [Ireland](#).

The German government and the Jewish Claims Conference agreed that Germany would provide a fund of DM200,000,000 to compensate Jews from eastern Europe persecuted during [World War II](#).

February 20, Friday: *Sinn Féin* was suspended from the Northern [Ireland](#) peace process due to suspicion of its involvement in two recent murders.

270. No kidding, this was what was being announced at the time.



March 23, Monday: President Boris Yeltsin of Russia sacked his entire cabinet, appointing Sergei Kiriyenko as acting prime minister.

Albanian leaders in Kosovo and Serbian government officials signed an agreement in Pristina to bring ethnic Albanians into the state-run school system (they had left the system in 1991 after the Albanian language was abolished in schools and many Albanian teachers were sacked). Serb teachers and administrators asserted that they were going to block implementation of this accord.

Sinn Féin returned to the Northern [Ireland](#) peace process.

March 26, Thursday: The chair of the Northern [Ireland](#) peace talks, George Mitchell, set a deadline of 15 days to reach agreement.

Hans Werner Henze was awarded the Bavarian Maximilian Order for Science and Art in München.

Concerto for violin and orchestra by Ellen Taaffe Zwilich was performed for the initial time, in Carnegie Hall, New York.

April 10, Good Friday: The “Good Friday Agreement” between the British government and the Irish government in regard to the hostilities in northern [Ireland](#). This would require referenda on the island of [Ireland](#) and legislation by both the British and [Irish](#) Parliaments. Northern [Ireland](#) was to remain part of Great Britain but many issues were to be handled by a local Northern [Ireland](#) Parliament and government. Some of these decisions were to be made with the consultation of the [Irish](#) Republic. The talks had been brokered by former US Senator George Mitchell.

READ THE FULL TEXT

Armen Darbinyan replaced Robert Kocharyan as Prime Minister of Armenia.

The Russian Duma voted down President Yeltsin’s choice of Sergei Kiriyenko as prime minister. Yeltsin reappointed him.

April 16, Thursday: The Ulster Unionist Party formally endorsed the Northern [Ireland](#) peace plan.

April 22, Wednesday: The Parliament of the Republic of [Ireland](#) formally endorsed the Northern [Ireland](#) Peace Plan.

The French National Assembly voted to accept the Euro.

April 30, Thursday: The [Irish](#) Republican Army released a statement supporting the peace agreement but refused to give up its weapons.

Triodion for chorus by Arvo Pärt was performed for the initial time, in Westminster Abbey.

May 10, Sunday: At a *Sinn Féin* conference in Dublin, delegates overwhelmingly approved the April peace accords for Northern [Ireland](#).



IRELAND

IRELAND

May 22, Friday: Students occupying the Parliament building in Jakarta since May 18 were forcibly evicted by government troops.

Serbian special police with armored vehicles and helicopters began a new offensive against ethnic Albanians in the south of Kosovo. Thousands fled into neighboring Albania.

Voters in Northern [Ireland](#) and the Republic of [Ireland](#) approved the April peace accords.

June 25, Thursday: Voters went to the polls in Northern [Ireland](#) to elect a new 108-member assembly.

The US Supreme Court ruled 8-1 that the federal government could take “decency standards” into account when awarding grants to artists.

...depart in peace... for soprano and strings by John Tavener to words from the Bible, was performed for the initial time, in the Hellenic Center, London.

June 29, Monday: Indicted Serb war criminal Slavko Dokmanovic was found hanging in his cell at The Hague War Crimes Tribunal. Dokmanovic had been charged with 6 counts of war crimes and crimes against humanity for his activities at Vukovar in 1991.

The 2d and 3d largest banks in Switzerland began operations as a new merged entity called UBS AG, with assets of \$700,000,000,000 (this would become the 2d largest bank in the world).

The Parades Commission refused permission for Protestants in Portadown, Northern [Ireland](#) to march down Garvaghy Road (a mainly Catholic area).

July 1, Wednesday: The newly constituted Northern [Ireland](#) Assembly named David Trimble as First Minister. That night 10 Roman Catholic churches were torched in the province.

Eternity's Sunrise for soprano, flute, oboe, lute, handbells and strings by John Tavener to words of Blake was performed for the initial time, in St. Andrew's Church, Holborn.

Tempo e tempi, a song for soprano, oboe, clarinet, violin, and cello by Elliott Carter, was performed for the initial time, at the Pontino Festival, Castelo Caetani, Sermoneta, Italy.

In [New Bedford](#), a newspaper article "Memorial honors city's first historian":



NEW BEDFORD – Mayor Frederick M. Kalisz Jr. joined with city councilors to dedicate a memorial to [Daniel Ricketson](#), New Bedford's first historian, at Brooklawn Park last Sunday.

It was at Brooklawn, Ricketson's former estate, that the history of New Bedford was written and published by the author in 1858. It was also at Brooklawn that the leading writers, philosophers and abolitionists of 19th-century America sought the hospitality and friendship of Ricketson and his family. Such illustrious figures as Henry David Thoreau, Ralph Waldo Emerson, A. Bronson Alcott and others frequented the estate. Collectively, they became known as the Shanty Society.

Despite the luxurious mansion which Ricketson had built at Brooklawn, he and guests would retreat to a 12-by-14-foot board-and-batten shanty located near his house. It was there that Ricketson wrote two books of poetry as well as the city's history.

Since the fall of 1995, cousins Michael and Douglas Walsh, working as the Ricketson Commission, have researched the life of the historian.

Michael, a New Bedford High School and Newbury College history teacher, discovered Ricketson's original letters in the Whaling Museum and used them to learn more about the local figure.

The memorial is the result of the his endeavor and that of the New Bedford City Council Ad Hoc Committee chaired by Councilor George Rogers, the Mayor's office, and the New Bedford Park Board.



"People have definitely shown an interest in Ricketson," said Michael Walsh. "The dedication was well-attended. We found that there were a lot of senior citizens who came and spoke to us about their memories of Brooklawn."

Students at Greater New Bedford Regional Vocational-Technical High School will begin constructing an actual shanty where the former shanty once stood, at which time the memorial plaque will be placed on or near it.

Study the 2d edition of [Daniel Ricketson](#)'s history of [New Bedford](#), Massachusetts:

NEW BEDFORD OF THE PAST

July 3, Friday: Serbian special police retook Kijevo, Kosovo after a 2-week siege.

In Portadown, Northern [Ireland](#), 2,000 British soldiers and police began erecting barricades and other barriers to prevent Protestants from marching provocatively through a Catholic district.

July 5, Sunday: Protestant extremists attempting to march through the largely Catholic section of Portadown, Northern [Ireland](#) were halted by police and British soldiers. They vowed to remain at the roadblock until they were allowed to march. Most left by nightfall. Violence erupted in Protestant areas of the province. Over 2,500 violent incidents occurred over the next ten days.

July 8, Wednesday: Over the previous 4 days there had been more than 400 incidents of violence, mostly by Protestants, toward police in Northern [Ireland](#).

Voters in Portugal narrowly rejected a proposal to liberalize the country's abortion laws.

Pro-life advocates sprayed butyric acid on the floors and into the ventilation systems of 3 medical clinics in Houston, causing 3 hospitalizations (several more were treated at the scene for nausea). This followed several similar attacks in Louisiana and Florida over the past couple of months.

July 12, Sunday: When a firebomb is thrown into their row house in Ballymoney, Northern [Ireland](#), 3 Roman Catholic brothers were killed — ages 11, 9, and 7.

France defeated Brazil 3-0 to win the 16th FIFA World Cup™ in Paris.

August 22, Saturday: Diehard splinter group "[Irish](#) National Liberation Army" declared a ceasefire in its struggle against British influence in Northern [Ireland](#).



1999

January 1, Friday The principal European nations elected to deploy a common currency, the “Euro.” The German armed forces came under NATO command. The transition process went smoothly. Participating nations were Austria, Belgium, Finland, France, [Germany](#), [Ireland](#), Italy, Luxembourg, the Netherlands, Portugal, and Spain (the difficult part of this would arrive in 2012).

February 16, Saturday: At least 6 car bombs explode in Tashkent, killing 13 and injuring about 120. No group claimed responsibility.

The Northern [Ireland](#) Assembly approved a new structure for the peaceable government of the province.

July 2, Friday: A white racist went on a 3-day shooting spree in Chicago, targeting Blacks, Jews, and Asians. He would off two people and wound nine before offing himself.

British Prime Minister Tony Blair and Irish Prime Minister Bertie Ahern offered a joint plan to end the deadlock in Northern [Ireland](#) negotiations.

[US President William Jefferson Clinton](#) announced that the bald eagle would soon be removed from the endangered species list, due to a resurgence in its population.

Mein Weg for twelve strings and percussion by Arvo Pärt was performed for the initial time, in Graz (this was an arrangement of his organ work).

The World for soprano and string quartet by John Tavener to words of Raine was performed for the initial time, in West Cork.

November 27, Saturday: Parliamentary elections in New Zealand resulted in a victory for the Labour Party, ending the 9-year rule of the conservative National Party.

The Ulster Unionist Party agreed to allow members of *Sinn Féin* into the Northern [Ireland](#) cabinet before the group disarmed.

December 2, Thursday: On pages 63-64 of [The New York Review of Books](#) appeared “An Exchange on Thoreau” between Lawrence Buell and Leo Marx, as a sort of addendum to Marx’s 2-part article on Thoreau’s late writings, ecocentrism generally, and recent Thoreau scholarship, which had appeared in [The New York Review of Books](#) on June 24th and July 15th.

The British government returned power over Northern [Ireland](#) to a new provincial government. The new cabinet, including equal numbers of Catholics and Protestants, met for the 1st time, in Belfast, chaired by First Minister David Trimble and Deputy First Minister Seamus Mallon. The Republic of [Ireland](#) renounced the goal of unification of the island.



21ST CENTURY

2000

February 11, Friday: On his broadcast on the morning of February 7, 2000, televangelist Kenneth Copeland claimed that a group of scientists and scholars (he gave no specifics) studied the BIBLE in great detail and determined that February 11 would be the last day of the 6000th year since Creation, a date when the [Apocalypse](#) would presumably happen. Copeland did not imply he believed this to be accurate, though, but he went on to say that [The Rapture](#) will come soon.

Cyanide from the Tisza River entered the Danube in Serbia. This would slowly dilute it and eventually it would become safe. However, since January 30th, thousands of fish had been killed along the Szamos, Tisza, and Danube Rivers.

When the Irish Republican Army failed to begin a promised disarmament, the British government suspended the power-sharing government in Northern [Ireland](#) and returned to direct rule.

February 15, Tuesday: The Irish Republican Army withdrew from all disarmament negotiations in Northern [Ireland](#).

The speaker of the German Bundestag, Wolfgang Thierse, fined the Christian Democratic Union €21,000,000 for accepting millions of marks worth of illegal donations.

February 29, Tuesday: This day was the Gary North types' last best hope for the collapse of civilization due to the millennium bug. February 29 happens to be the exception to the exception to the 4-year leap year rule, an exception which some programmers might have neglected to incorporate into their date algorithms, which caused some of the faithful doomsters to expect that computers might crash on this day (I wasn't concerned — computers crash everyday).

MILLENNIALISM

May 29, Monday: In Fiji, the military took control. President Kamisese Mara resigned and was replaced by Josaia Voreqe "Frank" Bainimarama. Indigenous gunmen continued to hold Prime Minister Mahendra Chaudhry and others.

Former President Suharto of Indonesia was placed under house arrest while being investigated for corruption during his long rule.

Rebels in Sierra Leone released the last of the UN hostages they held.

The suspended local government in Northern [Ireland](#) resumed its posts and duties.

July 3, Monday: Protestants rioted in Drumcree Northern [Ireland](#) against British troops enforcing a ban on parades.



July 5, Wednesday: XXX-day, brought to you by our all-time favorite spiritual organization, the Church of the SubGenius. “THIS time there WILL be saucers”! August 20, 2000 Ephraim claimed the 7-month Battle of [Armageddon](#) would begin on this day.²⁷¹ His prediction for [The Rapture](#) (March 20-22, 2000) also failed.

MILLENNIALISM

Marilyn Agee’s Rapture prediction #10. (Agee, Marilyn J. THE END OF THE AGE. Avon Books, 1993)

MILLENNIALISM

Protestant riots in Northern [Ireland](#) spread to Belfast. British soldiers traded gunfire with Protestant paramilitaries.

Believing that diamonds were funding rebels in Sierra Leone, the UN Security Council voted 14-0-1 to ban the purchase of such “blood” diamonds.

Concerto for alto saxophone and orchestra by Leslie Bassett was performed for the initial time, in Pierre Mercure Hall, Montreal.

September 30, Saturday: In the West Bank and Gaza, 12 were reported killed in clashes.

The British government closed the Maze prison in Northern [Ireland](#).

Orient and Occident for strings by Arvo Pärt was performed for the initial time, in Berlin.

2001

Nicholas Wade reported in the [New York Times](#) about the history of [potato](#) cultivation:

Testing Links Potato Famine to an Origin in the Andes

A delicate piece of detective work in the collections of the Royal Botanic Gardens at Kew has started to cast light on the origins of the blight that caused the Irish potato famines a century and a half ago.

Analysis of DNA from stricken potato leaves has confirmed that the pathogen was a fungus known as *Phytophthora infestans*, but suggests that it did not originate in the Toluca Valley of Mexico, a hot spot of different strains of the blight that has been proposed as the most likely source. Instead, researchers theorize, it may have arisen in the ancestral home of the potato in the Andean highlands of South America.

The Irish potato famines lasted from 1845 to 1860, during which about a million of Ireland’s 8 million people starved to death and 1.5 million emigrated, mostly to the United States.

271. Armageddon = the place (possibly to be identified with Har Megiddo, the Mount of Megiddo, near Tel Aviv, near which many battles were fought) designated in Revelation 16:16 as the scene of the final battle between the kings of the earth at the end of the world.



Diseased leaves deposited at the time in botanical collections have been analyzed by Dr. Jean B. Ristaino, a plant pathologist at North Carolina State University in Raleigh.

She and colleagues report in the current issue of *Nature* that they were able to extract DNA from samples collected in Ireland, Britain and France between 1845 and 1847. In the right conditions, DNA can survive for many years after the death of the living cells that make it.

The samples lack the genetic signature of a widespread strain of the fungus, US-1, which has been assumed from its worldwide distribution to have descended from the 19th-century blight that struck Ireland and much of Europe. The US-1 strain is thought to have originated in Mexico because that is where the known diversity of blight strains is highest.

Because the potato famine samples differ from the US-1 strain, Dr. Ristaino and her colleagues suggest that it is likely to have come from the Andean highlands. It is a well known phenomenon in biology for a pathogen and its host to evolve together.

A South American source was proposed by several people who studied the blight in the 19th century, including Charles Darwin.

He had collected potato tubers from Chile in 1835 during the voyage of the *Beagle* that led him to propose his theory of evolution by natural selection. Darwin was very concerned about the blight, Dr. Ristaino said, and gave Irish potato breeders £100 of his own money to support efforts to develop resistant strains.

He also hoped that the tubers from Chile might be naturally resistant to the blight and asked his cousin, William Darwin Fox, to grow them. But they all succumbed to the blight, which was endemic in England as well as [Ireland](#), Dr. Ristaino said.

There were many hints available at the time pointing to South America as a possible source of the blight, she said: European potato crops had been wiped out earlier in the century by a different disease, caused by a fungus called *Fusarium*, and were replaced with varieties from Peru.

There was also a vigorous trade in bat guano fertilizer between Peru and Ireland, and that material could have transported the blight.

Dr. Ristaino said more strains of the blight needed to be sampled worldwide to help pinpoint the origin of the one she had found in the herbarium samples.

"There's a real treasure trove of materials over there," she said, referring to the Kew herbarium collections outside London.

"There are many other pathogens hidden away on the shelves. You can capture a whole window into past epidemics."

In a commentary in *Nature*, Dr. Nicholas P. Money, a botanist at Miami University in Oxford, Ohio, described Dr. Ristaino's analysis as "a remarkable piece of molecular detective work."

Dr. Stephen B. Goodwin, one of the biologists who discovered that the US-1 strain of blight now dominates the globe, said his theory of its being the cause of the Irish potato famine now seemed incorrect.

"Too bad it wasn't true," he said, "but that's the way it goes



IRELAND

IRELAND

sometime. It was a great hypothesis.”

Dr. Goodwin, a Department of Agriculture plant pathologist who teaches at Purdue University, said that the potato family had two centers of diversity, one in Mexico and one in Peru, but that the blight itself is far more diverse in the Mexican center and is likely to have evolved there.

2004

June 24, Thursday: In Dublin, [Kenneth L. Carroll](#) of Easton, [Maryland](#) lectured on “William Edmundson, [Ireland](#)’s First [Quaker](#)” as part of the 350th anniversary celebration of the introduction of Quakerism into Ireland.²⁷²

A Browning pistol, Serial Number 19047, at a Jesuit monastery in Austria, was identified as being the gun “that killed nine million people” — the weapon with which Gavrilo Princip had assassinated Archduke Franz Ferdinand of Austria (rather than immediately destroying this device, it was decided that it would be placed on display at the Vienna Museum of Military History for the amazement of one and all).

2006

[Kenneth L. Carroll](#)’s “American [Quakerism](#)’s 350th Birthday: a Look at its [Maryland](#) Birth Pangs” ([The Journal of the Friends’ Historical Society](#), 61:1, pages 32-44). [Irish](#) National Television (RTE) prepared a documentary about a citizen of County Cork who had become a prisoner of the Inquisition while attempting to present the Quaker message to the Pope in [Rome](#), basing this largely on Professor [Carroll](#)’s 1971 publication [JOHN PERROT: EARLY QUAKER SCHISMATIC](#).

272. Ken’s interest in Ireland and England took him to these two countries more than half a hundred times.



IRELAND

IRELAND



COPYRIGHT NOTICE: In addition to the property of others, such as extensive quotations and reproductions of images, this "read-only" computer file contains a great deal of special work product of Austin Meredith, copyright ©2013. Access to these interim materials will eventually be offered for a fee in order to recoup some of the costs of preparation. My hypercontext button invention which, instead of creating a hypertext leap through hyperspace –resulting in navigation problems– allows for an utter alteration of the context within which one is experiencing a specific content already being viewed, is claimed as proprietary to Austin Meredith – and therefore freely available for use by all. Limited permission to copy such files, or any material from such files, must be obtained in advance in writing from the "Stack of the Artist of Kouroo" Project, 20 Miles Avenue, Providence RI 02906. Please contact the project at <Kouroo@brown.edu>.

"It's all now you see. Yesterday won't be over until tomorrow and tomorrow began ten thousand years ago."

- Remark by character "Garin Stevens"
in William Faulkner's INTRUDER IN THE DUST



Prepared: August 29, 2013

*ARRGH AUTOMATED RESearch REPORT
GENERATION HOTLINE*



This stuff presumably looks to you as if it were generated by a human. Such is not the case. Instead, upon someone's request we have pulled it out of the hat of a pirate that has grown out of the shoulder of our pet parrot "Laura" (depicted above). What these chronological lists are: they are research reports compiled by ARRGH algorithms out of a database of data modules which we term the Kouroo Contexture. This is data mining. To respond to such a request for information, we merely push a button.



IRELAND

IRELAND

Commonly, the first output of the program has obvious deficiencies and so we need to go back into the data modules stored in the contexture and do a minor amount of tweaking, and then we need to punch that button again and do a recompile of the chronology – but there is nothing here that remotely resembles the ordinary “writerly” process which you know and love. As the contents of this originating contexture improve, and as the programming improves, and as funding becomes available (to date no funding whatever has been needed in the creation of this facility, the entire operation being run out of pocket change) we expect a diminished need to do such tweaking and recompiling, and we fully expect to achieve a simulation of a generous and untiring robotic research librarian. Onward and upward in this brave new world.

First come first serve. There is no charge.
Place your requests with <Kouroo@brown.edu>.
Arrgh.